

# ADVANCES IN POLYMER SCIENCE

# 133

K. Mashima  
Y. Nakayama  
A. Nakamura

Recent Trends in Polymerization  
of  $\alpha$ -Olefins Catalyzed  
by Organometallic Complexes  
of Early Transition Metals

H. Yasuda · E. Ihara

Rare Earth Metal-Initiated  
Living Polymerizations  
of Polar and Nonpolar Monomers

D. A. Canelas  
J. M. DeSimone

Polymerizations in Liquid  
and Supercritical Carbon Dioxide

A. Harada

Design and Construction  
of Supramolecular Architectures  
Consisting of Cyclodextrins  
and Polymers



Springer

Metal Complex Catalysts  
Supercritical  
Fluid Polymerization  
Supramolecular  
Architecture

**133**

**Advances in Polymer Science**

**A. Abe · H.-J. Cantow · P. Corradini · K. Dušek · S. Edwards  
H. Fujita · G. Glöckner · H. Höcker · H.-H. Hörhold  
H.-H. Kausch · J. P. Kennedy · J. L. Koenig · A. Ledwith  
J. E. McGrath · L. Monnerie · S. Okamura · C. G. Overberger  
H. Ringsdorf · T. Saegusa · J. C. Salamone · J. L. Schrag · G. Wegner**

**Springer**

*Berlin*

*Heidelberg*

*New York*

*Barcelona*

*Budapest*

*Hong Kong*

*London*

*Milan*

*Paris*

*Santa Clara*

*Singapore*

*Tokyo*

# **Metal Complex Catalysts Supercritical Fluid Polymerization Supramolecular Architecture**

With contributions by  
D. A. Canelas, J. M. DeSimone, A. Harada,  
E. Ihara, K. Mashima, A. Nakamura,  
Y. Nakayama, H. Yasuda



**Springer**

This series presents critical reviews of the present and future trends in polymer and biopolymer science including chemistry, physical chemistry, physics and materials science. It is addressed to all scientists at universities and in industry who wish to keep abreast of advances in the topics covered.

As a rule, contributions are specially commissioned. The editors and publishers will, however, always be pleased to receive suggestions and supplementary information. Papers are accepted for „Advances in Polymer Science“ in English.

In references Advances in Polymer Science is abbreviated Adv. Polym. Sci. and is cited as a journal.

Springer WWW home page: <http://www.springer.de>

ISSN 0065-3195

ISBN 3-540-62699-9

Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg NewYork

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 61642

This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved, whether the whole or part of the material is concerned, specifically the rights of translation, reprinting, re-use of illustrations, recitation, broadcasting, reproduction on microfilms or in other ways, and storage in data banks. Duplication of this publication or parts thereof is only permitted under the provisions of the German Copyright Law of September 9, 1965, in its current version, and permission for use must always be obtained from Springer-Verlag. Violations are liable for prosecution under the German Copyright Law.

© Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 1997

Printed in Germany

The use of registered names, trademarks, etc. in this publication does not imply, even in the absence of a specific statement, that such names are exempt from the relevant protective laws and regulations and therefore free for general use.

Typesetting: Macmillan India Ltd., Bangalore-25

Cover: E. Kirchner, Heidelberg

SPIN: 10548301 02/3020 - 5 4 3 2 1 0 - Printed on acid-free paper

---

## Editors

### Prof. Akihiro Abe

Department of Industrial Chemistry  
Tokyo Institute of Polytechnics  
1583 Iiyama, Atsugi 243-02, Japan

### Prof. Hans-Joachim Cantow

Freiburger Materialforschungszentrum  
Stefan Meier-Str. 31a  
D-79104 Freiburg i. Br., FRG

### Prof. Paolo Corradini

Università di Napoli  
Dipartimento di Chimica  
Via Mezzocannone 4  
80134 Napoli, Italy

### Prof. Karel Dušek

Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Czech  
Academy of Sciences  
16206 Prague 616, Czech Republic  
*E-mail: OFFICE@IMC.CAS.CZ*

### Prof. Sam Edwards

University of Cambridge  
Department of Physics  
Cavendish Laboratory  
Madingley Road  
Cambridge CB3 0HE, UK

### Prof. Hiroshi Fujita

35 Shimotakedono-cho  
Shichiku, Kita-ku  
Kyoto 603, Japan

### Prof. Gottfried Glöckner

Technische Universität Dresden  
Sektion Chemie  
Mommstr. 13  
D-01069 Dresden, FRG

### Prof. Dr. Hartwig Höcker

Lehrstuhl für Textilchemie  
und Makromolekulare Chemie  
RWTH Aachen  
Veltmanplatz 8  
D-52062 Aachen, FRG

### Prof. Hans-Heinrich Hörhold

Friedrich-Schiller-Universität Jena  
Institut für Organische  
und Makromolekulare Chemie  
Lehrstuhl Organische Polymerchemie  
Humboldtstr. 10  
D-07743 Jena, FRG

### Prof. Hans-Henning Kausch

Laboratoire de Polymères  
Ecole Polytechnique Fédérale  
de Lausanne, MX-D  
CH-1015 Lausanne, Switzerland  
*E-mail: hans-henning.kausch@lp.dmx.epfl.ch*

### Prof. Joseph P. Kennedy

Institute of Polymer Science  
The University of Akron  
Akron, Ohio 44325, USA

### Prof. Jack L. Koenig

Department of Macromolecular Science  
Case Western Reserve University  
School of Engineering  
Cleveland, OH 44106, USA

### Prof. Anthony Ledwith

Pilkington Brothers plc. R & D  
Laboratories, Lathom Ormskirk  
Lancashire L40 5UF, UK

**Prof. J. E. McGrath**

Polymer Materials and Interfaces Lab.  
Virginia Polytechnic and State University  
Blacksburg  
Virginia 24061, USA

**Prof. Lucien Monnerie**

Ecole Supérieure de Physique et de Chimie  
Industrielles  
Laboratoire de Physico-Chimie  
Structurale et Macromoléculaire  
10, rue Vauquelin  
75231 Paris Cedex 05, France

**Prof. Seizo Okamura**

No. 24, Minamigoshi-Machi Okazaki  
Sakyo-Ku, Kyoto 606, Japan

**Prof. Charles G. Overberger**

Department of Chemistry  
The University of Michigan  
Ann Arbor, Michigan 48109, USA

**Prof. Helmut Ringsdorf**

Institut für Organische Chemie  
Johannes-Gutenberg-Universität  
J.-J.-Becher Weg 18-20  
D-55128 Mainz, FRG  
*E-mail: Ringsdorf@mzdmza.zdv.uni-mainz.de*

**Prof. Takeo Saegusa**

KRI International  
Inc. Kyoto Research Park 17  
Chudoji Minamima-chi  
Shimogyo-ku Kyoto 600, Japan

**Prof. J. C. Salamone**

University of Lowell  
Department of Chemistry  
College of Pure and Applied Science  
One University Avenue  
Lowell, MA 01854, USA

**Prof. John L. Schrag**

University of Wisconsin  
Department of Chemistry  
1101 University Avenue  
Madison, Wisconsin 53706, USA

**Prof. G. Wegner**

Max-Planck-Institut für Polymerforschung  
Ackermannweg 10  
Postfach 3148  
D-55128 Mainz, FRG

---

## Table of Contents

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| <b>Recent Trends in Polymerization of <math>\alpha</math>-Olefins Catalyzed<br/>by Organometallic Complexes of Early Transition Metals</b><br>K. Mashima, Y. Nakayama, A. Nakamura . . . . . | 1   |
| <b>Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Living Polymerizations<br/>of Polar and Nonpolar Monomers</b><br>H. Yasuda, E. Ihara . . . . .   | 53  |
| <b>Polymerizations in Liquid and Supercritical Carbon Dioxide</b><br>D. A. Canelas, J. M. DeSimone . . . . .   | 103 |
| <b>Design and Construction of Supramolecular Architectures<br/>Consisting of Cyclodextrins and Polymers</b><br>A. Harada . . . . .   | 141 |
| <b>Author Index Volumes 101 - 133 . . . . .</b>  | 193 |
| <b>Subject Index . . . . .</b>   | 203 |



# Recent Trends in the Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins Catalyzed by Organometallic Complexes of Early Transition Metals

Kazushi Mashima<sup>1</sup>, Yuushou Nakayama<sup>2</sup> and Akira Nakamura<sup>2,\*</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Department of Chemistry, Graduate School of Engineering Science, Osaka University, Toyonaka, Osaka 560, Japan

<sup>2</sup>Department of Macromolecular Science, Graduate School of Science, Osaka University, Toyonaka, Osaka 560, Japan. \*E-mail: [anaka@chem.sci.osaka-u.ac.jp](mailto:anaka@chem.sci.osaka-u.ac.jp)

This review article describes recent progress in the field of homogeneous organometallic catalysts for olefin polymerization and focuses on the metal-carbon bonding character of the transition metal complexes used as catalysts. Most catalysts of this kind are based on metallocene derivatives of Group 4 metals, their catalytic behavior (such as activity and stereospecificity) and the molecular weights of the resulting polymers are surveyed on the basis of the molecular structure of the catalyst precursors. Advanced mechanistic studies on the catalyst systems are also summarized. Some examples of the related polymerization of functionalized olefins are also presented. Not only the Group 4 metal catalysts but also the polymerization catalysts of many other early transition metals and late transition metals are reviewed including our recent study on the mono(cyclopentadienyl)mono(diene) complexes of Group 5 metals.

|   |    |
|---|----|
| <b>1 Introduction</b> . . . . .   | 3  |
| <b>2 General Features of Organometallic Complexes of Early Transition Metals</b> . . . . .                                    | 3  |
| <b>3 Olefin Polymerization by Organometallic Complexes</b> . . . . .  | 7  |
| 3.1 Cationic Metallocene Complexes as Active Species for a Metallocene/MAO System . . . . .                                   | 7  |
| 3.2 Neutral Group 3 Metallocene Complexes as Catalysts of Polymerization . . . . .  | 16 |
| 3.3 Gas-Phase Reaction of Cationic $d^0$ Alkyl Compounds of Group 4 Metals . . . . .  | 18 |
| 3.4 Propagation . . . . .   | 19 |
| 3.5 Termination Reactions: $\beta$ -Hydrogen Elimination, Alkyl Chain End Transfer, and $\beta$ -Methyl Elimination . . . . . | 22 |
| <b>4 Stereoselective Polymerization of <math>\alpha</math>-Olefins</b> . . . . .  | 23 |
| 4.1 Isospecific Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins . . . . .   | 23 |
| 4.1.1 Isospecific Polymerization by <i>Ansa</i> -Type (Bridged) Metallocenes . . . . .  | 23 |
| 4.1.2 Isospecific Polymerization by Unbridged Metallocenes . . . . .  | 28 |

|          |   |           |
|----------|---|-----------|
| 4.2      | Syndiospecific Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins . . . . .  | 29        |
| 4.2.1    | <i>Ansa</i> -Type Metallocene Catalysts . . . . .   | 29        |
| 4.2.2    | Non-bridged Metallocene Catalysts . . . . .   | 30        |
| 4.2.3    | Catalyst with or Without a Cp Ligand . . . . .  | 31        |
| 4.3      | Theoretical Studies on the Stereoselectivity of Polymerization . .  | 33        |
| <b>5</b> | <b>Polymerization of Non-Conjugated Dienes by Organometallic Complexes . . . . .</b>  | <b>33</b> |
| <b>6</b> | <b>Polymerization of Functionalized Olefins . . . . .</b>   | <b>35</b> |
| <b>7</b> | <b>Recent Trends in Polymerization Catalyzed by Organometallic Complexes of Transition Metals Other than Those of Group 4 . . . . .</b> | <b>37</b> |
| 7.1      | Polymerization by Organometallic Complexes of Group 5 Metals . . . . .  | 37        |
| 7.2      | Polymerization by Organometallic Compounds of Group 6 Metals . . . . .  | 40        |
| 7.3      | Polymerization Assisted by Organometallic Compound of Other Transition Metals . . . . .   | 42        |
| <b>8</b> | <b>Concluding Remarks . . . . .</b>   | <b>44</b> |
| <b>9</b> | <b>References . . . . .</b>   | <b>45</b> |

## 1 Introduction

The polymerization of olefins and di-olefins is one of the most important targets in polymer science. This review article describes recent progress in this field and deals with organo-transition metal complexes as polymerization catalysts. Recent developments in organometallic chemistry have prompted us to find a precise description of the mechanism of propagation, chain transfer, and termination steps in the homogeneously metal-assisted polymerization of olefins and diolefins. Thus, this development provides an idea for designing any catalyst systems that are of interest in industry.

Recently, the “agostic” interaction of alkyl group(s) on transition metals has emerged as highly basic and new concept and is found to be important in understanding the mechanism of the metal-catalyzed homogeneous oligomerization and polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins. Early transition metal alkyl complexes generally have partially ionic M–C bonds and show  *$\alpha$ -agostic hydrogen interaction* that somewhat stabilizes the catalytically active species by providing electrons at a vacant site on the metal. This is in sharp contrast to the fact that late transition metal alkyl complexes show mainly  *$\beta$ -agostic hydrogen interaction* that causes the hydrogen transfer easily through  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination and reductive elimination, and that gives rise to the oligomerization of olefins. Organometallic complexes of the early and late transition metals have been used as catalysts for olefin oligomerization and polymerization. The mechanism involved in these catalyst systems depends very much upon the kind of metal centers as well as their co-ligands, and thus the different mechanisms which can be distinguished by detailed investigations should be assumed for early and late transition metal catalysts.

In this contribution, we review the mechanism of polymerization and oligomerization involving early transition metals, taking as our basis recent results in advanced organometallic chemistry. First of all, some recent examples of the previous reviews concerning the Ziegler-Natta polymerization are cited [1–10]. Then, relevant new reports are surveyed in a systematic fashion.

## 2 General Features of Organometallic Complexes of Early Transition Metals

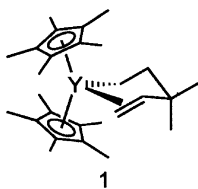
Recently, a deeper understanding of the precise nature of metal–carbon bonding was achieved, enabling specific polymerization catalyst systems to be designed on a practical level. The metal–carbon bond of early transition metals is partially ionic, while that of late transition metal is generally covalent. The degree of ionicity is delicately dependent on the identity of metal, formal oxidation states and auxiliary ligands.

Table 1. Crystal and spectral data for some alkene complexes of early transition metals

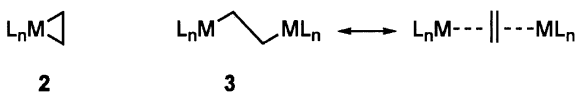
| Complex  | M-C<br>(Å)           | C <sub>c</sub> -C<br>(Å) | C-M-C<br>(deg) | $\delta(^{13}\text{C})$<br>(ppm) | $J_{\text{C-H}}$<br>(Hz) | Ref.    |
|--|----------------------|--------------------------|----------------|----------------------------------|--------------------------|---------|
| CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub>  | –                    | 1.337(2)                 | –              | 123.3                            | 156.4                    | [22–24] |
| <i>Mononuclear complexes</i>   |                      |                          |                |                                  |                          |         |
| Cp <sup>*</sup> <sub>2</sub> Ti(C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> ) (6)                                      | 2.160(4)             | 1.438(5)                 | 38.9(1)        | 105.1                            | 143.6                    | [25]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Zr(PhCH CHPh)(PMe <sub>3</sub> ) (7)   | 2.36(2)<br>2.43(2)   | 1.38(2)                  | 33.4(5)        | –                                | –                        | [26]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Zr(CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> )(PMe <sub>3</sub> ) (8)                              | 2.344(8)<br>2.373(8) | 1.486(8)                 | 36.7(3)        | –                                | –                        | [27]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Zr(1-butene)(PMe <sub>3</sub> ) (9)  | 2.35<br>2.37         | 1.44                     | 35.5           | –                                | –                        | [28]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Hf(CH <sub>2</sub> CMe <sub>2</sub> )(PMe <sub>3</sub> ) (10)                            | 2.316(8)<br>2.368(9) | 1.46(1)                  | 36.2(3)        | –                                | –                        | [29]    |
| [Li(tmeda)] <sub>2</sub> [Hf(CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> Et <sub>4</sub> ] (11)       | 2.26(4)<br>2.31(4)   | 1.49(6)                  | 38.0           | –                                | –                        | [30]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Nb(C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>3</sub> (C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> ) (12)                   | 2.277(9)<br>2.320(9) | 1.406(13)                | 35.6(3)        | 29.35<br>27.63                   | 153<br>154.5             | [31]    |
| <i>endo</i> -Cp <sup>*</sup> <sub>2</sub> Nb(H)(CH <sub>2</sub> CHPh) (13)                               | 2.289(4)<br>2.309(4) | 1.431(6)                 | 36.3(1)        | –                                | –                        | [32]    |
| Cp <sub>2</sub> Nb(C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) (14)                              | 2.314(3)<br>2.317(3) | 1.440(5)                 | 36.2(1)        | 13.5<br>14.0                     | –                        | [33]    |
| CpNb( NC <sub>6</sub> H <sub>3</sub> Pr <sup>i</sup> -2,6)(PMe <sub>3</sub> )(CH <sub>2</sub> CHMe) (15) | 2.39(3)<br>2.28(3)   | 1.58(4)                  | 39.4           | –                                | –                        | [34]    |

|   |           |           |         |      |       |      |
|---|-----------|-----------|---------|------|-------|------|
| $\text{Cp}^*\text{Ta}(\text{CHCMe}_3)(\text{PMe}_3)(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)$ ( <b>16</b> )                              | 2.228(3)  | 1.477(4)  | 38.1(9) | –    | –     | [35] |
|   | 2.285(3)  |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\text{TaCl}_2\{\text{C}_6\text{H}_3(\text{CH}_2\text{NMe}_2)_2\text{-2,6}\}(\text{CH}_2\text{CHBu}^t)$ ( <b>17</b> ) | 2.200(7)  | 1.436(10) | 38.0(3) | 95.2 | 145.5 | [36] |
|   | 2.211(7)  |           |         | 87.6 | 139.2 |      |
| <i>Bridging alkene complexes</i>  |           |           |         |      |       |      |
| $(\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrClAlEt}_3)_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>18</b> )  | 2.36      | 1.55      | 37.2    | –    | –     | [16] |
|   | 2.49      |           |         |      |       |      |
| $(\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe})_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>19</b> )  | 2.327(6)  | 1.473(1)  | 35.1(2) | –    | –     | [17] |
|   | 2.528(4)  |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\{\text{ZrCl}_3(\text{PEt}_3)_2\}_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>20</b> )   | 2.42(2)   | 1.69(3)   | 40.6(6) | –    | –     | [18] |
|   | 2.44(2)   |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\{\text{ZrBr}_3(\text{PEt}_3)_2\}_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>21</b> )   | 2.41(2)   | 1.56(3)   | 37.9(7) | –    | –     | [18] |
|   | 2.40(2)   |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\{\text{HfCl}_3(\text{PEt}_3)_2\}_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>22</b> )   | 2.386(10) | 1.476(14) | 36.2(3) | –    | –     | [18] |
|   | 2.364(9)  |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\{\text{HfBr}_3(\text{PEt}_3)_2\}_2(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2)$ ( <b>23</b> )   | 2.36(2)   | 1.51(2)   | 37.1(5) | –    | –     | [18] |
|   | 2.374(15) |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Yb}(\mu\text{-C}_2\text{H}_4)\text{Pt}(\text{PPh}_3)_2$ ( <b>4</b> )                              | 2.770(3)  | 1.436(5)  | 29.9(1) | –    | –     | [19] |
|   | 2.793(3)  |           |         |      |       |      |
| $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Sm}(\mu\text{-}\eta^2\text{-CH}_2\text{CHPh})\text{SmCp}_2^*$ ( <b>5</b> )                        | 2.537(15) | 1.468(22) | 32.8(5) | –    | –     | [20] |
|   | 2.647(15) |           |         |      |       |      |
|   | 2.674(15) |           |         |      |       |      |
|   | 2.732(15) |           |         |      |       |      |

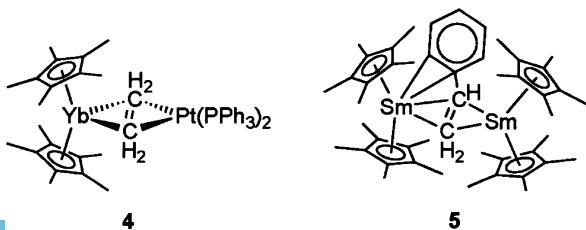
As a typical case, olefin-metal complexation is described first. Alkene complexes of  $d^0$  transition metals or ions have no  $d$ -electron available for the  $\pi$ -back donation, and thus their metal-alkene bonding is too weak for them to be isolated and characterized. One exception is  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{YCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{C}(\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CH}=\text{CH}_2$  (**1**), in which an intramolecular bonding interaction between a terminal olefinic moiety and a metal center is observed. However, this complex is thermally unstable above  $50^\circ\text{C}$  [11]. The MO calculation proves the presence of the weak metal-alkene bonding during the propagation step of the olefin polymerization [12, 13].

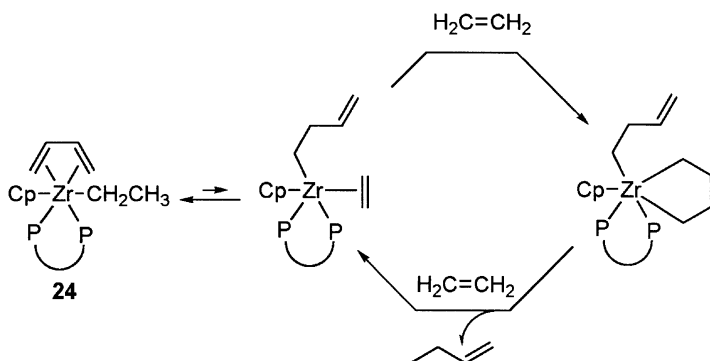


As shown in Table 1, a remarkable variety of alkene complexes bearing metal centers in a low oxidation state have been isolated and their structures have been determined by X-ray analysis. All the C-C bond distances in olefins coordinated to early transition metals at low oxidation states are more or less elongated compared to free ethylene. These structural data, together with those from NMR studies [14], indicate a major contribution of the metallacyclopropane structure (**2**), a fact which is also supported by calculation studies [15]. In the case of ethylene bridging two metal centers such as  $[\{\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrX}\}_2(\mu\text{-}\eta\text{-C}_2\text{H}_4)]$  (**3**), the M-C bond could be characterized as a  $\sigma$ -bond and there is a little contribution from the  $\mu$ -ethylene canonical structure [16-18].



Organometallic complexes of the lanthanide series have strong Lewis acidic sites, in  $\sigma$  and  $\pi$  fashion. In particular,  $\eta^2$ -interaction with C-C bonds has special importance in the mechanism of polymerization. However, only a few examples are known for isolated compounds such as  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Yb}(\mu\text{-C}_2\text{H}_4)\text{Pt}(\text{PPh}_3)_2$  (**4**) [19], and  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Sm}(\mu\text{-}\eta^2\text{:}\eta^4\text{-CH}_2\text{CHPh})\text{SmCp}_2^*$  (**5**) [20]. An acetylene adduct of ytterbium,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Yb}(\text{MeC}\equiv\text{CMe})$ , has been characterized crystallographically and shown to have weak interaction, like a Lewis acid-base interaction, and no  $\pi$ -back bonding [21].

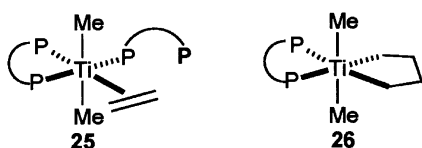
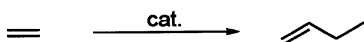




Scheme 1.

The  $\pi$ -back donation stabilizes the alkene-metal  $\pi$ -bonding and therefore this is the reason why alkene complexes of the low-valent early transition metals so far isolated did not catalyze any polymerization. Some of them catalyze the oligomerization of olefins via metallocyclic mechanism [25, 30, 37–39]. For example, a zirconium-alkyl complex,  $\text{CpZr}^{\text{II}}(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_3)(\eta^4\text{-butadiene})(\text{dmpe})$  ( $\text{dmpe}$  = 1,2-bis(dimethylphosphino)ethane) (**24**), catalyzed the selective dimerization of ethylene to 1-butene (Scheme I) [37, 38].

Dimethyltitanium complex **25**, bearing an ethylene and methyl ligands, catalyzed the dimerization of ethylene via a metallacyclopentane intermediate **26** (Eq. 1) [30]. During the dimerization, no insertion of ethylene into the  $\text{Ti-Me}$  bond was observed due to the perpendicular orientation between methyl and ethylene ligands. This inertness could be attributed to the low oxidation state of **25**, i.e.  $\text{Ti}(\text{II})$ .



(1)

### 3 Olefin Polymerization by Organometallic Complexes

#### 3.1 Cationic Metallocene Complexes as Active Species for a Metallocene/MAO System

A catalyst system consisting of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiCl}_2$  ( $\text{Cp}$  =  $\eta^5$ -cyclopentadienyl) (**27**) and alkylaluminum, such as  $\text{AlClEt}_2$ , showed only a low activity for  $\alpha$ -olefin

polymerization [40]. The important breakthrough in this homogeneous catalyst system was reached serendipitously by H. Sinn and W. Kaminsky [41] during a study of the effect of methylaluminoxane (abbreviated as MAO) on polymerization. Addition of an excess of MAO as a co-catalyst to a homogeneous solution of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiCl}_2$  (**27**) and  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrCl}_2$  (**28**) dramatically induced rapid polymerization of ethylene to reach the activities of  $10^4$  and  $10^5$  (kg of PE/mol.h.atm), respectively [42, 43]. This unique catalyst system is now known as the Kaminsky–Sinn catalyst. Since then metallocene complexes of Group 4 metals have attracted much interest in view of their suitability as catalysts for  $\alpha$ -olefin polymerization; and the zirconocene system has been found to have the most active metal center [42–44].

For propylene polymerization, **28**/MAO is the most active catalyst component in reactions that yield atactic polypropylene. The activity of a catalyst system of hafnocene/MAO is generally lower than that of the zirconocene catalyst systems, but the former has the advantage that it yields polymers of higher molecular weight [45, 46]. Some typical activity values of selected metallocene systems catalyzing the homo- and co-polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins are shown in Tables 2 and 3, even though the activity, stereospecificity and molecular weight of the resulting polymers significantly depend on the polymerization conditions, i.e., monomer and catalyst concentration as well as the amount and kind of the co-catalyst used. In fact, the polymerization of propylene using *rac*-( $\text{C}_2\text{H}_4$ )(IndH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**29**)/MAO and *rac*-( $\text{C}_2\text{H}_4$ )(Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**30**)/MAO as catalysts often leads to results that are at variance with literature data; this is because stereospecificity is closely related to monomer concentration [47, 48].

The electronic and steric effects of substituents on cyclopentadienyl ligands that affect the activity of the catalyst have been extensively and intensively

**Table 2.** Examples of the catalytic activity of selected metallocene and related complexes for the polymerization of ethylene

| Complex  | Temperature (°C) | Activity <sup>a</sup> | $M_n/10^3$   | $M_w/M_n$ | Ref. |
|--|------------------|-----------------------|--------------|-----------|------|
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiCl}_2$ ( <b>27</b> )/MAO   | 20               | 4300                  |              |           | [42] |
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiMe}_2$ ( <b>32</b> )/MAO   | 20               | 9600                  | 530( $M_n$ ) |           | [43] |
| S(2,2'-C <sub>6</sub> H <sub>2</sub> Bu <sup>t</sup> -2-Me-4-O) <sub>2</sub> TiCl <sub>2</sub> ( <b>31</b> )/MAO | 20               | 39300                 | 1800         | 2         | [52] |
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrCl}_2$ ( <b>28</b> )/MAO   | 70               | 91000                 |              |           | [42] |
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}_2$ ( <b>33</b> )/MAO   | 50               | 9800                  | 331          | 1.78      | [44] |
| (Ind) <sub>2</sub> ZrMe <sub>2</sub> ( <b>34</b> )/MAO   | 50               | 66000                 | 395          | 2.20      | [44] |
| Me <sub>2</sub> Si(Ind) <sub>2</sub> ZrCl <sub>2</sub> ( <b>35</b> )/MAO   | 65               | 3900                  | 201          | 2.8       | [53] |
| [Cp <sub>2</sub> ZrMe][C <sub>2</sub> B <sub>9</sub> H <sub>11</sub> Co] ( <b>36</b> )                           | 60               | 400                   | 3.5–9.4      | 3.3–11.6  | [54] |
| [Cp*(C <sub>2</sub> B <sub>9</sub> H <sub>11</sub> )M(Me)] <sub>x</sub> (M = Zr ( <b>37</b> ), Hf ( <b>38</b> )) | 20               | 72                    |              |           | [55] |
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{HfMe}_2$ ( <b>39</b> )/MAO   | 50               | 1700                  | 361          |           | [44] |
| $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LaH}$ ( <b>40</b> )  | 25               | 182000                | 680          | 2.03      | [56] |
| $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LuMe}$ ( <b>41</b> )   | 50–80            | 6900                  | –            | –         | [57] |
| [PhC(NSiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> ] <sub>2</sub> ZrCl <sub>2</sub> ( <b>42</b> )/MAO                        | 25               | 570                   | 162( $M_n$ ) |           | [58] |

<sup>a</sup>Activity: kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>.



Table 3. Catalytic activity of selected metallocene complexes activated with MAO for the polymerization of propylene

| Complex   | Temperature<br>(°C) | Activity <sup>a</sup> | $M_n/10^3$       | $M_w/M_n$        | Tacticity               | Ref. |
|---|---------------------|-----------------------|------------------|------------------|-------------------------|------|
| $Cp_2ZrMe_2$ ( <b>33</b> )  |                     | 2730                  |                  |                  | atactic                 | [59] |
| <i>rac</i> -( $C_2H_4$ )(Ind) $H_2ZrCl_2$ ( <b>29</b> )                             | 60                  | 7700                  | 12               |                  | (mm 0.95)               | [59] |
| <i>rac</i> - $Me_2Si(Ind)_2ZrCl_2$ ( <b>35</b> )                                    | 65                  | 110                   | 201              | 2.2              | mm 0.962                | [53] |
| $Me_2Si(C_3H_5Me_3-2,3,5)(C_3H_5Me_3-2,4,5)ZrCl_2$ ( <b>43</b> )                    | 30                  | 5300                  | 67               | 2.0              | mmmm 0.977              | [60] |
| $Me_2Si(C_3H_5Bu^1-3-Me-5)(C_5H_3Me_2-2'-Bu^1-4)ZrCl_2$ ( <b>44</b> )               | 50                  | 505                   | 3.7              | 2.5              | mmmm 0.94               | [61] |
| $(C_2H_4)(C_5H_3Bu^1-3)_2ZrCl_2$ ( <b>45</b> )<br>(42% <i>rac</i> 58% <i>meso</i> ) | 40                  | 160                   | 6.9 <sup>b</sup> | 2.5 <sup>b</sup> | mmmm 0.976 <sup>b</sup> | [62] |
| <i>rac</i> - $Me_3Si(Benz[e]Indenyl)_2ZrCl_2$ ( <b>46</b> )                         | 50                  | 41100                 | 24               | 1.64             | mmmm 0.90               | [63] |
| <i>rac</i> - $Me_2Si(2-Me-Benz[e]Indenyl)_2ZrCl_2$ ( <b>47</b> )                    | 40                  | 29000                 | 114              | 1.71             | mmmm 0.93               | [63] |
| $Me_2C(Cp)(Flu)ZrCl_2$ ( <b>48</b> )  | 25                  | 20000                 | 70               | 1.9              | rrrr 0.86               | [64] |
| $Cp_2TiMe_2$ ( <b>32</b> )  | 20                  | 36                    | 88( $M_n$ )      | 1.7              | atactic                 | [43] |
| $Cp_2TiPh_2$ ( <b>49</b> )  | 60                  | 54                    | 55               | 1.7              | mmmm 0.53               | [65] |
| $(C_2H_4)(Ind)_2TiCl_2$ ( <b>50</b> )<br>(56% <i>rac</i> 44% <i>meso</i> )          | 60                  | 18                    | 97               | 1.6              | mm 0.54                 | [65] |
| <i>rac</i> - $MeCH(Ind)(C_5Me_4)TiCl_2$ ( <b>51</b> )                               | 50                  | 250                   | 67               | 1.9              | mmmm 0.40               | [66] |
| <i>rac</i> - $MeCH(Ind)(C_5Me_4)TiMe_2$ ( <b>52</b> )                               | 25                  |                       |                  |                  | mmmm 0.38               | [67] |
| $S(2,2'-C_6H_3Bu^1-2-Me-4-O-1)_2TiCl_2$ ( <b>31</b> )                               | 20                  | 8910                  | 4000             | 2.2              | atactic                 | [52] |
| <i>rac</i> -( $C_2H_4$ )(Ind) $_2HfCl_2$ ( <b>53</b> )                              | 50                  | 26800                 | 724              | 2.2              |                         | [45] |
| <i>rac</i> -( $C_2H_4$ )(Ind) $H_2HfCl_2$ ( <b>54</b> )                             | 80                  | 34800                 | 42               | 2.4              |                         | [45] |

<sup>a</sup> Activity: kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>.<sup>b</sup> Data of pentane insoluble fraction.

investigated. The presence of electron-withdrawing substituents on the auxiliary ligands decreases the activity of the catalysts for ethylene and propylene polymerization and lowers the molecular weight of the resulting polymer [49, 50].

Although cyclopentadienyl ligands have been well investigated, the question of alternative ligands for olefin polymerization is relatively unexplored. Schaverien and coworkers have reported olefin polymerizations using a variety of Group 4 metal complexes bearing chelating aryloxy ligands [51]. But most of them are less active for polymerization of ethylene than metallocene catalysts, except for  $S(2,2'-C_6H_2Bu^t-2-Me-4-O)_2TiCl_2$  (**31**) which had been reported by Miyatake et al. [52].

Although the role of MAO remains still speculative, organometallic approaches have led to progress in distinguishing catalytically active species [68]. Cationic alkyl metallocene complexes are now considered the catalytically active species in metallocene/MAO systems. Spectroscopic observation has confirmed the presence of cationic catalytic centers. X-ray photoelectron spectroscopy (XPS) on the binding energy of Zr( $3d_{5/2}$ ) has suggested the presence of cationic species, and cationic hydride species such as  $ZrHCp_2^+$  that are generated by  $\beta$ -hydride elimination of the propagating chain end [69].

Marks et al. observed cationic species in solution by NMR spectroscopy. The transfer of the methyl group from Zr to Al and the formation of the cationic species  $[ZrMeCp_2]^+$  were directly detected by measuring the CPMAS NMR spectra of powdery samples of  $Cp_2ZrMe_2/MAO$ , that were obtained after the evaporation of the solvent indicated [70–74]. Similarly,  $Cp'_2AnR_2$  and  $ZrR_2Cp_2$  in Lewis-acid on surfaces such as dehydroxylated  $\gamma$ -alumina afforded catalytically active cationic species as heterogeneous surface catalysts, which were also detected by CPMAS NMR spectroscopy. In contrast, organoactinide species supported by dehydroxylated silica afforded catalytically inactive  $_nAn-OSi$  species. These results indicate that the coordinative unsaturation and electrophilic character at the metal center are essential for the active catalyst.

The active species of the metallocene/MAO catalyst system have now been established as being three-coordinated cationic alkyl complexes  $[Cp_2MR]^+$  (14-electron species). A number of cationic alkyl metallocene complexes have been synthesized with various anionic components. Some structurally characterized complexes are presented in Table 4 [75, 76]. These cationic Group 4 complexes are coordinatively unsaturated and often stabilized by weak interactions, such as agostic interactions, as well as by cation-anion interactions. Under polymerization conditions such weak interactions smoothly provide the metal sites for monomers.

In 1985, Eisch et al. isolated a cationic alkenyltitanium complex (**55**) by the insertion of an alkyne into the cationic Ti–C bond generated from titanocene dichloride and methylaluminum dichloride (Eq. 2) [77]. Similarly, a mixture of  $Cp_2TiCl(CH_2SiMe_3)$  and  $AlCl_3$  afforded the solvent-separated ion pairs,

Table 4. Bond lengths for cationic metallocene complexes

| Complex   | M <sub>o</sub> -C<br>(Å) | M <sub>o</sub> C <sup>a</sup><br>(Å)   | Ref. |
|---|--------------------------|--|------|
| [Cp <sub>2</sub> Ti{(C <sub>5</sub> Me <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> CP <sub>h</sub> Me}][AlCl <sub>4</sub> ] (55)  | 2.13                     | —  | [77] |
| [Cp <sup>*</sup> TiMe(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (56)   | 1.988(10)                | —  | [78] |
| [C <sub>3</sub> H <sub>3</sub> Me <sub>2</sub> -1,2] <sub>2</sub> ZrMe][MeB(C <sub>6</sub> F <sub>5</sub> ) <sub>3</sub> ] (57)   | 2.252(4)                 | 2.549(3) (cation-anion) <sup>b</sup>   | [79] |
| [C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>3</sub> (SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> -1,3] <sub>2</sub> ZrMe[MeB(C <sub>6</sub> F <sub>5</sub> ) <sub>3</sub> ] (58)                                    | 2.260(4)                 | 2.667(5) (cation-anion) <sup>b</sup>   | [80] |
| [Cp <sub>2</sub> ZrMe(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (59)   | 2.256(10)                | —  | [81] |
| [Cp <sup>*</sup> Zr(CH <sub>2</sub> SiMe <sub>3</sub> )(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (60)   | 2.238(6)                 | —  | [82] |
| [Cp <sup>*</sup> ZrMe(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (61)   | 2.242(8)                 | —  | [83] |
| [Me <sub>2</sub> C(Cp)(Flu)ZrMe(PMe <sub>3</sub> )] [B(C <sub>6</sub> F <sub>5</sub> ) <sub>4</sub> ] (62)  | 2.23(2)                  | —  | [84] |
| [Cp <sub>2</sub> Zr( $\eta^2$ -CH <sub>2</sub> Ph)(NCMe)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (63)   | 2.344(8)                 | 2.648(6) (C <sub>ipso</sub> ) <sup>c</sup>   | [85] |
| [C <sub>3</sub> H <sub>4</sub> Me <sub>2</sub> Zr(CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>3</sub> )(PMe <sub>3</sub> )] [BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (64)                                    | 2.290(9)                 | 2.629(9) ( $\beta$ -H agostic) <sup>d</sup>  | [86] |
| [C <sub>3</sub> H <sub>4</sub> Me <sub>2</sub> Zr(CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>3</sub> SiMe <sub>3</sub> )(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (65)                                 | 2.26(2)                  | 2.57(2) (C <sub>ip</sub> -Si) <sup>e</sup>   | [87] |
| [Cp <sub>2</sub> Zr(CH <sub>2</sub> CH(AIEt <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> )] [C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>5</sub> ] (66)  | 2.27                     | 2.39 (C <sub>p</sub> -Al) <sup>f</sup>   | [16] |
| [rac-(C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(Ind) <sub>2</sub> Zr( $\eta^2$ -C,C'-CH(SiMe <sub>2</sub> Cl)(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ))] [Al <sub>2</sub> Cl <sub>6</sub> Me <sub>0.5</sub> ] (67) | 2.300(5)                 | 2.573(1) (Zr-Cl) <sup>h</sup><br>(3.132(1) (Zr-Si)) <sup>h</sup>   | [88] |
| [(C <sub>3</sub> H <sub>4</sub> Bu) <sub>2</sub> Zr( $\eta^5$ -CH <sub>2</sub> -C(Me) CH(Me))][B(C <sub>6</sub> H <sub>4</sub> F-4)] <sub>2</sub> (68)                              | 2.315(7)                 | 2.705(6) (Zr-C <sub>ip</sub> ) <sup>i</sup><br>2.712(6) (Zr-C <sub>j</sub> ) <sup>i</sup>                            | [89] |
| [Cp <sup>*</sup> HfMe(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (69)   | 2.233(9)                 | —  | [83] |
| [Cp <sup>*</sup> Hf(CH <sub>2</sub> CHMe <sub>2</sub> )(thf)][BPh <sub>4</sub> ] (70)   | 2.25(1)                  | ( $\alpha$ H-agostic)<br>(2.64(8) (Hf-H <sub>ip</sub> )) <sup>j</sup><br>(3.04(8) (Hf-H <sub>o</sub> )) <sup>j</sup> | [90] |

<sup>a</sup> Unusual metal-carbon contacts unless noted in parenthesis.

<sup>b</sup> Interactions between the cationic metal center and the CH<sub>3</sub> group of the anion.

<sup>c</sup> Zr-C<sub>ipso</sub> bond of Zr( $\eta^2$ -benzyl) group.

<sup>d</sup> Zr-C<sub>ip</sub> bond by  $\beta$ -hydrogen agostic interaction.

<sup>e</sup> Zr-C<sub>ip</sub> interaction by  $\gamma$ -silicon effect.

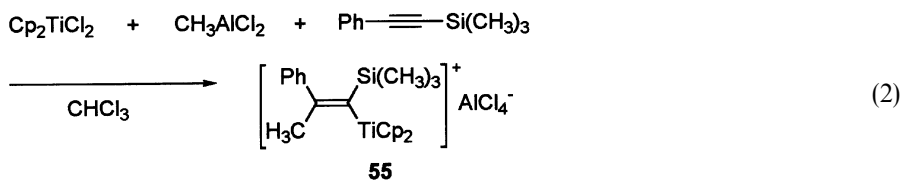
<sup>f</sup> Zr-C<sub>ip</sub> interaction presumably by  $\gamma$ -aluminium effect.

<sup>g</sup> Zr-Cl<sub>2</sub> and Zr-Si<sub>2</sub> contacts, respectively.

<sup>h</sup> Distances between the zirconium atom and the olefinic carbon atoms.

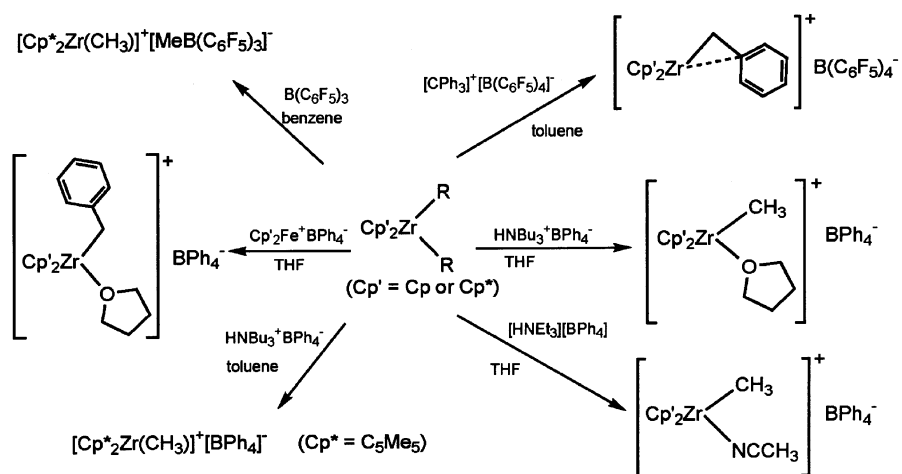
<sup>i</sup> Hf-H<sub>o</sub> distances connected by  $\alpha$ -H agostic interaction.

Ti(CH<sub>2</sub>SiMe<sub>3</sub>)Cp<sub>2</sub><sup>+</sup> and AlCl<sub>4</sub><sup>-</sup>, which were detected by NMR spectroscopy [91,92].



Eisch's work promoted investigation into the preparation of cationic metallocene complexes of Group 4 metals. Several preparative routes to cationic group 4 metallocene complexes are illustrated in Scheme II. Catalytic activities of some selected cationic metallocene complexes for the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins are summarized in Tables 5 and 6. The catalyst systems based on these cationic complexes are just as active as MAO-activated metallocene catalysts for the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins.

Protonolysis of Cp<sub>2</sub>TiMe<sub>2</sub> with HBF<sub>4</sub>OEt<sub>2</sub> and NH<sub>4</sub>X (X = PF<sub>6</sub>, ClO<sub>4</sub>) yielded the insoluble complexes {[Cp<sub>2</sub>TiMe]BF<sub>4</sub>}<sub>n</sub> (**86**) and [Cp<sub>2</sub>TiMe(NH<sub>3</sub>)]X (**87**), respectively [102]. These complexes did not show any catalytic activity for polymerization, whereas the cationic complexes [Cp<sub>2</sub>TiMeL] [BPh<sub>4</sub>] (L = THF, Et<sub>2</sub>O, MeOPh) (**88**) polymerized ethylene [98]. The protonation of the metallocycles, Cp'<sub>2</sub>M(CH<sub>2</sub>SiMe<sub>2</sub>CH<sub>2</sub>) (Cp'<sub>2</sub> = (C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>5</sub>)<sub>2</sub>, Me<sub>2</sub>Si(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub> for M = Ti, Zr; Cp'<sub>2</sub> = (C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>5</sub>)<sub>2</sub> for M = Zr), with [NEt<sub>3</sub>H] [BPh<sub>4</sub>] in THF yielded the corresponding cationic (trimethylsilyl)methyl complexes, [Cp'<sub>2</sub>M(CH<sub>2</sub>SiMe<sub>3</sub>)(THF)] [BPh<sub>4</sub>] (**60**). A THF-free cation complex [Cp'<sub>2</sub>Zr(CH<sub>2</sub>SiMe<sub>3</sub>)] [BPh<sub>4</sub>] (**89**) was prepared by the reaction of Cp'<sub>2</sub>Zr(CH<sub>2</sub>SiMe<sub>2</sub>CH<sub>2</sub>) with [N(*n*-butyl)<sub>3</sub>H] [BPh<sub>4</sub>] in toluene. The THF-free



Scheme 2.

**Table 5.** Catalytic activity of selected cationic metallocene complexes of Group 4 metals for the polymerization of ethylene

| Complex   | Temperature (°C) | Activity | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | Ref.     |
|---|------------------|----------|------------|-----------|----------|
| $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$ ( <b>59</b> )  | 23               | 12       | 30         | 2.5       | [76, 81] |
| $[\text{Cp}^*\text{ZrMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$ ( <b>71a</b> )   | 23               | 170      | 21         | 3.4       | [93]     |
| $\text{Cp}^*\text{Zr}^+(\text{m-C}_6\text{H}_4)_2\text{B}^-(\text{C}_6\text{H}_4\text{Me-4})_4$ ( <b>72</b> )         | 80               | 375      |            |           | [94]     |
| $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}][\text{C}_2\text{B}_9\text{H}_{11,2}]$ ( <b>73</b> )                                       | 40               | 265      |            |           | [94]     |
| $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}][(\text{C}_2\text{B}_9\text{H}_{11,2})_2\text{Co}]$ ( <b>74</b> )                          | 60               | 400      | 3.5–9.4    | 3.3–11.6  | [54]     |
| $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$ ( <b>75</b> )  | 25               | 4500     | 612        | 2.0       | [79]     |
| $[\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{Me}_2-1,2]_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$ ( <b>76</b> )               | 25               | 6800     | 367        | 1.4       | [95]     |
| $[\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{SiMe}_3]_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>77</b> )                   | 21               | 2870     | 114.6      | 2.6       | [96]     |
| $[\text{C}_2\text{H}_4](\text{Ind})_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})[\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>78</b> ) | 60               | 17000    | 36         | 4.0       | [97]     |
| $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{HfMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$ ( <b>69</b> )  | 23               | 170      | 11         | 3.1       | [93]     |
| $[\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{SiMe}_3]_2\text{HfMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>79</b> )                   | 41               | 1200     | 15.2       | 2.3       | [96]     |
| $[\text{Cp}_2\text{TiMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$ ( <b>80</b> )  | 25               | 3.1      |            |           | [98]     |
| $[(\text{Ind})_2\text{TiMe}][\text{BPh}_4]$ ( <b>81</b> )   | 40               | 2.96     | 16         | 2.0       | [99]     |
| $[\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{SiMe}_3]_2\text{TiMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{H}_3(\text{CF}_3)_2)_4]$ ( <b>82</b> )    | 0                | 35       | 6.01       | 2.2       | [96]     |

**Table 6.** Catalytic activity of selected cationic metallocene complexes of Group 4 metals for the polymerization of propylene

| Complex   | Temperature (°C) | Activity <sup>a</sup> | $M_n/10^3$       | $M_w/M_n$ | Tacticity          | Ref.  |
|---|------------------|-----------------------|------------------|-----------|--------------------|-------|
| $[\text{C}_2\text{H}_4](\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>83</b> )                            | 55               | 10000                 | 160 <sup>b</sup> |           | 0.963 <sup>c</sup> | [100] |
| $[\text{C}_2\text{H}_4](\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>83</b> )                            | 20               | 210000                |                  |           | 0.94 <sup>c</sup>  | [101] |
| $[\text{C}_2\text{H}_4](\text{Ind})_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})[\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>78</b> )         | 23               | 4690                  | 27               | 2.1       | mmm 0.76           | [97]  |
| $[\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ ( <b>84</b> ) | 23               | 290                   | 22               | 2.0       | rrrr 0.90          | [97]  |
| $[\text{C}_2\text{H}_4](\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$ ( <b>85</b> )                          | 20               | 700                   |                  |           |                    | [101] |

<sup>a</sup> Activity: kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>.<sup>b</sup>  $M_n$  value.<sup>c</sup> Weight fraction of PP insoluble in refluxing *n*-hexane or heptane.

complex had activity for ethylene polymerization, but the THF complex had almost no activity. Thus, the coordination of THF significantly retarded the catalytic activity of cationic alkylmetallocenes [82]. A similar reaction of  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}_2$  with  $[\eta\text{-Bu}_3\text{NH}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{H}_4\text{R-4})_4]$  (R = H, Me, Et) in toluene afforded also the THF-free zwitterions  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Zr}^+(m\text{-C}_6\text{H}_4)\text{B}^-(\text{C}_6\text{H}_4\text{R-4})_4$  (**72**).  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}_2$  and  $(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4\text{Et})_2\text{ZrMe}_2$  were reacted with a diprotic carborane to give  $\text{Cp}'_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{C}_2\text{B}_9\text{H}_{12})$  ( $\text{Cp}' = \text{Cp}^*, \text{C}_5\text{Me}_4\text{Et}$ ) (**73**) in which the  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{ZrMe}]^+$  cation is bound to the  $[\text{C}_2\text{B}_9\text{H}_{12}]^-$  anion solely through a Zr–H–B bond. These complexes have 20–30 times higher activities for the polymerization of ethylene than do the base-coordinated metallocene catalysts such as  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**59**) [94]. Base-free cationic titanium alkyls have also been generated. Treatment of a dichloromethane solution of  $(\text{Ind})_2\text{TiMe}_2$  with  $[\text{PhNMe}_2\text{H}][\text{BPh}_4]$  gives a cationic complex  $[(\text{Ind})_2\text{TiMe}][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**81**). Solutions of this complex polymerize ethylene at between  $-60$  and  $10^\circ\text{C}$ . The activity shows a maximum at ca.  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and gradually decreases on raising temperature. Rapid decrease of the activity was observed above  $15^\circ\text{C}$  due to the decomposition of cationic species in dichloromethane [99].

The 16-electron complex,  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**59**), underwent hydrogenation to the insoluble hydride complex  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{H})(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**90**) by  $\sigma$ -bond-metathesis with the coordinated  $\text{H}_2$  molecule [103]. Isobutylene reversibly inserted itself into the cationic hydride  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{H})(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  ( $\text{Cp}' = \text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{Me}$ ) to afford  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{CHMe}_2)(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**91**) [90]. In contrast 18-electron complexes such as  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMeL}_2][\text{BPh}_4]$  (L =  $\text{CH}_3\text{CN}$ ,  $\text{PMe}_3$ ,  $\text{PMe}_2\text{Ph}$ ,  $\text{PMePh}_2$ ) (**92**) were not hydrogenated [103]. Thus, the phosphine ligand remarkably stabilizes cationic 16 electron complexes by two-electron donation. In a cationic hafnium-phosphine complex,  $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Hf}(\text{CH}_2\text{CHMe}_2)(\text{PMe}_3)][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**70**),  $\alpha$ -agostic interaction was observed by NMR spectroscopy, indicating the presence of an electrophilic metal center [90].

The weakly coordinated cationic THT (tetrahydrothiophene) complexes,  $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{MMe}(\text{THT})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**71**) (M = Zr (**a**), Hf (**b**)) have higher activities for ethylene polymerization compared to THF derivatives. The Zr complex **71a** oligomerizes propylene to give oligomers up to  $\text{C}_{24}$ , while the Hf complex gives only the dimer 4-methyl-1-pentene and the trimer 4,6-dimethyl-1-heptene [93]. The THT complexes **71** oligomerize propylene in *N,N*-dimethylaniline. At room temperature, complex **71a** gave a mixture of  $\text{C}_6$  to  $\text{C}_{24}$  oligomers while **71b** derivative selectively afforded one trimer (4,6-dimethyl-1-heptene) [83].

The use of weakly coordinating and fluorinated anions such as  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{H}_4\text{F-4})_4^-$ ,  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4^-$ , and  $\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3^-$  further enhanced the activities of Group 4 cationic complexes for the polymerization of olefins and thereby their activity reached a level comparable to those of MAO-activated metallocene catalysts. Base-free cationic metal alkyl complexes and catalytic studies on them had mainly been concerned with cationic methyl complexes,  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{M-Me}]^+$ . However, their thermal instability restricts the use of such systems at technically useful temperatures. The corresponding thermally more stable benzyl complexes,

$[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$  (**93**), where  $\text{Cp}'_2$   $\text{Cp}_2$ ,  $(\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{SiMe}_3)_2$ ,  $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2$ ,  $(\text{Me}_2\text{C})(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ , were found to be useful at higher temperatures [97]. Comparing two counter anions,  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4^-$  and  $\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3^-$ , the former was found to be superior for propylene polymerization [101].

Chien et al. reported isospecific polymerization of propylene when catalyzed by  $[(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$  (**83**). The activity of the complex increases with decreasing polymerization temperature [100]. Bochmann and his coworkers have reported that the reaction of  $\text{Cp}'_2\text{MMe}_2$  (M = Ti, Zr, or Hf;  $\text{Cp}'$   $\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{SiMe}_3$ ) with  $[\text{CPh}_3][\text{BR}_4]$  (R =  $\text{C}_6\text{H}_3(\text{CF}_3)_2$ ,  $\text{C}_6\text{F}_5$ ) gives base-free cationic  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{MMe}]^+$  catalysts. The ethylene polymerization activity of a series of complexes  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{MMe}]^+$  decreases in the order M = Ti > Hf > Zr. The activities of the Zr and Hf catalysts are comparable with those of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{MCl}_2/\text{MAO}$  systems [for  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ , 2870 kg (mol of catalyst) $^{-1}\text{h}^{-1}\text{atm}^{-1}$ ] (**77**) [96].

The reaction of zirconocene dimethyl complexes with  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  gave  $[\text{L}_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$  (L =  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_5$ ,  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{Me}_2$ -1,2,  $\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5$ ) (**94**) [79]. The crystal structure of  $[(\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{Me}_2$ -1,2) $_2\text{ZrMe}][\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$  (**76**) revealed weak coordination of the  $\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3^-$  anion to the zirconium. These complexes have activities for ethylene polymerization that are comparable to those of typical zirconocene/MAO catalysts [79]. Similarly, the reaction of other zirconocene dimethyl derivatives, *rac*- $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrMe}_2$  and  $\{\text{C}_5\text{H}_3(\text{SiMe}_3)_{2-1,3}\}_2\text{ZrMe}_2$ , with  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  also afforded cationic zirconocene derivatives weakly coordinated by the  $\text{MeB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3^-$  anion, while the reaction of dibenzyl complexes,  $\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_2$  ( $\text{Cp}'_2$  = *rac*- $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{Ind})_2$ ,  $\{\text{C}_5\text{H}_3(\text{SiMe}_3)_{2-1,3}\}_2$ ,  $(\text{C}_5\text{H}_5)_2$ , *rac*- $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2$ ), leads to  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{ZrCH}_2\text{Ph}][\text{PhCH}_2\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$  (**95**) which have  $\eta^2$ -coordinated benzyl ligands and noncoordinated  $[\text{PhCH}_2\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$  counter anions. The structurally similar complexes,  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{ZrCH}_2\text{Ph}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$  (**96**), were obtained from the corresponding zirconocene dibenzyl complex with  $[\text{CPh}_3][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ , which are stable in toluene at 60°C. The complexes are highly active catalysts for the polymerization of ethylene and propylene [80].

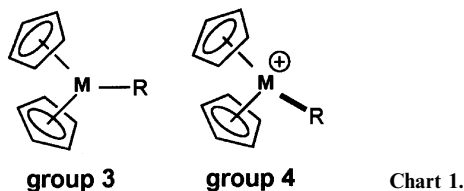
The oxidative reaction of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrR}_2$  with  $\text{Ag}[\text{BPh}_4]$  of  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{Fe}][\text{BPh}_4]$  in  $\text{CH}_3\text{CN}$  afforded  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{Zr}(\text{R})(\text{CH}_3\text{CN})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (R = H, Ph,  $\text{CH}_3$ ,  $\eta^2$ - $\text{CH}_2\text{Ph}$ ) (**97**) [104, 105]. Insertion of the coordinated acetonitrile of complexes **97** to the zirconium-alkyl bond yielded  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{Zr}\{\text{N}=\text{C}(\text{R})(\text{CH}_3)\}(\text{CH}_3\text{CN})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**98**) [105]. The oxidative reaction of  $\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_2$  ( $\text{Cp}'$  =  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{Me}$ ) with  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Fe}][\text{BPh}_4]$  affords a normal  $\eta^1$ -benzyl complex  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**99**), which undergoes hydrogenolysis to produce a cationic hydride complex  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\text{H})(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**90**). This hydride complex reacts with allene to give an  $\eta^3$ -allyl complex  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Zr}(\eta^3\text{-C}_3\text{H}_5)(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**100**). These complexes oligomerize ethylene in  $\text{CH}_2\text{Cl}_2$  [106]. Similarly *rac*- $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_2$  reacts with  $[\text{Cp}'_2\text{Fe}][\text{BPh}_4]$  to yield [*rac*- $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})(\text{thf})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**101**), which undergoes ligand substitution in  $\text{CH}_3\text{CN}$  to give an  $\eta^2$ -benzyl complex [*rac*- $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2\text{Zr}(\eta^2\text{-CH}_2\text{Ph})(\text{CH}_3\text{CN})][\text{BPh}_4]$  (**102**) [107].

The reaction of  $\text{Ag}[\text{CB}_{11}\text{H}_{12}]$  with  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrR}_2$  ( $\text{R} = \text{CH}_2\text{Ph}$ ,  $\text{Me}$ ) yields  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrR}(\eta^1\text{-CB}_{11}\text{H}_{12})$  (**103**) where  $\text{CB}_{11}\text{H}_{12}^-$  is another weakly coordinating anion. The benzyl complex polymerizes ethylene in toluene above  $0^\circ\text{C}$ . [108]. The methyl complex oligomerizes propylene primarily to 2-methyl-1-pentene and 2,4-dimethyl-1-heptene.  $\text{Cp}^*\text{ZrMe}_2(\eta^3\text{-CB}_{11}\text{H}_{12})$  (**104**) is prepared from the reaction of  $\text{Cp}^*\text{ZrMe}_3$  with  $\text{Ag}[\text{CB}_{11}\text{H}_{12}]$ . It is unreactive with propylene, 2-butyne, and styrene [109].

Anions of the type  $[\text{M}(\text{C}_2\text{B}_9\text{H}_{11})_2]^-$  ( $\text{M} = \text{Fe}$ ,  $\text{Cp}$ ,  $\text{Ni}$ ) were also used as noncoordinating anions with  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}]^+$ , which are active for the polymerization and copolymerization of ethylene and  $\alpha$ -olefins in non-polar solvents such as toluene and hexane [54]. By using the same anions, cationic actinide complexes have also been prepared [110].

### 3.2 Neutral Group 3 Metallocene Complexes as Catalysts of Polymerization

Neutral isoelectronic Group 3 metallocene complexes such as  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{MR}$  ( $\text{M} = \text{Sc}$ ,  $\text{Y}$ , and lanthanide metals) (Table 7) are 14 electron species and show an isolobal analogy to cationic Group 4 metallocene species as shown schematically in Chart 1. They are found to be highly active catalysts for the polymerization of ethylene [56, 111–116]. The activity depends upon the kind of metal center; i.e. the activity is in the order of  $\text{La} > \text{Nd} > \text{Lu}$  [56, 117]. The early lanthanide metallocene hydrides showed higher activities than those of homogeneous Group 4 metal based catalysts at the initial stage of the polymerization, although they showed decreasing activities with increasing reaction time. The polymerization of ethylene catalyzed by a hydride complex of lutetium,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LuH}$  (**105**), afforded polyethylene with rather narrow polydispersity,  $M_w/M_n = 1.37$  [56]. Cationic complexes of actinides such as  $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ThMe}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$  (**106**) were found to be active catalysts for the polymerization of ethylene [118].



On the other hand, the reaction of  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LnR}$  with propylene did not afford any polymers but rather an allyl complex,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Ln}(\eta^3\text{-allyl})$ , via a  $\sigma$ -bond metathesis reaction [56, 117]. One molecule of propylene can insert itself into the  $\text{Lu-Me}$  bond of  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LuMe}$  to give the corresponding isobutylene complex. The successive insertion of propylene is 1000-fold slower than the first insertion [57]. The gas-phase reaction of  $\text{Sc}(\text{CH}_3)_2^+$  with propylene also produces a



**Table 7.** Catalytic activity of metallocene complexes of Group 3 metals

| Complex   | Temperature<br>(°C) | Activity <sup>a</sup> | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | Ref.       |
|---|---------------------|-----------------------|------------|-----------|------------|
| $Cp^*LaH$ ( <b>40</b> )                                     | 25                  | 182000                | 680        | 2.03      | [56]       |
| $Cp_2^*NdH$ ( <b>107</b> )                                  | 25                  | 137000                | 590        | 1.81      | [56]       |
| $Cp^*LuH$ ( <b>105</b> )                                    | 25                  | 10000                 | 96         | 1.37      | [56]       |
| $Cp_2^*LuMe$ ( <b>41</b> )                                  | 50–80               | 6900                  | –          | –         | [57]       |
| $Me_2Si(C_2H_5)_2-SiMe_3-4-SiMe_2(Bu^i)_2YH$ ( <b>108</b> ) | 25                  | 58.4                  | 82         | 4.18      | [119]      |
| $\{Cp^*Y(OC_6H_3Bu_2-2,6)_2(\mu-H)\}_2$ ( <b>109</b> )      | 25                  | 0.34                  | 12         | 10.8      | [120]      |
| $[Cp^*ThMe][BPh_4]$ ( <b>110</b> )                          | 25                  | 1.1                   | –          | –         | [121, 122] |
| $[Cp_2^*ThMe][B(C_6F_5)_4]$ ( <b>106</b> )                  | 25                  | 360                   | –          | –         | [122]      |

<sup>a</sup> Activity:  $kg$  of catalyst<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>

$\sigma$ -bond metathesis products,  $\text{ScMe}(\text{allyl})$  and  $\text{Sc}(\text{allyl})_2$  [123]. In the case of yttrium,  $[(\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{Me})_2\text{YH}(\text{thf})]_2$  reacts with ethylene and propylene to form  $(\text{C}_5\text{H}_4\text{Me})_2\text{YR}(\text{thf})$  (R = ethyl, *n*-propyl) without polymerization [124].

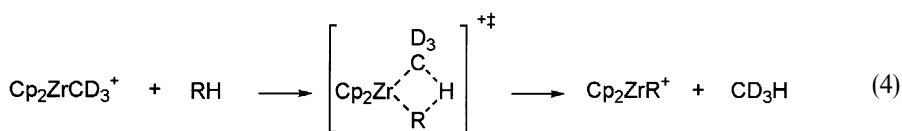
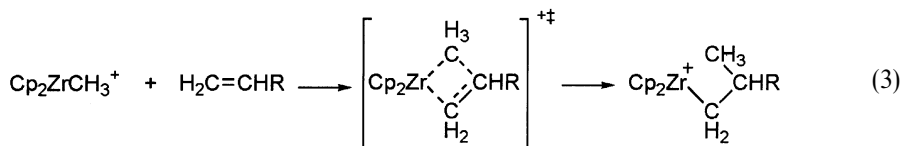
A scandium complex,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ScH}$ , also polymerizes ethylene, but does not polymerize propylene and isobutene [125]. On the other hand, a linked amidocyclopentadienyl complex  $[\{\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\eta^5\text{-C}_5\text{Me}_4)(\eta^1\text{-NCMe}_3)\}\text{Sc}(\text{H})(\text{PMe}_3)]_2$  slowly polymerizes propylene, 1-butene, and 1-pentene to yield atactic polymers with low molecular weight ( $M_n$  = 3000–7000) [126, 115]. A chiral,  $C_2$ -symmetric *ansa*-metallocene complex of yttrium,  $[\text{rac-Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{C}_5\text{H}_2\text{SiMe}_3\text{-2-Bu}^t\text{-4})_2\text{YH}]_2$ , polymerizes propylene, 1-butene, 1-pentene, and 1-hexene slowly over a period of several days at 25°C to afford isotactic polymers with modest molecular weight [114].

Marks et al. reported the co-polymerization of ethylene and 1-hexene by using *ansa*-type complexes of lanthanide metals [127]. Recently, bulky alkyl substituted *ansa*-type metallocene complexes of yttrium have been reported to exhibit high activity for the polymerization of 1-hexene. [114, 119, 128]

### 3.3 Gas-Phase Reaction of Cationic $d^0$ Alkyl Compounds of Group 4 Metals

Remarkably high reactivity of cationic alkyl complexes of Group 4 metals with 1-alkenes has been observed in gas-phase reactions [129]. Typical ionic species such as  $\text{TiCl}_2\text{Me}^+$  react with ethylene, and the insertion followed by  $\text{H}_2$  elimination gives rise to a cationic allyl complex  $\text{TiCl}_2\text{C}_3\text{H}_5^+$ , which does not react further with ethylene.

The gas-phase reaction of cationic zirconocene species,  $\text{ZrMeCp}_2^+$ , with alkenes and alkynes was reported to involve two major reaction sequences, which are the migratory insertion of these unsaturated hydrocarbons into the Zr–Me bond (Eq. 3) and the activation of the C–H bond via  $\sigma$ -bonds metathesis rather than  $\beta$ -hydrogen shift/alkene elimination (Eq. 4) [130, 131]. The insertion in the gas-phase closely parallels the solution chemistry of  $\text{Zr}(\text{R})\text{Cp}_2^+$  and other isoelectronic complexes. Thus, the results derived from calculations based on this gas-phase reactivity should be correlated directly to the solution reactivity (vide infra).

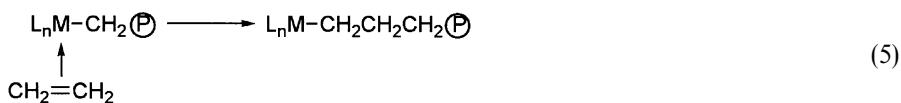


The Group 3 metal cationic species  $\text{ScMe}_2^+$  similarly reacts with ethylene to give  $\text{Sc}(\text{Me})(\text{allyl})^+$  after  $\text{H}_2$  elimination. This species reacts further with ethylene to form the dehydrogenated product  $\text{Sc}(\text{allyl})_2^+$  [132]. The reaction of these  $d^0$  species with propylene gave allyl complexes via a  $\sigma$ -bond metathesis activating the allylic C–H bond. Although the insertion reaction is normally observed for cationic  $d^0$  metal systems,  $d^n$  species mainly undergo  $\sigma$ -bond metathesis reactions rather than the migratory insertion in the gas-phase reaction of cationic metal-methyl  $\text{MMe}^+$  (where M = Fe, Y and so on) with alkenes [133]. Thus, this evidence collectively suggests that the coordinatively unsaturated  $d^0$  species is important for the insertion of alkene into an M–C bond.

### 3.4 Propagation

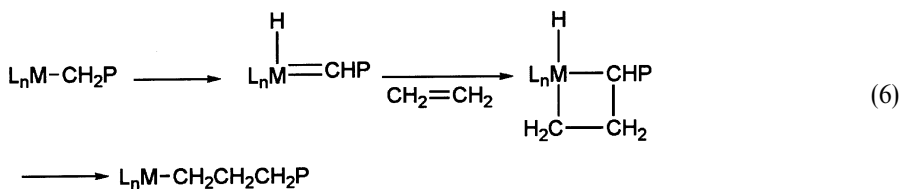
In the propagation process of Ziegler-Natta polymerization, the insertion of olefin into a metal-carbon bond is the most important basic step, but many questions concerning to this process remained unanswered for a long time.

The most famous mechanism, namely *Cossee's mechanism*, in which the alkene inserts itself directly into the metal-carbon bond (Eq. 5), has been proposed, based on the kinetic study [134–136]. This mechanism involves the intermediacy of ethylene coordinated to a metal-alkyl center and the following insertion of ethylene into the metal-carbon bond via a four-centered transition state. The olefin coordination to such a catalytically active metal center in this intermediate must be weak so that the olefin can readily insert itself into the M–C bond without forming any meta-stable intermediate. Similar alkyl-olefin complexes such as  $\text{Cp}_2\text{NbR}(\eta^2\text{-ethylene})$  have been easily isolated and found not to be the active catalyst precursor of polymerization [31–33, 137]. In support of this, theoretical calculations recently showed the presence of a weakly ethylene-coordinated intermediate (vide infra) [12, 13]. The stereochemistry of ethylene insertion was definitely shown to be *cis* by the evidence that the polymerization of *cis*- and *trans*-dideutero-ethylene afforded stereoselectively deuterated polyethylenes [138].



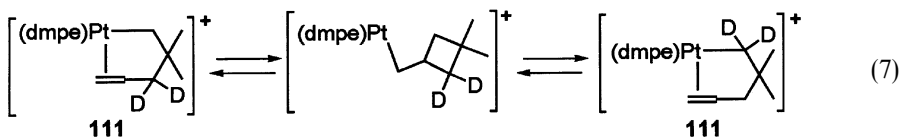
As the second mechanism, Green and Rooney proposed the '*metallacycle mechanism*' in which metal-carbene and metallacyclobutane are the key intermediates, based on the  $\alpha$ -hydrogen elimination from an alkyl-metal bond as shown in Eq. (6) [139]. A theoretical study suggests that this process will occur quite easily [140]. An experimental support for this mechanism has been obtained in the research on some alkylidene complexes of tantalum. A tantalum alkylidene hydride complex,  $\text{Ta}(\text{CHCMe}_3)(\text{H})\text{L}_3\text{I}_2$ , (where L =  $\text{PMe}_3$ ) reacts with ethylene to give the ethylene-inserted compound  $\text{Ta}[(\text{CH}(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2))_n$

$\text{CMe}_3](\text{H})\text{L}_3\text{I}_2$ , whose protonolysis afforded polyethylene [141].

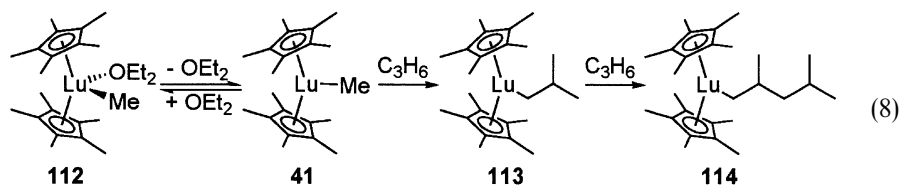


Here we discuss more details of the Cossee mechanism using recent evidence obtained by modern organometallic chemistry, together with relevant results of theoretical calculations.

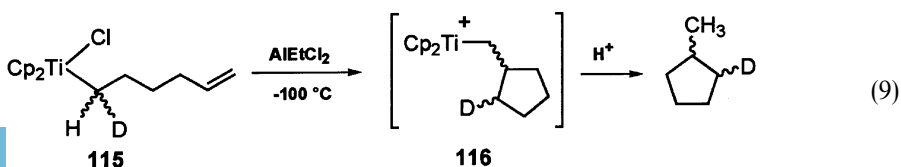
The Cossee mechanism has been demonstrated by direct observation of organometallic complexes where a C—C bond inserts itself into an M—C bond as shown in Eq. (7)–(9). A labeling experiment on a cationic platinum complex **111** indicated the reversible insertion of the coordinated alkene into the Pt—C bond as shown in Eq. (7) [142].



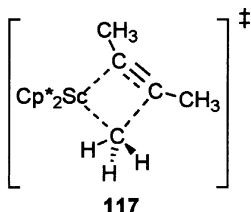
The direct insertion of propylene into the Lu—Me bond of  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LuMe}(\text{OEt}_2)$  (**112**) was reported to give isobutyl (**113**) and 2,4-dimethylpentyl (**114**) complexes (Eq. 8) [57, 143].



By performing excellent model reactions [144], Grubbs and his co-workers demonstrated direct olefin insertion into an M—C bond. Thus, complex **115** was treated with  $\text{AlEtCl}_2$  to give complex **116**, whose decomposition afforded methylcyclopentane. Under the same conditions, the polymerization of ethylene took place. In this way, the insertion of  $\alpha$ -olefins into a Ti—C single bond in a model Ziegler-Natta catalyst system was directly observed (Eq. 9).

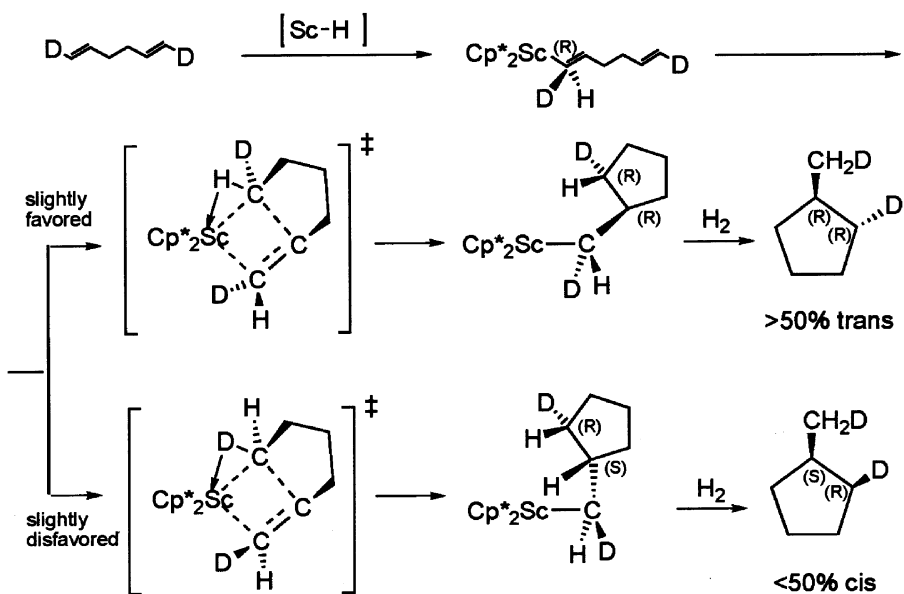


As a model for the insertion process in the polymerization of ethylene, the reaction of  $\text{Cp}^*_2\text{ScMe}$  with 2-butyne was investigated. The reaction was revealed to have a relatively small enthalpy of activation and a very large negative entropy of activation; a highly ordered four-centered transition state (**117**) was proposed [111, 112].



The importance of  $\alpha$ -agostic interaction during the propagation process has been demonstrated by the labeling experiments of Bercaw's and Britzinger's groups independently. Scheme III summarizes the results reported by Bercaw's group [145] and the excellent work by Britzinger's group is discussed in Scheme V (vide infra). The propensity of  $\alpha$ -agostic interaction with the  $\alpha$ -H rather than the  $\alpha$ -D is shown.

The presence of  $\alpha$ -agostic interaction in alkyl complexes of early transition metals and actinide metals has recently been confirmed. Thus, a neutron diffraction study of  $\text{Cp}^*_2\text{Th}(\text{CH}_2\text{CMe}_3)_2$  clearly revealed this interaction [146]. The presence of one of the  $\alpha$ -hydrogens on the two neopentyl groups quite near to the metal (2.597(9) and 2.648(9) Å) indicates the agostic interaction. MO calculations of  $\text{Cp}^*_2\text{Th}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_2$  indicated that not only a  $\alpha$ -H but also a  $\beta$ -H can participate in agostic interactions without losing Th-C bond strength [147, 148].



Scheme 3.

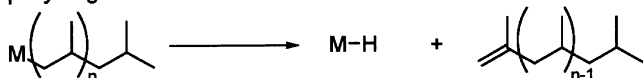
### 3.5 Termination Reactions: $\beta$ -Hydrogen Elimination, Alkyl Chain End Transfer, and $\beta$ -Methyl Elimination

Termination reaction of olefin polymerization can be classified into three categories (Scheme IV). The polypropylene prepared by Kaminsky's catalyst system has the terminal C=C double bond, being terminated via  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination [149, 150]. The resulting  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrH}^+$  species was initially detected by XPS [69]. Recently, this species was isolated as a THF adduct. The reaction of  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{THF})]^+$  with  $\text{H}_2$  afforded  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrH}(\text{thf})]^+$ , which slowly opened the THF ring to yield  $[\text{Cp}_2\text{Zr}(\text{OBU})(\text{THF})]^+$  [151]. In the temperature range 0–80°C,  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination occurs only when the catalyst is not sterically crowded. Thus the polymerization using catalyst precursors such as  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrCl}_2$ ,  $\text{Cp}_2\text{HfCl}_2$ , *rac*-( $\text{C}_2\text{H}_4$ )(IndH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>, and  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{Ind})_2\text{ZrCl}_2$  has mostly been accompanied by  $\beta$ -hydrogen transfer reaction [150–154].

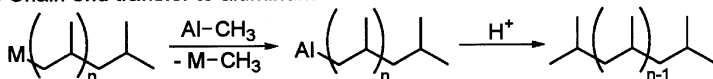
The second termination reaction is *alkyl chain end transfer* from the active species to aluminium [155]. This termination becomes major one at lower temperatures in the catalyst systems activated by MAO. <sup>1</sup>H and <sup>13</sup>C NMR analysis of the polymer obtained by the cyclopolymerization of 1,5-hexadiene, catalyzed by  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrCl}_2/\text{MAO}$ , afforded signals due to methylenecyclopentane, cyclopentane, and methylcyclopentane end groups upon acidic hydrolysis, indicating that chain transfer occurs both by  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination and chain transfer to aluminium in the ratio of 2:8, and the latter process is predominant when the polymerization is carried out at 25°C [156]. The values of rate constants for  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrCl}_2/\text{MAO}$  at 70°C are reported to be:  $k_p$  168–1670 (Ms)<sup>-1</sup>,  $k_{tr}^{\alpha}$  0.021–0.81 s<sup>-1</sup>, and  $k_{tr}^{\beta}$  0.28 s<sup>-1</sup> [155].

$\beta$ -Methyl elimination is the third termination reaction in olefin polymerization. As shown in scheme IV, the methyl group attached to the  $\beta$ -carbon transfers to the metal atom. This kind of homogeneous reaction was originally

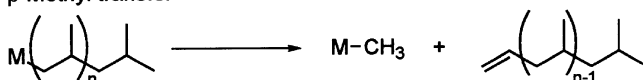
#### (a) $\beta$ -Hydrogen transfer



#### (b) Chain end transfer to aluminum



#### (c) $\beta$ -Methyl transfer



Scheme 4.

observed for the reaction of  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{LuMe}$  with propylene [57,157]. The  $\beta$ -methyl transfer reaction occurs in the case of oligomerization of propylene by the catalyst system based on  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Zr}$ , where  $\text{Cp}^*$  is the pentamethylcyclopentadienyl ligand. Polymerization using  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrCl}_2/\text{MAO}$  proceeds with 91%  $\beta$ -methyl transfer, 8%  $\beta$ -hydrogen transfer, and 1% chain transfer to aluminium at 50°C, while the chain transfer to aluminum occurs only at 40°C [152]. Polymerization by a MAO-free system such as  $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}(\text{THT})]^+[\text{BPh}_4]^-$  was terminated almost exclusively by  $\beta$ -methyl transfer at wide range of temperatures (5–95°C) [83]. Such a termination reaction was also observed in the gas-phase reaction of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}^+$  with isobutene [131]. Competitive  $\beta$ -H and  $\beta$ -Me eliminations were detected in the polymerization of isobutylene, catalyzed by  $\text{OpSc}(\text{H})(\text{PMe}_3)(\text{Op} = \text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)_2)$  [116].

## 4 Stereoselective Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins

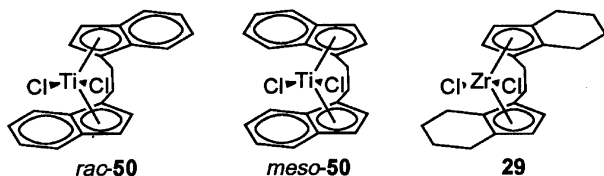
### 4.1 Isospecific Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins

The initials Kaminsky-Sinn systems based on  $\text{Cp}_2\text{MX}_2/\text{MAO}$  (M = Ti, Zr) afforded only atactic polypropylene. In 1984, Ewen found that the  $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiPh}_2/\text{MAO}$  system became the catalyst for the isospecific polymerization of propylene (mmmm = 50%) on cooling down the catalyst system below 45°C [65]. In 1985, Brinzinger designed the rational and effective bridged-metallocenes catalyst system that affords the high isospecificity in  $\alpha$ -olefin polymerization. Here we shall briefly review the isospecific polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefin by using bridged- and unbridged-metallocene catalyst systems.

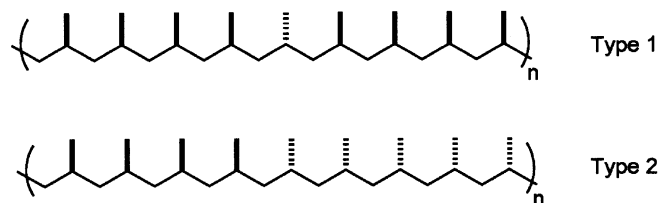
#### 4.1.1 Isospecific Polymerization by Ansa-type (Bridged) Metallocenes

In 1984, Ewen reported that a mixture of *meso*- and *racemo*-isomers of  $(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{Ind})_2\text{TiCl}_2$  (**50**) upon activation with MAO afforded a mixture of isotactic PP and atactic PP [65]. For the first time Brinzinger used a chiral  $\text{C}_2$ -symmetrical ethylene-bridged metallocene, *rac*-( $\text{C}_2\text{H}_4$ )( $\text{IndH}_4$ ) $_2\text{ZrCl}_2$  (**29**), as catalyst precursor for highly isotactic polymerization of 1-alkenes [59]. This breakthrough was followed by active and widespread research using Group 4 metallocene catalysts with a variety of bridging units. Some representative examples of isospecific polymerization are shown in Table 8 [59]. The isolated isotactic polypropylene was found to have stereerrors of type 1 in Scheme V (*the enantiomorphic site control*), which is in sharp contrast to the unbridged metallocene catalysts that gave type 2 isotactic polymers in Scheme V through *the chain end control*.

A  $C_1$ -symmetric ethylidene-bridged titanium complex, *rac*-MeCH(Ind)(C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>4</sub>)TiCl<sub>2</sub> (**51**) showed rather low isospecificity [66]. The polymerization of propylene using *rac*-MeCH(Ind)(C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>4</sub>)TiX<sub>2</sub>/MAO (X = Cl, Me) gives a stereoblock polymer comprising alternating sequences of stereoregular, crystallizable and stereoirregular, amorphous polypropylene, which is a thermoplastic elastomer [66, 67, 158]. The ethylene-bridged hafnium complexes, (C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(Ind)<sub>2</sub>HfCl<sub>2</sub> (**53**) and (C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(IndH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>HfCl<sub>2</sub> (**54**), upon activation by MAO became also the catalysts for the isospecific polymerization of propylene [45].



The stereospecificity of homogeneous metallocene catalysts for propylene polymerization is sensitive not only to steric effects but also to electronic effects. With increasing electron density at the metal center, the stereospecificity of the catalyst decreases [49]. The isospecificity of (C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO for the polymerization of propylene decreases with increasing polymerization temperature and decreasing [Al]/[Zr] ratio. The polypropylene polymerized by (C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO at  $T_p$  30°C and [Al]/[Zr] 3200 has [mmmm] 0.90 and  $m$  132.3°C. The PP obtained at  $T_p$  15°C and [Al]/[Zr] 2700 has [mmmm] 0.98 and  $m$  152.4°C [165]. The end group of isotactic PP polymerized by (C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(Ind)<sub>2</sub>TiX<sub>2</sub> (X = Cl, Me)/<sup>13</sup>C-enriched organoaluminium compounds were confirmed to be controlled by the enantiomorphic site control of the chiral catalyst metal center [166]. Investigation on the regio-irregularity of the polypropylenes obtained by *rac*-(C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> and *rac*-(C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>)(IndH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> resulted in the same conclusion [153]. Recently, an *ansa*-type yttrium without any co-catalyst afforded high isospecificity ( $M_n$  4200,  $M_w/M_n$  2.32, mmmm 97% for propylene) in the polymerization of 1-alkenes [114]. This single component catalyst is expected to be the most convenient system for the mechanistic study.



Scheme 5.

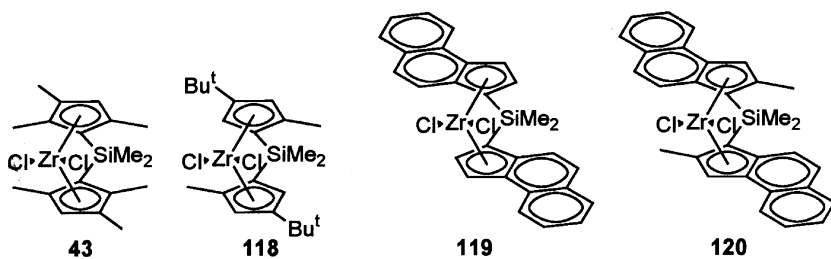


Table 8. Isotactic poly(propylene) polymerized by bridged- and unbridged-metallocene catalysts

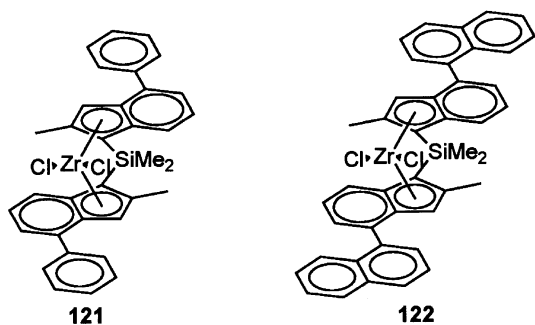
| Metal                        | Ligand  | Co-catalyst | $M_n/10^3$       | Tacticity (%)      | Ref.  |
|------------------------------|---|-------------|------------------|--------------------|-------|
| <i>Ansa-metallocenes</i>     |   |             |                  |                    |       |
| Zr                           | (C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(Ind) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>29</b> )  | MAO         | 6.3              | 63(mmmmm)          | [97]  |
|                              | <i>rac</i> -(C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(IndH <sub>4</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>29</b> )   | MAO         | 41–280           | 95(mm)             | [59]  |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(Ind) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>35</b> )  | MAO         | 20               | 96.2(mm)           | [53]  |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(C <sub>5</sub> HMe <sub>3</sub> -2,3,5)(C <sub>5</sub> HMe <sub>3</sub> -2',4',5') ( <b>43</b> )                 | MAO         | 67               | 97.7(mmmmm)        | [60]  |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> Me-3-Me-5)(C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>3</sub> Me-2'-Bu <sup>t</sup> -4') ( <b>118</b> ) | MAO         | 3.7              | 94(mmmmm)          | [61]  |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(Benz[e]indenylo) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>119</b> )   | MAO         | 28               | 93.9(mmmmm)        | [159] |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(2-Me-Benz[e]indenylo) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>120</b> )  | MAO         | 261              | 96.2(mmmmm)        | [159] |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(IndMe-2-Ph-4) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>121</b> )  | MAO         | 729 <sup>a</sup> | 95.2(mmmmm)        | [160] |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(IndMe-2-Naph-4) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>122</b> )  | MAO         | 920 <sup>a</sup> | 99.1(mmmmm)        | [160] |
| Hf                           | (C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(Ind) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>53</b> )  | MAO         | 329              | 95–99 <sup>b</sup> | [45]  |
|                              | (C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(IndH <sub>4</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>54</b> )   | MAO         | 68               | 95–99 <sup>b</sup> | [45]  |
|                              | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(C <sub>5</sub> HMe <sub>3</sub> -2,3,5)(C <sub>5</sub> HMe <sub>3</sub> -2',4',5') ( <b>123</b> )                | MAO         | 110              | 98.7(mmmmm)        | [60]  |
| Ti                           | (C <sub>2</sub> H <sub>4</sub> )(Ind) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>50</b> )  | MAO         | 97               | 54(mm)             | [65]  |
|                              | (56% <i>rac</i> 44% <i>meso</i> )   |             |                  |                    |       |
|                              | <i>rac</i> -MeCH(Ind)(C <sub>5</sub> Me <sub>4</sub> ) ( <b>51</b> )  | MAO         | 67               | 40(mmmmm)          | [66]  |
| Y                            | <i>rac</i> -Me <sub>2</sub> Si(C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> SiMe <sub>3</sub> -2-Bu <sup>t</sup> -4) <sub>2</sub> ( <b>124</b> )   | –           | 4.2              | 97.0(mmmmm)        | [114] |
| <i>nbridged metallocenes</i> |   |             |                  |                    |       |
| Zr                           | C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>4</sub> CHMePh ( <b>125</b> )   | MAO         | 10 <sup>c</sup>  | 60                 | [161] |
|                              | 1-methylfluorenyl ( <b>126</b> )  | MAO         | –                | 83                 | [162] |
|                              | 1-neoisomethylindenylo ( <b>127</b> )   | MAO         | 100 <sup>c</sup> | 77                 | [163] |
|                              | 3- $\alpha$ -cholestanylo ( <b>128</b> )  | MAO         | 470 <sup>c</sup> | 80                 | [164] |

<sup>a</sup>  $M_w$  value.<sup>b</sup> Mole percentage of units with the same relative configuration.<sup>c</sup>  $M_n$  value.

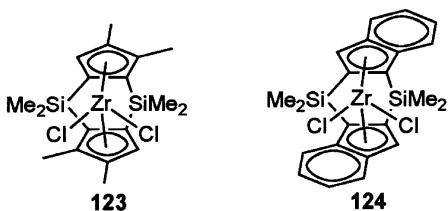
The  $C_2$ -symmetric silylene bridged metallocenes such as *rac*-Me<sub>2</sub>Si(Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**35**) [53], Me<sub>2</sub>Si(C<sub>5</sub>HMe<sub>3</sub>-2,3,5)(C<sub>5</sub>HMe<sub>3</sub>-2',4',5')ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**43**) [60], Me<sub>2</sub>Si(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>Bu<sup>t</sup>-3-Me-5)(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>3</sub>Me-2'-Bu<sup>t</sup>-4')ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**118**) [61], Me<sub>2</sub>Si(Benz[e]indenyl)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**119**) [63, 159, 160], and Me<sub>2</sub>Si(2-Me-Benz[e]indenyl)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**120**) [63, 159, 160] were used as the catalyst precursors for the isospecific polymerization of propylene. The catalyst **119**/MAO was shown to polymerize propylene with high activity producing rather low molecular weight polymer (at 4 atm,  $M_n = 2.8 \times 10^4$ ). On the other hand, **120**/MAO yielded a polymer of higher molecular weight (at 4 atm,  $M_n = 2.2 \times 10^5$ ). Thus, the 2-methyl substitution of the *ansa*-cyclopentadienyl derivatives effectively enhances the molecular weight of the resulting polymer [159].



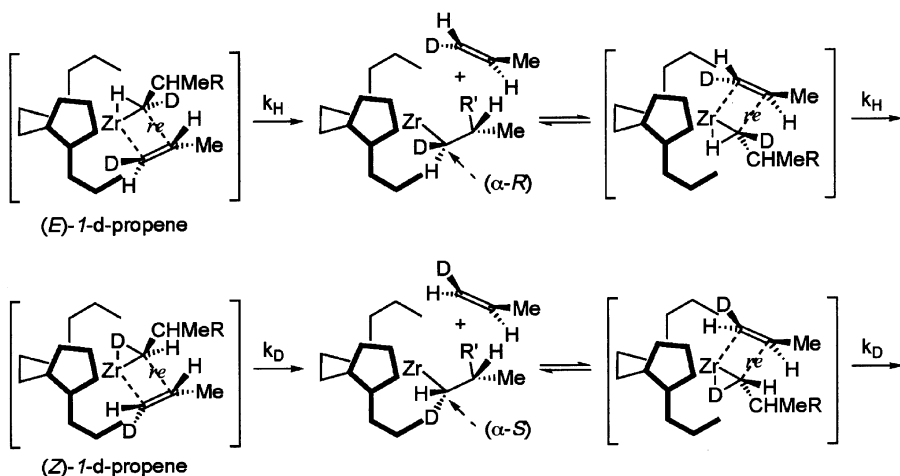
The use of dimethylbis(2-methyl-4-(1-aryl)indenyl)silane (**121** and **122**) as a ligand was found to give the poly(propylene) with high stereoregularity and high molecular weight [160]. The highest isospecificity among the metallocene catalysts was achieved by the system of **122**.



$C_2$ -symmetric doubly bridged zirconocene complexes such as (Me<sub>2</sub>Si)<sub>2</sub>(1,2-C<sub>5</sub>HMe<sub>2</sub>-3,4)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**123**) and (Me<sub>2</sub>Si)<sub>2</sub>(1,2-IndH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (**124**) were reported to have been converted into active catalysts for the polymerization of propylene, yielding polymers with relatively low isotacticities (mmmm = 38 and 80%, respectively) [167].



For the isotactic polymerization of propylene by using chiral *ansa*-zirconocene, the presence of  $\alpha$ -agostic interaction in the propagation process and the origin of occasional stereo-errors has been demonstrated by a deuterium labeling study [168]. In the polymerization of (*E*)- and (*Z*)-propene-1-*d* by *rac*-C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>4</sub>(indH<sub>4</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO, *rac*-Me<sub>2</sub>Si(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>Me<sub>2</sub>-2,4)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO, or *rac*-Me<sub>2</sub>Si(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>Me-2-Bu<sup>t</sup>-4)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO, the polymers derived from (*E*)-propene-1-*d* have mean degree of polymerization ( $P_N$ ) values that are 1.3 times higher than those obtained from (*Z*)-propene-1-*d*. The mean degree of polymerization can be given by the ratio of the rates of polymer growth ( $v_p$ ) and chain termination ( $v_T$ ),  $P_N = v_p/v_T$ . The *re*-facial insertion, (*E*)-propene-1-*d* will give  $\alpha$ -(*R*)-ZrCHDR and (*Z*)-propene-1-*d* will give  $\alpha$ -(*S*)-ZrCHDR (Scheme VI). As chain growth in this system is terminated mainly by  $\beta$ -H transfer, the configuration of  $\alpha$ -CHD would not affect  $v_T$ . On the other hand,  $v_p$  can depend on the  $\alpha$ -CHD configuration if one of the  $\alpha$ -hydrogen atoms is in contact with the Zr center. Thus,  $\alpha$ -H agostic interactions are operative also in the isospecific propylene polymerization with chiral *ansa*-metallocene catalysts. The D atom coupled <sup>13</sup>C NMR study of the resulting polypropylene indicated that the stereo-errors produced in these catalyst systems arise from chain-end isomerization rather than from errors in the enantiofacial orientation of the inserting olefin.

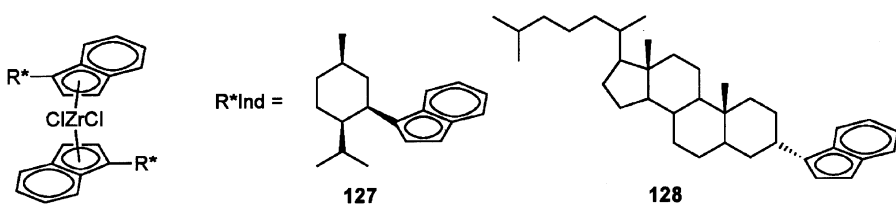


Scheme 6.

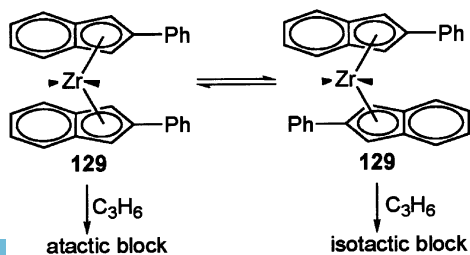
#### 4.1.2 Isospecific Polymerization by Unbridged Metallocenes

The isotacticities and activities achieved with nonbridged metallocene catalyst precursors were low. Partially isotactic polypropylene has been obtained by using a catalyst system of unbridged (non-ansa type) metallocenes at low temperatures [65]. A chiral zirconocene complex such as *rac*-ZrCl<sub>2</sub>(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CHMePh)<sub>2</sub> (**125**) is the catalyst component for the isospecific polymerization of propylene (mmmm 0.60, 35% of type 1 and 65% of type 2 in Scheme V) [161]. More bulky metallocene such as bis(1-methylfluorenyl)zirconium dichloride (**126**) together with MAO polymerized propylene to isotactic polypropylene in a temperature range between 40 and 70°C [162].

To examine the effect of bulky substituents on the Cp ring, hydroboration of (C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CH(CMe)<sub>2</sub>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> with 9-borabicyclo[3.3.1]nonane was utilized to give a mixture of *rac*- and *meso*-{C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CH(BC<sub>8</sub>H<sub>14</sub>)Pr<sup>i</sup>}<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>, which was separated by fractional crystallization. Polymerization of propylene using *meso*-{C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CH(BC<sub>8</sub>H<sub>14</sub>)Pr<sup>i</sup>}<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO at 50°C afforded isotactic polypropylene by chain end control ( $\sigma$  0.7), while the use of *rac*-{C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CH(BC<sub>8</sub>H<sub>14</sub>)Pr<sup>i</sup>}<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> as a catalyst precursor *it*-PP by enantiomorphic site control ( $\alpha$  0.95) [169]. Similar precursors, *rac*-(C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CHR<sup>1</sup>R<sup>2</sup>)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub> (R<sup>1</sup>, R<sup>2</sup> Me, Cy; Me, Ph; CH<sub>2</sub>B(C<sub>8</sub>H<sub>14</sub>), Cy; CH<sub>2</sub>B(C<sub>8</sub>H<sub>14</sub>), Ph), were also examined [170]. Polypropylene obtained with Zr complexes containing bulky chiral side chains, (R\*Ind)<sub>2</sub>ZrCl<sub>2</sub>/MAO, was also highly isotactic (mmmm 77% for R\*Ind neoisomenthylindenyl (**127**), mmmm 80% for R\*Ind 3- $\alpha$ -cholestanylindenyl (**128**)) [163, 164, 171].



By using conformationally variable Cp ligands such as C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>4</sub>Pr<sup>i</sup>, change in the dominant mode of propylene polymerization from isotactic to syndiotactic was accomplished by varying the reaction temperature [172].



Scheme 7.

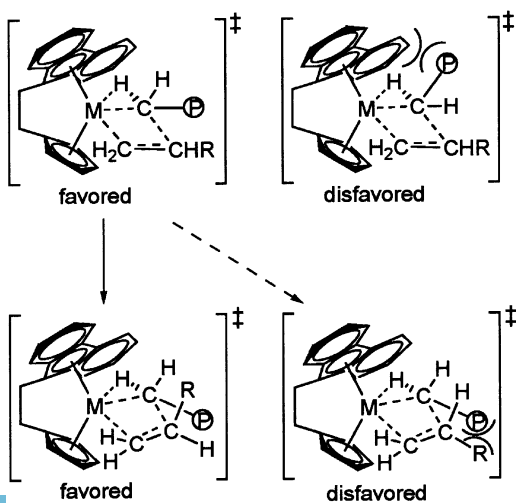
Waymouth and coworkers reported a unique system where the unbridged bis(2-phenylindenyl)zirconium-based catalysts (**129**) gave elastomeric, isotactic-atactic stereoblock polypropylene, controlled by rotation of the 2-phenylindenyl as shown in Scheme VII [173].

## 4.2 Syndiospecific Polymerization of $\alpha$ -Olefins

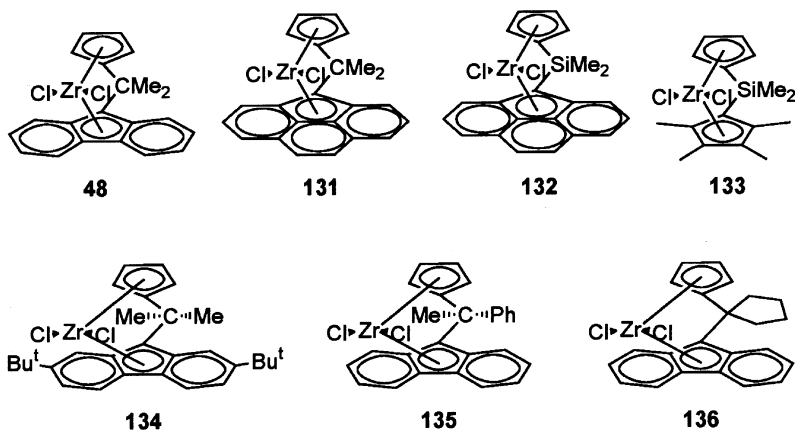
### 4.2.1 Ansa-type Metallocene Catalyst

Highly syndiotactic poly(alkene) has been obtained by Ewen and his co-workers using  $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})\text{MCl}_2$  (M = Zr (**48**), Hf (**130**)) [64]. The stereochemistry during propagation is the result of the site control in the coordination of alkene to a metal center. It has been proposed that the fluorenyl group causes direct prochiral face control of the coordination of alkene to active site by the direct steric interaction. Recently, however, indirect control by the fluorenyl group has been suggested by detailed conformational analysis using molecular mechanics [174, 175]. According to the study, the direct interactions of the  $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$  ligand with the growing chain determine its chiral conformation, which, in turn, discriminates between the two prochiral faces of the propylene monomer (Scheme VIII).

A great variety of modifications to the steric properties, based on Ewen's work, has been carried out in order to control the stereoselectivity; some representative examples are summarized in Table 9. Using modified  $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})\text{MCl}_2$  (M = Zr, Hf), high syndiospecificity has been achieved **134–136**, as reported by Fina Hoechst and Mitsui Toatsu Chemicals, inc.



Scheme 8.



#### 4.2.2 Non-bridged Metallocene Catalysts

In contrast to the case of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrX}_2/\text{MAO}$  giving atactic poly(alkene)s,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{MCl}_2/\text{MAO}$ ,  $\text{M} = \text{Zr}$  (**139**) and  $\text{Hf}$  (**140**), are the catalyst precursors of the syndiotactic polymerization of 1-butene and propylene [176]. Triad distribution indicated that this is chain-end controlled syndiospecific polymerization. The syndiospecificity is attributed to the increase of steric encumbrance around the metal center. Thus,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{HfX}_2$  is the most effective syndiospecific catalyst component in this system.

**Table 9.** Syndiospecific polymerization catalyzed by metallocene catalysts

| Metal | Ligand   | Alkene    | Tacticity (%) | Ref.  |
|-------|--|-----------|---------------|-------|
| Zr    | $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ ( <b>48</b> )                 | Propylene | 86 (rrrr)     | [64]  |
|       | $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Cpphen})$ ( <b>131</b> )             | Propylene | 72 (rrrr)     | [177] |
|       | $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{Cp})(\text{Cpphen})$ ( <b>132</b> )            | Propylene | 24 (rrrr)     | [177] |
|       | $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{Cp})(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)$ ( <b>133</b> )    | Propylene | 14 (rrrr)     | [177] |
|       | $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{FluBu}_2\text{-}2,7)$ ( <b>134</b> ) | Propylene | 92 (rrrr)     | [180] |
|       | $\text{MePhC}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ ( <b>135</b> )                       | Propylene | 97 (rrrr)     | [181] |
| Hf    | $(\text{C}_4\text{H}_8)\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ ( <b>136</b> )     | Propylene | 92 (rrrr)     | [182] |
|       | $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ ( <b>130</b> )                | Propylene | 74 (rrrr)     | [64]  |
| V     | $(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlClEt}_2$ ( <b>137</b> )                           | Propylene | 65 (rr)       | [178] |
| V     | $(\text{mmh})_3/\text{AlClEt}_2$ ( <b>138</b> )                            | Propylene | 63 (rr)       | [179] |
| Zr    | $\text{Me}_2\text{C}(\text{Cp})(\text{Flu})$ ( <b>48</b> )                 | 1-Butene  | 92 (rr)       | [176] |
|       | $\text{Cp}_2^*$ ( <b>139</b> )   | 1-Butene  | 68 (rr)       | [176] |
| Hf    | $\text{Cp}_2^*$ ( <b>140</b> )   | 1-Butene  | 77 (rr)       | [176] |

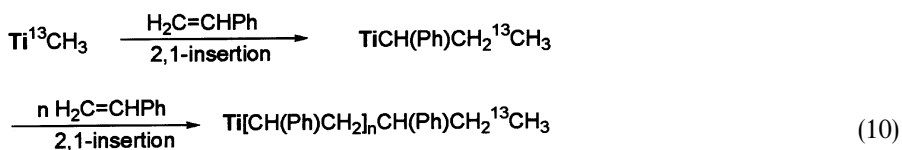
#### 4.2.3 Catalyst with or Without a Cp Ligand

Polymerization of propylene catalyzed by vanadium systems, e.g.,  $V(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlClEt}_2$  (**137**) or  $V(\text{mmh})_3/\text{AlClEt}_2$  (**138**), mmh 2-methyl-1,3-butanedionato, at 40°C slowly yielded a syndiotactic polymer, and this was achieved by chain-end control [178, 179].  $^{13}\text{C}$ NMR analysis of syndiotactic polypropylene obtained by using  $\text{VCl}_4\text{-Al}(^{13}\text{CH}_3)_2\text{Cl}$  or  $\text{VCl}_4\text{-Al}(^{13}\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_3)_3$  confirmed that the regiospecificity is a first-order Markov process [183].

Ishihara and co-workers discovered a new catalyst system, consisting of titanium halides or alkoxides with or without a cyclopentadienyl ligand in the presence of MAO, which provide highly active and stereoselective catalysts for highly syndiospecific polymerization of styrene [184, 185]. The catalytic activity depends on the substituents on the Cp ring, e.g. the tetramethylcyclopentadienyl ligand gives rise to the highest activity among  $\text{Ti}(\text{O}^i\text{Pt})_3\text{Cp}$  complexes [186]. MAO-free systems derived from  $\text{TiR}_3\text{Cp}^*$  with  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  were found to be catalysts for the syndiospecific polymerization of styrene as well as the polymerization of ethylene and propylene [187, 188]. Recently two mechanisms have been proposed for this syndiospecific polymerization: (1) a carbocationic mechanism and (2) a cationic metal-center mechanism.

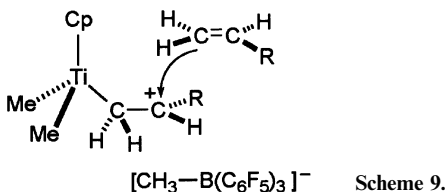
The first mechanism was proposed by Baird et al. [189]. The carbocationic species is schematically shown in Scheme IX. The attack of monomer, well known on the carbocationic center of a metal-ion-activated olefin, proceeded in the normal manner for carbocationic polymerization. This mechanism is based on the following two evidences. Alcoholysis of the polymerization system,  $\text{TiMe}_3\text{Cp}^*/\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$ , resulted in the presence of an alkoxy group at an end group, and vinyl ethers and *N*-vinylcarbazole were polymerized by using the same system.

The latter mechanism is supported by evidence obtained from the initiation and termination steps in the syndiospecific polymerization of styrene [190]. The  $^{13}\text{C}$ -enriched titanium catalyst afforded polystyrene with a  $\text{CH}(\text{Ph})\text{CH}_2\text{-}^{13}\text{CH}_3$  end group, which indicates that the initiation step proceeded by secondary insertion (2,1-insertion) of styrene into the  $\text{Ti-}^{13}\text{C}$  bond of the active species (Eq. 10). In contrast to this mechanism, termination by the addition of  $^{13}\text{C}$ -enriched methanol or tert-butyl alcohol afforded polymers without  $^{13}\text{CH}_3\text{O}$  or *tert*butoxy end groups.



**Ti = active site generated from  $\text{TiMe}_3\text{Cp}^*$  and  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$**

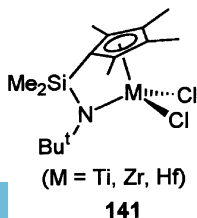
Several cationic titanium and zirconium monocyclopentadienyl derivatives,  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{MR}_2]^+$  (M = Ti, Zr), have been synthesized by the reaction of  $\text{MR}_3\text{Cp}^*$



and  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  [191, 192]. A benzyl derivative,  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_2][\text{B}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3]$ , is active for the polymerization of ethylene, and it oligomerizes propylene to give atactic oligomer [192]. A Cp-free zwitterionic zirconium complex,  $\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_3\{(\eta^6\text{-PhCH}_2)\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3\}$ , promotes polymerization of ethylene ( $25 \text{ kgPE}(\text{mol of Zr})^{-1}\text{h}^{-1}\text{atm}^{-1}$ ) and propylene ( $1.5 \text{ kgPP}(\text{mol of Zr})^{-1}\text{h}^{-1}\text{atm}^{-1}$ ) [193]. This complex stoichiometrically reacts with  $\alpha$ -olefins, such as propylene, 4-methyl-1-pentene, 1-vinylcyclohexane, and allylbenzene, to give the corresponding adducts,  $[\text{Zr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_3(\text{CH}_2\text{CHRCH}_2\text{Ph})][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})]$ , which polymerize propylene to give a mixture of atactic and isotactic polymers [194, 195].

Catalyst systems based on titanium compounds, e.g.,  $\text{CpTiCl}_3$ ,  $\text{CpTiCl}_2$ ,  $\text{Ti}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_4$ ,  $\text{Ti}(\text{OR})_4$ ,  $\text{Ti}(\text{acac})_3$ , or  $\text{TiPh}_2$ , activated with MAO or  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$ , were reported to give syndiotactic polystyrene [188, 196, 197]. During the catalysis, the cationic  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{TiR}_2]^+$  species are spontaneously reduced to Ti(III) species, which are now believed to be the true catalytic species for the syndio-specific polymerization of styrene [198, 199]. Some other organometallic systems, e.g.  $\{N,N'\text{-Bis}(\text{trimethylsilyl})\text{benzamidato}\}$ titanium complexes/MAO such as  $\{\text{PhC}(\text{NSiMe}_3)_2\}\text{Ti}(\text{OPr}^i)_3$ ,  $[\{\text{PhC}(\text{NSiMe}_3)_2\}\text{TiCl}_3]_2$ ,  $\{\text{PhC}(\text{NSiMe}_3)_2\}\text{TiCl}_3\text{L}$  (L = thf,  $\text{PMe}_3$ ) are also catalysts for the syndiospecific polymerization of styrene (93–95 wt% of *s*-PS, insoluble in refluxing 2-butanone) [200]. An example of a  $\{N,N'\text{-dimethyl-}p\text{-toluamidato}\}$  derivative,  $\{\text{MeC}_6\text{H}_4\text{C}(\text{NMe})_2\}\text{TiCl}_3]_2/\text{MAO}$ , has less stereospecificity [201].

The Dow corporation has recently developed constrained geometry addition polymerization catalysts (CGCT), typically  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)(\text{NBu}^t)\text{MCl}_2$  (M = Ti, Zr, Hf) (**141**) activated with MAO. The homo-polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins by CGCT afford atactic or somewhat syndiotactic (polypropylene: *rr* = 69%) polymers. The metal center of the catalyst opens the coordination sphere and enables the co-polymerization of ethylene to take place, not only with common monomers such as propylene, butene, hexene, and octene, but also with sterically hindered  $\alpha$ -olefins such as styrene and 4-vinylcyclohexene [202].





### 4.3 Theoretical Studies on the Stereoselectivity of Polymerization

Recently, theoretical calculations were done on the olefin polymerization. In particular, an ab-initio molecular orbital calculation was used to optimize the geometry for the ground, transition and product states of model systems, based on gas-phase reactions:



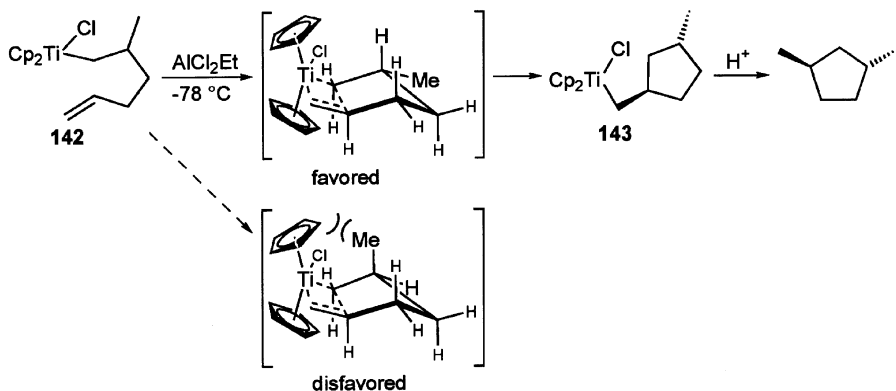
where M = Ti and Zr [12, 203]. The model systems calculated by an energy-minimizing ab-initio method include bridging bis(cyclopentadienyl) moieties [13]. The most important optimized intermediate is the cationic ethylene  $\pi$ -complex, where the bond distances between Zr and the ethylene carbon atoms are 2.90 and 2.97 Å. These bond distances are longer than those (2.373(8) and 2.344(8) Å) of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{Zr}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_4)(\text{PMe}_3)$  [27]. Thus, the ethylene coordination in the  $d^0$  metallocene alkyl moiety is shown to be definitely weaker than that of Zr(II) complex.

The transition state was shown to have a four-centered nonplanar structure and the product showed a strong  $\beta$ -agostic interaction.<sup>59</sup> Molecular-mechanics (MM) calculations based on the structure of the transition state indicated that the regioselectivity is in good agreement with the steric energy of the transition state rather than the stability of the  $\pi$ -complex. The MM study also indicated that the substituents on the Cp rings determine the conformation of the polymer chain end, and the fixed polymer chain end conformation in turn determines the stereochemistry of olefin insertion at the transition state.<sup>59</sup>

The course of stereospecific olefin polymerization was studied by using the molecular mechanics programs, MM-2 and Biograph, based on the optimized geometries of the ethylene complex and the transition state [13, 203]. Interestingly, the steric interaction at the transition state mainly controls the stereochemistry in polymerization, which proceeds specifically isotactic or syndiotactic depending on the kind of catalyst.

## 5 Polymerization of Non-Conjugated Dienes by Organometallic Complexes

Recently, a metallocene/MAO system has been used for the polymerization of non-conjugated dienes [204, 205]. The cyclopolymerization of 1,5-hexadiene has been catalyzed by Ziegler-Natta catalyst systems, but with low activity and incomplete cyclization in the formation 5-membered rings [206]. The cyclopolymerization of 1,5-hexadiene in the presence of  $\text{ZrMe}_2\text{Cp}_2/\text{MAO}$  afforded a polymer ( $M_w = 2.7 \times 10^7$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 2.2$ ) whose NMR indicated that almost complete cyclization had taken place. One of the olefin units of 1,5-hexadiene is initially inserted into an M–C bond and then cyclization proceeds by further

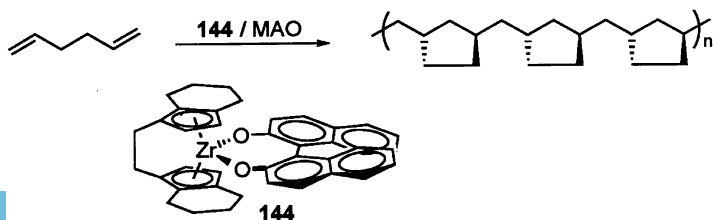


Scheme 10.

insertion of the remaining unit. The stereochemistry of the polymer containing 1,3-disubstituted cyclopentane units was made *trans*-selective via a pseudo-chair transition state. The selectivity was improved by decreasing the reaction temperature.

In some of the model reactions, the same stereochemistry was confirmed. Thus, intramolecular olefin insertion occurred with *exo*-regioselectivity. For example, treatment of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{Ti}(\text{Cl})(\text{CH}_2\text{CHMeCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{CH}=\text{CH}_2)$  (**142**) with  $\text{EtAlCl}_2$  produced **143**, which resulted in the formation of a 92:8 ratio of *trans*:*cis* 1,3-dimethylcyclopentane upon protonolysis (Scheme X) [207]. Without the Cp ligand, the polymerization of 1,5-hexadiene by using  $\text{TiCl}_3/\text{EtAlCl}_2$  as the catalyst system yielded a polymer with a 46:54 ratio of *trans*:*cis* disubstituted cyclopentane rings [208]. More sterically hindered  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrCl}_2$  was used as a catalyst component to give a high-*cis* polymer<sup>80</sup>. The origin of this stereoselectivity is not clear, but twist-boat conformation at the transition state could be the explanation.

When a chiral *ansa*-type zirconocene/MAO system was used as the catalyst precursor for polymerization of 1,5-hexadiene, a main-chain optically active polymer (68% *trans* rings) was obtained<sup>84–86</sup>. The enantioselectivity for this cyclopolymerization can be explained by the fact that the same prochiral face of the olefins was selected by the chiral zirconium center (Eq. 12) [209–211]. Asymmetric hydrogenation, as well as C–C bond formation catalyzed by chiral *ansa*-metallocene **144**, has recently been developed to achieve high enantioselectivity<sup>88–90</sup>. This parallels to the high stereoselectivity in the polymerization.



(12)

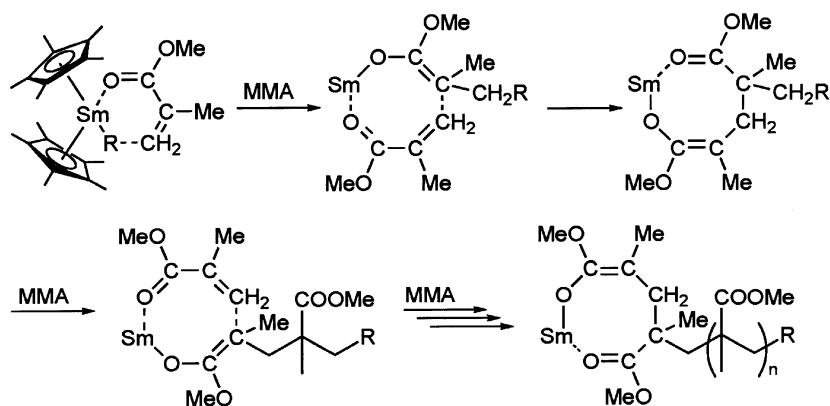
## 6 Polymerization of Functionalized Olefins

Ziegler-Natta catalyst systems containing an excess of alkylaluminum have been found to be unstable catalysts for the polymerization of the polar monomers and functionalized olefins. For example, a  $\text{TiCl}_4\text{-Et}_3\text{Al}$  catalyst system does not polymerize MMA above  $0^\circ\text{C}$  but polymerizes it only at low temperatures, such as  $-78^\circ\text{C}$ , to give syndiotactic PMMA [212, 213]. In contrast, cationic Group 4 and neutral Group 3 metallocene complexes can be applied for this purpose above  $0^\circ\text{C}$ . A catalyst derived from  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{ZrMe}_2$  and  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  was reported to be active for the polymerization of functionalized  $\alpha$ -olefins containing silyl-protected alcohols or tertiary amines [214].

The highly syndiospecific-living polymerization of methyl methacrylate has been initiated by the neutral bis(pentamethylcyclopentadienyl)lanthanide-alkyl or -hydride complexes [215, 216]. The plausible reaction mechanism is shown in Scheme XI.

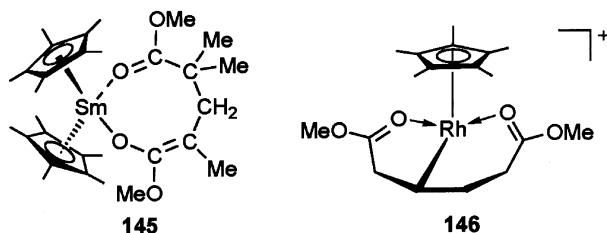
At the first step, the insertion of MMA to the lanthanide-alkyl bond gave the enolate complex. The Michael addition of MMA to the enolate complex via the 8-membered transition state results in stereoselective C-C bond formation, giving a new chelating enolate complex with two MMA units; one of them is enolate and the other is coordinated to Sm via its carbonyl group. The successive insertion of MMA afforded a syndiotactic polymer. The activity of the polymerization increased with an increase in the ionic radius of the metal (Sm < Y < Yb < Lu). Furthermore, these complexes become precursors for the block co-polymerization of ethylene with polar monomers such as MMA and lactones [215, 217].

The crystal structure of the 1:2 adduct **145** obtained by the reaction of  $[\text{Cp}_2^*\text{SmH}]_2$  with MMA was determined by X-ray analysis. One of the two monomer units is in the *O*-enolate form and the other unit coordinates to the samarium atom by the carbonyl group. A comparison between **145** and the



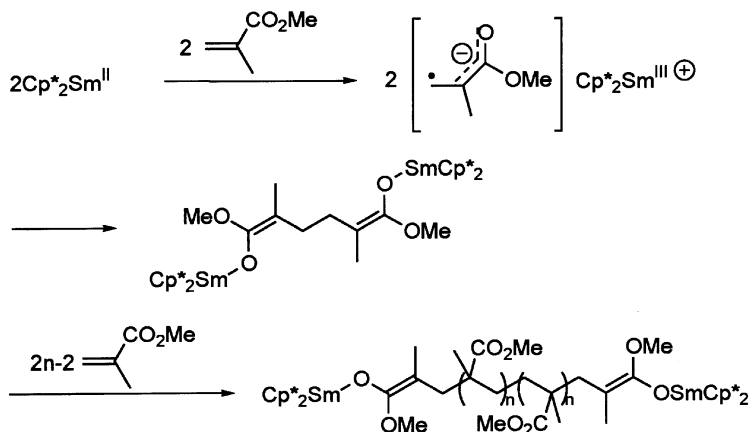
Scheme 11.

analogous rhodium complex **146** is worth considering since they are intermediates in the catalytic tail-to-tail dimerization of MA [218, 219]. The oxophilic properties of the early transition metals leads to the enolate complex, whereas the rhodium complex catalyzes the insertion of MA into an Rh-alkyl complex and  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination regenerates active hydride species and the dimer of MA [220].



Divalent samarium and ytterbium complexes,  $\text{Cp}_2^*\text{Ln}(\text{thf})_2$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Sm}, \text{Yb}$ ), also initiate the syndiospecific living polymerization of MMA although the initiator efficiencies are rather low [216]. Novak et al. proposed an initiation mechanism that includes the generation of the MMA radical anion, followed by coupling to form a bifunctional initiator for this catalyst system (Scheme XII) [221]. A bimetallic diyne complex,  $\text{C}_2^*\text{Sm}(\text{PhC}_4\text{Ph})\text{C}_2^*\text{Sm}$ , was found to be an efficient bisinitiator. A sterically less-demanding ytterbocene derivative,  $(\text{MeC}_5\text{H}_4)_2\text{Yb}(\text{dme})$ , was found to have higher activities than the  $\text{Cp}^*$  derivatives [222].

Similar polymerization of MMA using enolate-zirconocene catalysts has also been found [223]. The mechanism of this catalytic reaction is related to the process described in Scheme XI because the cationic enolate complex is isolobal to that of the corresponding lanthanide complex. Recently, similar cationic



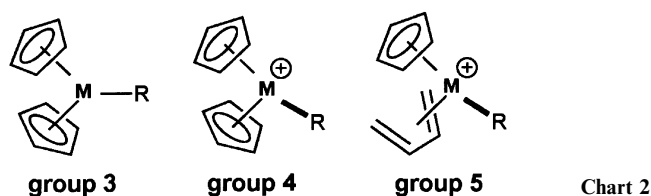
Scheme 12.

zirconocene species formed by the combination of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrX}_2$  with  $[\text{Ph}_3\text{C}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$  and diethylzinc was found to catalyze the living polymerization of MMA. In addition, a racemic *ansa*-type zirconocene precursor in the same condition has been reported to catalyze the *isotactic* polymerization of MMA [224, 225]. Chiral *ansa*-type complexes of rare earth elements bearing a chiral auxiliary ligands can catalyze the isospecific polymerization of MMA [226]. Some non-metallocene complexes of lanthanide metals such as  $\text{SmI}_2$  [227] and  $\text{Ln}(\text{SAr})_n\text{L}_x$  ( $\text{Ln}$  Sm, Eu, Yb;  $\text{SAr}$  SPh,  $\text{SC}_6\text{H}_3\text{Pr}_3^{1-2,4,6}$ ;  $\text{L}$  HMPA, THF, pyridine) [228] were found to catalyze the polymerization of MMA. Both iodide and thiolate ligands are less sterically demanding and less electron-donating than  $\text{Cp}^*$ , the active species seems to be somewhat unstable. We found that the catalyst system  $\text{Yb}(\text{SPh})_3(\text{hmpa})_3/3\text{AlMe}(\text{dbmp})_2$  ( $\text{dbmp}$  2,6-di-*tert*-butyl-4-methylphenoxide) affords highly syndiotactic PMMA with a relatively narrow molecular weight distribution (in THF at  $78^\circ\text{C}$ ,  $M_n$   $1.01 \times 10^5$ ,  $M_w/M_n$  1.17,  $rr$  87%) [228].

## 7 Recent Trends in Polymerization Catalyzed by Organometallic Complexes of Transition Metals Other than Those of Group 4

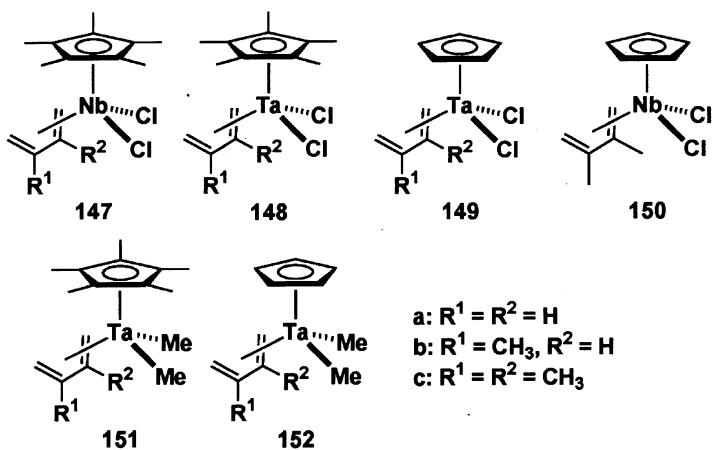
### 7.1 Polymerization by Organometallic Complexes of Group 5 Metals

Metallocene complexes,  $\text{NbCl}_3\text{Cp}_2$ ,  $\text{NbCl}_2\text{Cp}_2$ , and half metallocene complexes,  $\text{NbCl}_4\text{Cp}$ , showed no catalyst activity even in the presence of MAO [229]. Neutral metallocene alkyl complexes of Group 3 and cationic metallocene alkyl complexes of Group 4 metals are 14 electron species and considered to be in isolobal and isoelectronic relationships (Chart 2). From this viewpoint, we suggested that 14-electron cationic species of Group 5 metals, i.e.  $[\text{MRCp}(\eta^3\text{-diene})]^+$  ( $\text{M}$  Nb and Ta), should be active catalysts for the polymerization of alkenes. Thus, the combination of  $\text{MX}_2\text{Cp}(\eta^4\text{-1,3-diene})$  and MAO was examined to find the living polymerization of ethylene [230–233].

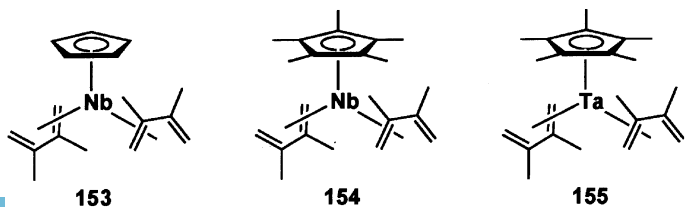


Similar isolobal and isoelectronic relationships [234, 235] have recently been observed for various organometallic complexes of both Group 5 metals

[236–239] and Group 6 metals [240–242]. Actually we prepared ethylene [243], benzyne [244], and benzylidene complexes [245] bearing a TaCp\* ( $\eta^4$ -buta-1,3-diene) fragment; they may be compared with the metallocene complexes of Group 4 metals. Thus, we found that the system of  $\text{MX}_2(\eta^5\text{-C}_5\text{R}_5)(\eta^4\text{-diene})$  (M = Nb and Ta; R = H and CH<sub>3</sub>; X = Cl and CH<sub>3</sub>) in the presence of an excess of MAO is a catalyst precursor for the living polymerization of ethylene; and the narrowest polydispersity ( $M_w/M_n$  as low as 1.05) for polyethylene was accomplished at lower temperature (Table 10) [246–248]. The catalytic activity delicately depends on the steric and combined electronic effects of the cyclopentadienyl and diene ligands. Thus, the optimum temperature for the polymerization reaction varies, depending on the nature of those ligands.



We found that bis(diene) complexes of niobium and tantalum,  $\text{MCp}^*(\eta^4\text{-diene})_2$ , were also active catalyst precursors for the polymerization of ethylene when MAO was used as cocatalyst (Table 11) [247, 248]. This might be attributed to the stability of the diene aluminum species [249] generated by the ligand exchange reaction, and the generated cationic species should be the same as that derived from  $\text{MX}_2\text{Cp}(\eta^4\text{-diene})$  and MAO. The second diene ligand is coordinated to the metal that has a higher  $\sigma$ -bond character like that of the zirconocene diene complexes. Similarly, a combination of diene complexes of zirconocene with MAO [250] or  $\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  [251] was found to be the catalyst precursor for the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins. A mono(cyclopentadienyl) mono(diene)hafnium complex,  $\text{Cp}^*\text{Hf}(\text{2,3-dimethylbutadiene})\text{Me}$  [252], was reported to catalyze isospecific polymerization of 2-vinylpyridine [253].



**Table 10.** Polymerization of ethylene catalyzed by niobium-diene and tantalum-diene complexes/MAO<sup>a</sup>

| Complex | Time (h) | Temperature (°C) | Activity <sup>b</sup> (kg/h [M]mol) | $M_n/10^4$ <sup>c</sup> | $M_w/M_n$ <sup>c</sup> |
|---------|----------|------------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| 147a    | 1        | 20               | 38.70                               | 8.29                    | 1.30                   |
| 147a    | 1        | 20               | 10.65                               | 2.36                    | 1.05                   |
| 147b    | 1        | 20               | 19.22                               | 3.95                    | 1.16                   |
| 147b    | 1        | 20               | 1.02                                | 0.51                    | 1.09                   |
| 147c    | 1        | 20               | 35.23                               | 10.54                   | 1.18                   |
| 147c    | 1        | 20               | 12.71                               | 4.10                    | 1.05                   |
| 148a    | 6        | 20               | 5.93                                | 2.03                    | 2.04                   |
| 148a    | 6        | 20               | 1.51                                | 2.03                    | 1.16                   |
| 148b    | 6        | 20               | 1.90                                | 1.15                    | 1.63                   |
| 149a    | 6        | 20               | 0.52                                | –                       | –                      |
| 149a    | 6        | 20               | 7.07                                | 8.18                    | 1.40                   |
| 149b    | 6        | 20               | 0.88                                | –                       | –                      |
| 149c    | 6        | 20               | 3.77                                | –                       | –                      |
| 150     | 3        | 20               | 6.89                                | –                       | –                      |
| 151a    | 6        | 20               | 4.48                                | 2.04                    | 2.06                   |
| 151a    | 6        | 20               | 1.18                                | 2.55                    | 1.08                   |
| 151b    | 6        | 20               | 1.61                                | 1.23                    | 1.65                   |
| 151c    | 6        | 20               | 5.69                                | 1.20                    | 2.09                   |
| 152a    | 6        | 20               | 0.37                                | –                       | –                      |
| 152a    | 6        | 20               | 5.47                                | 8.74                    | 1.51                   |

<sup>a</sup> Polymerization reactions were carried out in toluene ( $1.44 \times 10^{-3}$  M of [M]) in the presence of MAO (500 equiv).

<sup>b</sup> Polymer was methanol-insoluble parts.

<sup>c</sup> GPC analysis.

**Table 11.** Polymerization of ethylene catalyzed by bis-diene complexes/MAO<sup>a</sup>

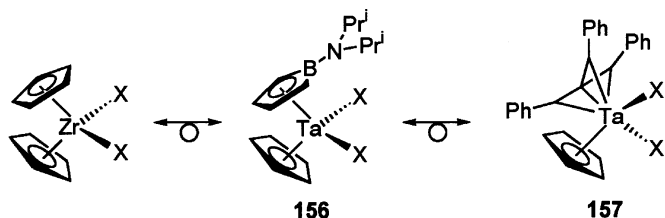
| Complex | Time (h) | Temperature (°C) | Activity <sup>b</sup> (kg/h [M]mol) | $M_n/10^4$ <sup>c</sup> | $M_w/M_n$ <sup>c</sup> |
|---------|----------|------------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| 153     | 1        | 20               | 9.03                                | 16.86                   | 2.24                   |
| 153     | 1        | 0                | 17.03                               | 31.80                   | 2.94                   |
| 153     | 1        | 20               | 7.55                                | 27.14                   | 4.13                   |
| 154     | 1        | 20               | 24.65                               | 3.07                    | 1.18                   |
| 154     | 1        | 0                | 21.95                               | 2.82                    | 1.13                   |
| 154     | 1        | 20               | 12.48                               | 1.42                    | 1.06                   |
| 155     | 6        | 20               | 3.39                                | 0.40                    | 2.00                   |
| 155     | 6        | 0                | 1.44                                | 0.96                    | 1.30                   |
| 155     | 6        | 20               | 0.26                                | 0.54                    | 1.09                   |

<sup>a</sup> Polymerization reactions were carried out in toluene ( $1.44 \times 10^{-3}$  M of [metal]) in the presence of MAO (500 equiv).

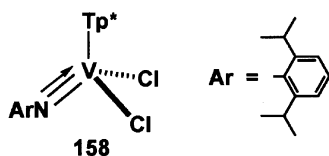
<sup>b</sup> Polymer was methanol-insoluble parts.

<sup>c</sup> GPC analysis.

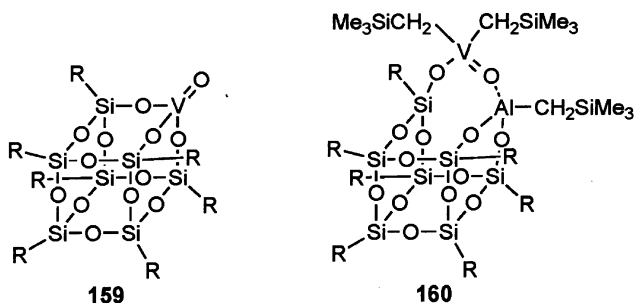
Two other isoelectronic tantalum complexes, **156** [254] and **157** [255], have recently been reported to show a similar catalytic activity for the polymerization of ethylene (2 kg PE/h[Ta]mol and 12 kg PE/h[Ta]mol, respectively) when they were activated with MAO.



The isoelectronic relationship has been applied to the vanadium complex with hydrotris(pyrazolyl)borato ligand, which possesses the same electronic features as the Cp ligand; thus the combination of complex  $\text{VCl}_2(\text{NAr})\text{Tp}^*$  (**158**) (Ar = 2,6-diisopropylphenyl,  $\text{Tp}^*$  = hydrotris(3,5-dimethylpyrazolyl)borate) with MAO was reported to catalyze the polymerization of ethylene (at atmospheric pressure) and propylene (at 7 bar), giving polyethylene (14 kg/mol h,  $M_w$  47000,  $M_w/M_n$  3.0) and polypropylene (1 kg/mol h,  $M_w$  3800,  $M_w/M_n$  2.0), respectively [256].



The vanadium complex **159**, bearing oligometallasilsesquioxanes, is an interesting model complex for surface species on silica [257]. Polymerization of ethylene with **159**/MAO affords polyethylene with an  $M_n$  value of 2100 and an  $M_w$  value of 47900. An aluminum-vanadium adduct **160** polymerized ethylene without any cocatalysts, affording similar catalytic activity with the **159**/MAO system [258].



## 7.2 Polymerization by Organometallic Compounds of Group 6 Metals

Although chromium-based ethylene polymerization catalysts have already been developed commercially, these processes are based on a heterogeneous catalyst



system [259, 260]. Recently, it was found that soluble organochromium complexes are able to catalyze ethylene polymerization [261–263]. A cationic chromium(III) complex  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{CrMe}(\text{THF})_2]^+(\text{BPh}_4)^-$  (**161**) in dichloromethane catalyzed ethylene polymerization, although **161** is not active for propylene polymerization. A kinetic study showed that the pseudo-five-coordinated 13e  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{CrMe}(\text{THF})]^+$  (**162**) is the active species. Thus, the addition of THF to **161** inhibited the polymerization, suggesting that the coordination of ethylene to the alkylchromium complex is the key intermediate to successive ethylene insertions into the Cr–C bond. The oxidation state of chromium seems to be important for achieving high activity. Two alkylchromium compounds,  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{Cr}(\text{dmpe})\text{Me}]^+$  (**163**) and  $\text{Cp}^*\text{Cr}(\text{dmpe})\text{Me}$  (**164**), are isostructural but differ in their formal oxidation state, Cr(III) for **163** vs. Cr(II) for **164**. Complex **163** is a catalyst precursor for ethylene polymerization, whereas the reaction of **164** with ethylene afforded mainly propylene, which was formed by the insertion of ethylene into the Cr(II)–Me bond followed by  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination. Such a large difference between **163** and **164** may be attributed to the fact that olefins can coordinate strongly to a more electron-rich Cr(II)  $d^4$  center via enhanced  $\pi$ -back bonding, as described in the previous section for organometallic tantalum complexes.

Some benzyl complexes of chromium –  $\text{Cp}^*\text{Cr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_2(\text{thf})$ ,  $[\text{Cp}^*\text{Cr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})(\text{thf})_2][\text{BPh}_4]$  and  $\text{Li}[\text{Cp}^*\text{Cr}(\text{CH}_2\text{Ph})_3]$  – catalyzed the polymerization of ethylene  $[0.11\text{--}0.28 \text{ kgPE}(\text{mol of Cr})^{-1}\text{h}^{-1}\text{atm}^{-1}]$  [264]. Neutral alkylchromium(III) complexes such as  $\text{Cr}(\text{CH}_2\text{SiMe}_3)_2\text{Cp}^*$  were also found to catalyze the rapid polymerization of ethylene at  $40^\circ\text{C}$ . Thus, both neutral and cationic coordinatively unsaturated alkyl complexes of chromium(III) are the active catalyst for ethylene polymerization. Quite recently, the well-defined 16-e complexes of chromium  $(\text{RN})_2\text{CrX}_2$  (R =  $\text{Bu}^t$ , Ph; X =  $\text{CH}_2\text{Ph}$ , Cl), which are the isoelectronic analogues of  $\text{Cp}_2\text{TiX}_2$ , activated by  $[\text{Ph}_3\text{C}][\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4]$ , have been reported to catalyze the polymerization of ethylene [265].

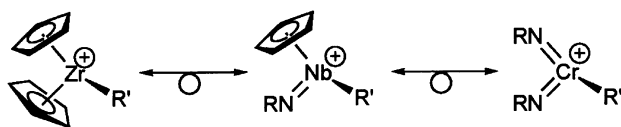
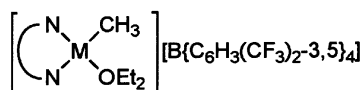


Chart 3.

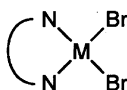
In the case of other Group 6 metals, the polymerization of olefins has attracted little attention. Some molybdenum(VI) and tungsten(VI) complexes containing bulky imido- and alkoxo-ligands have been mainly used for metathesis reactions and the ring-opening metathesis polymerization (ROMP) of norbornene or related olefins [266–268]. Tris(butadiene) complexes of molybdenum(0) and tungsten(0) are air-stable and sublimable above  $100^\circ\text{C}$  [269, 270]. At elevated temperature, they showed catalytic activity for the polymerization of ethylene [271].

### 7.3 Polymerization Assisted by Organometallic Compounds of Other Transition Metals

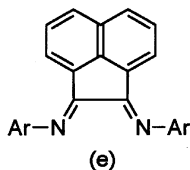
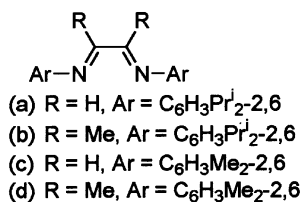
Organometallic compounds of Group 8–10 metals have been considered as the catalysts for olefin dimerization and oligomerization [272]. These metals prefer  $\beta$ -hydrogen elimination followed by reductive elimination. One exception reported so far is the SHOP system, in which nickel catalysts produce higher olefins [273]. Brookhart et al. have reported a living polymerization of ethylene that is accomplished by a combination of a cobalt olefin complex,  $(C_5Me_5)Co\{P(MeO)_3\}(H_2C=CHAr)$  (Ar = Ph, *p*-C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>Cl, *p*-C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>OAc, *p*-C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CF<sub>3</sub>, C<sub>6</sub>F<sub>5</sub>), with  $HB\{C_6H_3(CF_3)_{2-3,5}\}_4$  [274]. In this catalyst system, a mechanism involving  $\beta$ -agostic interaction as a resting state of propagation has been proposed, though the activities were rather low (Ar = C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>CF<sub>3</sub>, activity 3.8 kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>),  $M_n = 1.48 \times 10^4$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.11$  [274]. Another catalyst system based on nickel or palladium with 1,4-diazadiene derivatives (**165**, **166**) was found to polymerize  $\alpha$ -olefins, when the unique combination of a chelating nitrogen ligand and coordinatively weak anion  $[B(C_6H_3-3,5-(CF_3)_2)_4]^-$  was carefully selected. Thus, polymerization of ethylene by palladium catalysts **165** afforded extremely branched polyethylene (100 branches per 1000 carbon atoms) with high molecular weight. A nickel catalyst system exhibited extremely high activity for the polymerization of ethylene (activity of **166a**: 3600 kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>) [275]. When complex **167a** was activated by MAO, higher activity (activity of **167a**/MAO: 11000 kg(mol of catalyst)<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> atm<sup>-1</sup>) was observed [275].



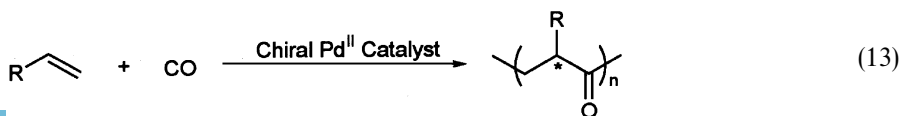
**165** M = Ni  
**166** M = Pd



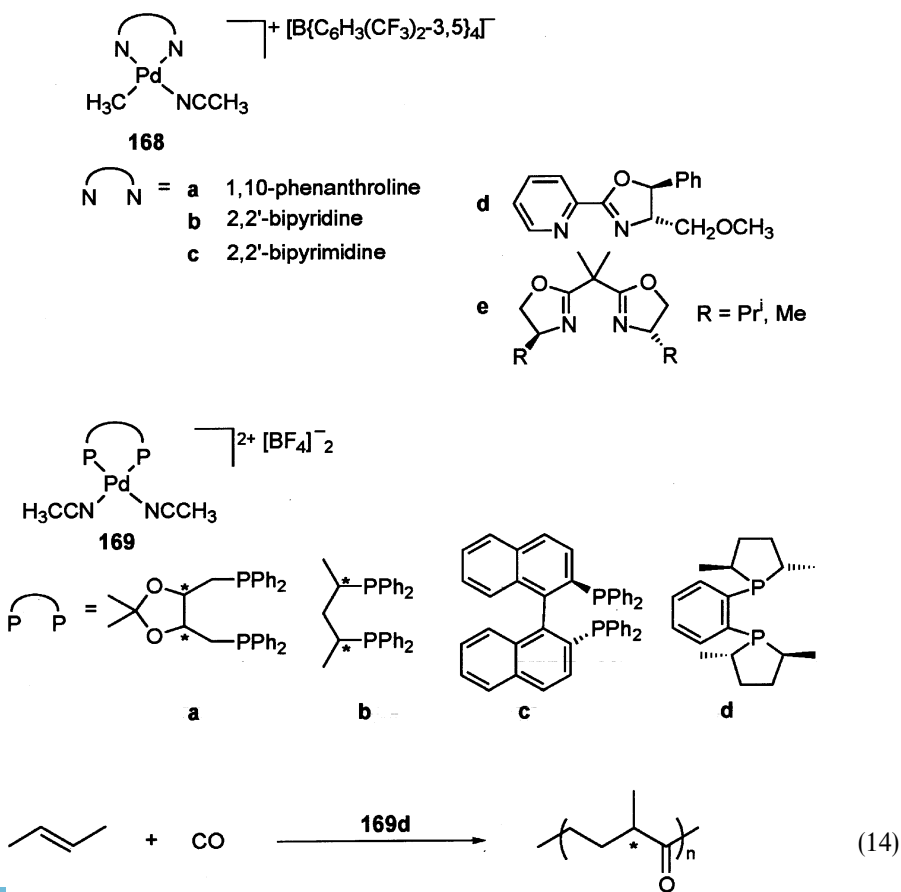
**167** M = Ni



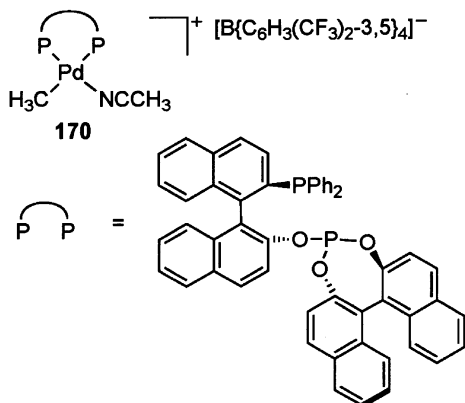
The copolymerization of carbon monoxide and  $\alpha$ -olefins is one of the most challenging problems in polymer synthesis. Sen and his coworkers discovered that some cationic palladium compounds catalyze this alternative copolymerization, giving polyketones (Eq. 13).



This polymer is now attracting much attention because of its potential as a photodegradable polymer [276, 277]. A mechanism involving the carbonylation of cationic alkylpalladium on the basis of the isolated acyl complex has been proposed [278]. It is noteworthy that the cationic alkyl palladium complex with chelating nitrogen ligands exhibited excellent activity. Thus, some research groups of Sen [279–281], Brookhart [282], and Consiglio [283] have used chiral chelating phosphine or oxazoline ligands to introduce main-chain chirality. An optically active alternating copolymer of  $\alpha$ -olefin and carbon monoxide was obtained by using chiral palladium(II) complexes as catalysts **168–170**. In the catalyst system of **168**, the catalysts bearing planar achiral ligands, **168a**, **168b**, and **168c**, gave syndiotactic poly(styrene-*alt*-CO) by chain-end control [282]. The use of  $C_2$ -symmetric chiral ligands in **168e** provides enantiomorphic site control to produce highly isotactic, optically active copolymers [282]. The novel alternating isomerization/co-oligomerization of 2-butene with carbon monoxide catalyzed by **169d** was found to give optically active, isotactic poly(1,5-ketone) (Eq. 14) [281].



A unique chiral phosphine-phosphate ligand has been applied for hydroformylation reaction of alkenes. In the case of **170** this ligand can be applied for obtaining poly(propylene-*alt*-Co) with the highest molar optical rotation and with the highest molecular weight ( $[\Phi]_D^{24} = 40^\circ$ ,  $M_w = 104400$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.6$ ) [284].



## 8 Concluding Remarks

The features of homogeneous metallocene/MAO catalysts distinguishable from the classical heterogeneous Ziegler-Natta catalysts can be summarized as follows:

- 1) They are single-site catalysts.
- 2) Narrow molecular weight distribution of the resulting polymer can be obtained.
- 3) Highly random co-polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins is possible.
- 4) They are active not only to small olefins but also to higher or bulky olefins.
- 5) The stereoregularity and the molecular weight distribution of the resulting polymer can be controlled by the design of the catalyst precursor.
- 6) Some polar vinyl monomers such as MMA can be polymerized.

The initial Group 4 metallocene/MAO catalyst systems has some disadvantages:

- 7) MAO co-catalyst is expensive but required in large excess amount.
- 8) The molecular weights of the resulting polymers tend to be lower.
- 9) It is difficult to obtain the polymer as particles with uniform size.

At present, the difficulties described in 7–9 can be solved. The use of MAO can be avoided by the use of non-MAO catalysts such as cationic Group 4 metallocenes or neutral Group 3 metallocenes. It has been found that the molecular weight of the resulting polymer can be increased by introducing substituents at the 2,5-position in the cyclopentadienyl group of the

*ansa*-metallocenes. When the metallocene catalysts are heterogenized by being supported on appropriate materials, they can be used in slag or gas-phase polymerization systems to yield polymers in the form of uniform particles with stereoregularity corresponding to that of homogeneous systems [285–287].

The molecular design of stereospecific homogeneous catalysts for polymerization and oligomerization has now reached a practical stage, which is the result of the rapid developments in early transition metal organometallic chemistry in this decade. In fact, Exxon and Dow are already producing polyethylene commercially with the help of metallocene catalysts. Compared to the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins, the polymerization of polar vinyl, alkynyl and cyclic monomers seems to be less developed.

Non-metallocene complexes, such as aryloxy **31** and amide **138**, have also been utilized as catalyst systems for the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins. Moreover, the homogeneous olefin polymerization catalysts have been extended to metals other than those in Group 4, as described in Sect. 7. Complexes such as mono(cyclopentadienyl)mono(diene) are in isoelectronic relationship with Group 4 metallocenes and they have been found to initiate the living polymerization of ethylene. These studies will bring further progress to the chemistry of homogeneous polymerization catalysts.

The worldwide research activities in this field of organometallic catalysts for polymerization have been maintained at the highest level for years. Many more examples will appear in the near future and the whole scope of organometallic olefin polymerization chemistry will be clarified.

*Acknowledgements.* We are grateful for financial support from the Ministry of Education, Science, Sports, and Culture of Japan (Grant-in-Aid for Scientific Research on Priority Areas of Reactive Organometallics No. 05236106 and Specially Promoted Research No. 06101004). K. M. appreciates the financial support from the Kurate Foundation.

## 9 References

1. Fink, G, Mülhaupt R, Brintzinger HH (1995) Ziegler Catalysts. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York
2. Keii T, Soga K (1990) Catalytic Olefin Polymerization. Elsevier, Lausanne
3. Quirk RP (1988) Transition-Metal Catalyzed Polymerizations; Ziegler-Natta and Metathesis Polymerizations. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge
4. Kaminsky W, Sinn H (1988) Organometallics as Catalysts for Olefin Polymerization. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg New York
5. Brintzinger HH, Fischer D, Mülhaupt R, Rieger B, Waymouth RM (1995) Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl 34: 1143
6. Grubbs RH, Coates GW (1996) Acc Chem Res 29: 85
7. Bochmann M (1996) J Chem Soc, Dalton Trans 255
8. Sinn H, Kaminsky W (1980) Adv Organomet Chem 18: 99
9. Zakharov VA, Bukatov GD, Yermakov YI (1983) Adv Polym Sci 51: 61
10. Kaminsky W, Steiger R (1988) Polyhedron 7: 2375
11. Casey CP, Hallenbeck SL, Pollock DW, Landis CR (1995) J Am Chem Soc 117: 9770
12. Kawamura-Kuribayashi H, Koga N, Morokuma K (1992) J Am Chem Soc 114: 2359

13. Kawamura-Kuribayashi H, Koga N, Morokuma K (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 8687
14. Eichner ME, Alt HG, Rausch MD (1984) *J Organomet Chem* 264: 309
15. Steigerwald ML, Goddard III WA (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 5027
16. Kaminsky W, Kopf J, Sinn H, Vollmer H-J (1976) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 15: 629
17. Takahashi T, Kasai K, Suzuki N, Nakajima K, Negishi E-I (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 3413
18. Cotton FA, Kibala PA (1990) *Inorg Chem* 29: 3192
19. Bruns CJ, Andersen RA (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 915
20. Evans WJ, Ulibarri TA, Ziller JW (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 219
21. Burns CJ, Andersen RA (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 941
22. Bartell LS, Roth EA, Hollowell CD, Kuchitsu K, Young JE Jr (1965) *J Chem Phys* 42: 2683
23. Levy GC, Nelson GL (1972) *Carbon-13 Nuclear Magnetic Resonance for Organic Chemists*, Wiley-Interscience, New York
24. Lynden-Bell RM, Sheppard N (1962) *Proc Roy Soc, Ser A* 269: 385
25. Cohene SA, Auburn PR, Bercaw JE (1983) *J Am Chem Soc* 105: 1136
26. Takahashi T, Murakami M, Kunishige M, Saburi M, Uchida Y, Kozawa K, Uchida T, Swanson DR, Negishi E (1989) *Chem Lett* 761
27. Alt HG, Denner CE, Thewalt U, Rausch MD (1988) *J Organomet Chem* 356: C83
28. Goddard R, Binger P, Hall SR, Müller P (1990) *Acta Crystallogra, Sect C* 46: 998
29. Buchwald SL, Kreutzer KA, Fisher RA (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 4600
30. Spencer MD, Morse PM, Wilson SR, Girolami GS (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 2057
31. Guggenberger LJ, Meakin P, Tebbe FN (1974) *J Am Chem Soc* 96: 5420
32. Burger BJ, Santarsiero BD, Trimmer MS, Bercaw JE (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 3134
33. Arnold J, Don Tilley T, Rheingold A, Geib SJ (1987) *Organometallics* 6: 473
34. Poole AW, Gibson VC, Clegg W (1992) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 237
35. Schultz AJ, Brown RK, Williams JM, Schrock RR (1981) *J Am Chem Soc* 103: 169
36. Abbenhuis HCL, Feiken N, Grove DM, Jastrzebski JTBH, Kooijman H, van der Sluis P, Smeets WJJ, Spek AL, van Koten G (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 9773
37. Wielstra Y, Meetsma A, Gambarotta S (1989) *Organometallics* 8: 258
38. Wielstra Y, Gambarotta S, Spek AL (1990) *Organometallics* 9: 572
39. Wreford (1980) *J Organomet Chem* 188: 353
40. Breslow DS, Newburg NR (1957) *J Am Chem Soc* 79: 5072
41. Sinn H, Kaminsky W, Jollmer HJ, Woldt R (1980) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 19: 390
42. Kaminsky W, Miri M, Sinn H, Woldt R (1983) *Makromol Chem, Rapid Commun* 4: 417
43. Herwig J, Kaminsky W (1983) *Polym Bull* 9: 464
44. Giannetti E, Nicoletti GM, Mazzocchi R (1985) *J Polym Sci, Polym Chem Ed* 23: 2117
45. Ewen JA, Haspeslagh L, Atwood JL, Zhang H (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 6544
46. Miya S, Mise T, Yamazaki H (1989) *Chem Lett* 1853
47. Busico V, Cipullo R (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 9329
48. Resconi L, Fait A, Riemontesi F, Colonnese M, Rychlicki H, Zeigler R (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 6667
49. Lee I-M, Gauthier WJ, Ball JM, Iyengar B, Collins S (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 2115
50. Spaleck W, Antberg M, Rohrmann J, Winter A, Bachmann B, Kiprof P, Behm J, Herrmann WA (1992) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 31: 1347
51. Linden Avd, Schaverien CJ, Meijboom N, Ganter C, Orpen AG (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 3008
52. Miyatake T, Mizunuma K, Seki Y, Kakugo M (1989) *Macromol Chem, Rapid Commun* 10: 349
53. Herrmann WA, Rohrmann J (1989) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 28: 1511
54. Hlatky GG, Eckman RR, Turner HW (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 1413
55. Crowther DJ, Baenziger NC, Jordan RF (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 1455
56. Jeske G, Lauke H, Mauermann H, Swepston PN, Schumann H, Marks TJ (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 8091
57. Watson PL, Parshall GW (1985) *Acc Chem Res* 18: 51
58. Herskovics-Korine D, Eisen MS (1995) *J Organomet Chem* 503: 307
59. Kaminsky W, Kulper K, Brintzinger HH, Wild FRWP (1985) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 24: 507
60. Mise T, Miya S, Yamazaki H (1989) *Chem Lett* 1853
61. Röhl W, Brinzinger H-H, Rieger B, Zolk R (1990) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 29: 279

62. Collins S, Gauthier WJ, Holden DA, Kuntz BA, Taylor NJ, Ward DG (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 2061
63. Stehling U, Diebold J, Röhl W, Brintzinger HH (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 964
64. Ewen JA, Jones RL, Razavi A, Ferrara JD (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 6255
65. Ewen JA (1984) *J Am Chem Soc* 106: 6355
66. Mallin DT, Rausch MD, Lin Y-G, Dong S, Chien JCW (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 2030
67. Chien JCW, Llinas GH, Rausch MD, Lin G-Y, Winter HH, Atwood JL, Bott SG (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 8569
68. Harlan CJ, Bott SG, Barron AR (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 6465
69. Gassman PG, Callstrom MR (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 7875
70. Sishta C, Huthorn RM, Marks TJ (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 1112
71. Toscano PJ, Marks TJ (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 653
72. Finch WC, Gillespie RD, Hedden D, Marks TJ (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 6221
73. Dahmen K-H, Hedden D, Burwell RLJ, Marks TJ (1988) *Langmuir* 4: 1212
74. Toscano PJ, Marks TJ (1986) *Langmuir* 2: 820
75. Jordan RJ, Bradely PK, LaPointe RE, Taulor DF (1990) *New J Chem* 14: 505
76. Jordan RF (1991) *Adv Organomet Chem* 32: 325
77. Eisch JJ, Piotrowski AM, Brownstein SK, Gabe EJ, Lee FL (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 7219
78. Bochmann M, Jaggur AJ, Wilson LM, Hursthouse MB, Motevalli M (1989) *Polyhedron* 8: 1838
79. Yang X, Stern CL, Marks TJ (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 3623
80. Bochmann M, Lancaster SJ, Hursthouse MB, Malik KMA (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 2235
81. Jordan RF, Bajgur CS, Willett R, Scott B (1986) *J Am Chem Soc* 108: 7410
82. Amorose DM, Lee RA, Petersen JL (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 2191
83. Eshuis JJW, Tan YY, Meetsma A, Teuben JH, Renkema J, Evens GG (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 362
84. Razavi A, Thewalt U (1993) *J Organomet Chem* 445: 111
85. Jordan RF, LaPointe RE, Bajgur CS, Echols SF, Willett R (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 4111
86. Jordan RF, Bradley PK, Baenziger NC, LaPointe RE (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 1289
87. Alelyunas YW, Baenziger NC, Bradley PK, Jordan RF (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 148
88. Horton AD, Orpen AG (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 1193
89. Horton AD, Orpen AG (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 8
90. Guo Z, Swenson DC, Jordan RF (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 1424
91. Eisch JJ, Caldwell KR, Werner S, Krüger C (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 3417
92. Eisch JJ, Pombrik SI, Zheng G-X (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 3856
93. Eshuis JJW, Tan YY, Teuben JH, Renkema J (1990) *J Mol Catal* 62: 277
94. Hlatky GG, Turner HW, Eckman RR (1989) *J Am Chem Soc* 111: 2728
95. Yang X, Stern CL, Marks TJ (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 10015
96. Bochmann M, Lancaster SJ (1992) *J Organomet Chem* 434: C1
97. Bochmann M, Lancaster SJ (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 633
98. Taube R, Krukowa L (1988) *J Organomet Chem* 327: C9
99. Bochmann M, Jaggur AJ, Nicholls JC (1990) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 29: 780
100. Chein JCW, Tsai WM, Rausch MD (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 8570
101. Chien JCW, Song W, Rausch M (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 3239
102. Bochmann M, Wilson LM (1986) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1610
103. Jordan RF, Bajgur CS, Dasher WE, Rheingold AL (1987) *Organometallics* 6: 1041
104. Jordan RF, Dasher WE, Echols SF (1986) *J Am Chem Soc* 108: 1718
105. Alelyunas YW, Jordan RF, Echols SF, Borkowsky SL, Bradley PK (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 1406
106. Jordan RF, La Pointe RE, Bradley PK, Baenzier N (1989) *Organometallics* 8: 2892
107. Jordan RF, La Pointe RE, Baenziger N, Hinch GD (1990) *Organometallics* 9: 1539
108. Crowther DJ, Borkowsky SL, Swenson D, Meyer TY, Jordan RF (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 2897
109. Crasther DJ, Borkowsky SL, Swenson D, Meyer TY, Jordan RF (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 2897
110. Yang X, King WA, Sabat M, Marks TJ (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 4254
111. Thompson ME, Baxter SM, Bulls AR, Burger BJ, Nolan MC, Santarsiero BD, Schaefer WP, Bercaw JE (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 203
112. Burger BJ, Thompson ME, Cotter WD, Bercaw JE (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 1566

113. Bunel E, Burger BJ, Bercaw JE (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 976
114. Coughlin EB, Bercaw JE (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 7606
115. Shapiro PJ, Cotter WD, Schaefer WP, Labinger JA, Bercaw JE (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 4623
116. Hajela S, Bercaw JE (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 1147
117. Evans WJ, Ulibarri TA, Ziller JW (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 2314
118. Yang X, Stern CL, Marks TJ (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 840
119. Yasuda H, Ihara E (1995) *Macromol Chem Phys* 196: 2417
120. Schaverien CJ (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 69
121. Lin Z, Marechal J-FL, Sabat M, Marks TJ (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 4127
122. Marks TJ (1992) *Acc Chem Res* 25: 57
123. Huang Y, Hill YD, Sodupe M, Bauschlicher CW, Jr., Freiser BS (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 9106
124. Evans WJ, Meadows JH, Hunter WE, Atwood JL (1984) *J Am Chem Soc* 106: 1291
125. Thompson ME, Bercaw JE (1984) *Pure & Appl Chem* 56: 1
126. Shapiro PJ, Bunel E, Schaefer WP, Bercaw JE (1990) *Organometallics* 9: 867
127. Jeske G, Schock LE, Sweptson PN, Schumann H, Marks TJ (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 8103
128. Yasuda H, Ihara E (1994) *Koubunshi* 43: 534
129. Uppal JS, Janson DE, Staley RH (1981) *J Am Chem Soc* 103: 508
130. Christ (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 4038
131. Christ CS Jr., Eyerl JR, Richardson DE (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 596
132. Jacobson DB, Freiser BS (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 5876
133. Huang Y, Hill YD, Freiser BS (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 840
134. Cossee P (1964) *J Catal* 3: 80
135. Arlman EJ (1964) *J Catal* 3: 89
136. Arlman EJ, Cossee P (1964) *J Catal* 3: 99
137. Doherty NM, Bercaw JE (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 2670
138. Tasumi M (1966) *J Polym Sci, Polym Chem Ed* 4: 1023
139. Ivin KH, Rooney JJ, Stewart CD, Green MLH, Mahtab R (1978) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 604
140. Upton TH, Rappé AK (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 1206
141. Turner HW, Schrock RR, Fellmann JD, Holmes SJ (1983) *J Am Chem Soc* 105: 4942
142. Flood JC, Bitter SP (1984) *J Am Chem Soc* 106: 6076
143. Watson PL (1982) *J Am Chem Soc* 104: 337
144. Clawson L, Soto J, Buchwald SL, Steigerwald ML, Grubbs RH (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 3377
145. Piers WE, Bercaw JE (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 9406
146. Bruno JW, Smith GM, Marks TJ, Fair CK, Schultz AJ, Williams JM (1986) *J Am Chem Soc* 108: 40
147. Tatsumi K, Nakamura A (1987) *Organometallics* 6: 427
148. Tatsumi K, Nakamura A (1987) *J Am Chem Soc* 109: 3195
149. Kaminsky W, Ahlers A, Moller-Lindenhof N (1989) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 28: 1216
150. Tsutsui T (1989) *Polymer* 30: 428
151. Guo Z, Bradley PK, Jordan RF (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 2690
152. Resconi L, Piemontesi F, Franciscano G, Abis L, Fiorani T (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 1025
153. Grassi A, Zambelli A, Resconi L, Albizzati E, Mazzocchi R (1988) *Macromolecules* 21: 617
154. Cheng HN, Ewen JA (1989) *Macromol Chem* 190: 1931
155. Chien JCW, Wang B-P (1990) *J Polym Sci, Polym Chem Ed* 28: 15
156. Mogstad A-L, Waymouth RM (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 2282
157. Watson PL, Roe DC (1982) *J Am Chem Soc* 104: 6471
158. Llinas GH, Dong S-H, Mallin DT, Rausch MD, Lin Y-G, Winter HH, Chien JCW (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 1242
159. Jüngling S, Mülhaupt R, Stehling U, Brintzinger H-H, Fischer D, Langhauser F (1995) *J Polym Chem, Part A: Polym Chem* 33: 1305
160. Spaleck W, Küber F, Winter A, Rohrmann J, Bachmann B, Antberg M, Dolle V, Paulus EF (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 954
161. Erker G, Nolte R, Tsay Y-H, Krüger C (1989) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 28: 628
162. Razavi A, Atwood JL (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 7529
163. Erker G, Aulbach M, Knickmeier M, Wingbermühle D, Krüger C, Nolte M, Werner S (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 4590



164. Erker G, Temme B (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 4004
165. Rieger B, Mu X, Mallin DT, Rausch MD, Chien JCW (1990) *Macromolecules* 23: 3559
166. Longo P, Grassi A, Pellecchia C, Zambelli A (1987) *Macromolecules* 20: 1015
167. Mengele W, Diebold J, Troll C, Röhl W, Brintzinger H-H (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 1931
168. Leclerc MK, Brintzinger HH (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 1651
169. Erker G (1991) *Chem Ber* 124: 1301
170. Erker G, Nolte R, Aul R, Wilker S, Krüger C, Noe R (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 7594
171. Erker G (1992) *Pure and Appl Chem* 64: 393
172. Erker G, Fritze C (1992) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 31: 199
173. Coates CW, Waymouth RM (1995) *Science* 267: 217
174. Cavallo L, Guerra G, Vacatello M, Corradini P (1991) *Macromolecules* 24: 1784
175. Corradini P, Guerra G, Vacatello M, Villani V (1988) *Gazz Chim Ital* 118: 173
176. Resconi L, Abis L, Franciscano G (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 6814
177. Ewen JA, Elder MJ, Jones RL, Haspeslagh L, Atwood JL, Bott SG, Robinson K (1991) *Makromol Chem, Macromol; Symp* 48/49: 253
178. Doi Y, Ueki S, Keii T (1979) *Macromolecules* 12: 814
179. Doi Y, Suzuki S, Soga K (1986) *Macromolecules* 19: 2896
180. Ewen JA, Reddy BR, Elder MJ (1994) *Eur Pat Appl* 577581
181. Winter A, Rohrmann J, Dolle V, Spaleck W (1990) *Ger Offen* 3907965
182. Inoue N, Shiomura T, Asanuma T, Jinno M, Sonobe Y, Mizutani K (1991) *Jpn Kokai Tokkyo Koho* 03193793
183. Locatelli P, Sacchi MC, Rigamonti E, Zambelli A (1984) *Macromolecules* 17: 123
184. Ishihara N, Semiya T, Kuramoto M, Uoi M (1986) *Macromolecules* 19: 2464
185. Ishihara N, Kuramoto M, Uoi M (1988) *Macromolecules* 21: 3556
186. Kucht A, Kucht H, Barry S, Chien JCW, Rausch MD (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 3075
187. Pellecchia C, Proto A, Longo P, Zambelli A (1992) *Makromol Chem Rapid Commun* 13: 277
188. Pellecchia C, Long P, Proto A, Zambelli A (1992) *Makromol Chem, Rapid Commun* 13: 265
189. Quyoum R, Wang Q, Tudoret M-J, Baird MC, Gillis DJ (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 6435
190. Pellecchia C, Pappalardo D, Oliva L, Zambelli A (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 6593
191. Gillis DJ, Tudoret M, Baird MC (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 2543
192. Pellecchia C, Immirzi A, Grassi A, Zambelli A (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 4473
193. Pellecchia C, Grassi A, A Immirzi (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 1160
194. Pellecchia C, Grassi A, Zambelli A (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 298
195. Pellecchia C, Grassi A, Zambelli A (1993) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 947
196. Pellecchia C, Longo P, Grassi A, Ammendola P, Zambelli A (1987) *Makromol Chem, Rapid Commun* 8: 277
197. Zambelli A, Oliva L, Pellecchia C (1989) *Macromolecules* 22: 2129
198. Zambelli A, Pellecchia C, Proto A (1995) *Makromol Symp* 89: 373
199. Grassi A, Pellecchia C, Oliva L, Laschi F (1995) *Makromol Chem Phys* 196: 1093
200. Flores JC, Chien JCW, Rausch MD (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 1827
201. Flores JC, Chien JCW, Rausch MD (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 2106
202. Stevens JC (1993) *INSITE-CGCT, Houston Tex USA* 111
203. Castonguray LA, Rappé AK (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 5832
204. Resconi L, Waymouth RM (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 4953
205. Resconi L, Coates GW, Mogstad A, Waymouth RM (1991) *J Macromol Sci, Chem Ed A28* 1225
206. Butler GB (1982) *Acc Chem Res* 15: 370
207. Young JR, Stille JR (1990) *Organometallics* 9: 3022
208. Cheng HN, Khaset NP (1988) *J Appl Polym Sci* 35: 825
209. Coates GW, Waymouth RM (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 91
210. Waymouth R, Pino P (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 4911
211. Pino P (1990) *J Organomet Chem* 370: 1
212. Abe H, Imai K, Matsumoto M (1965) *J Polym Sci, Part B* 3: 1053
213. Abe H, Imai K, Matsumoto M (1968) *J Polym Sci C23*: 469
214. Kesti MR, Coates GW, Waymouth RM (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 9679
215. Yasuda H, Yamamoto Y, Yokota K, Miyake S, Nakamura A (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 4908
216. Yasuda H, Yamamoto H, Yamashita M, Yokota K, Nakamura A, Miyake S, Kai Y, Kanehisa N (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 7134

217. Yasuda H, Furo M, Yamamoto H, Nakamura A, Miyake S, Kibino N (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 5115
218. Brokhardt M (1994) *J Am Chem Soc*
219. Brookhart M, Sabo-Etienne S (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 2777
220. Hauptman E, Sabo-Etienne S, White PS, Brookhart M, Garner JM, Fagan PJ, Calabrese JC (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 8038
221. Boffa LS, Novak BM (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 6993
222. Jiang T, Shen Q, Lin Y, Jin S (1992) *J Organomet Chem* 450: 121
223. Collins S, Ward DG (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 5460
224. Soga K, Deng H, Yano T, Shiono T (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 7938
225. Deng H, Shiono T, Soga K (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 3067
226. Giardello MA, Yamamoto Y, Brard L, Marks TJ (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 3276
227. Nomura R, Toneri T, Endo T (1994) *Polymer Preprints, Japan* 34: 158
228. Nakayama Y, Shibahara T, Fukumoto H, Nakamura A, Mashima K (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 8014
229. Quijada R, Dupont J, Silveira DC, Miranda MSL, Scipioni RB (1995) *Macromol Rapid Commun* 16: 357
230. Yasuda H, Tatsumi K, Okamoto T, Mashima K, Lee K, Nakamura A, Kai Y, Kanehisa N, Kasai N (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 2410
231. Okamoto T, Yasuda H, Nakamura A, Kai Y, Kanehisa N, Kasai N (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 5008
232. Okamoto T, Yasuda H, Nakamura A, Kai Y, Kanehisa N, Kasai N (1988) *Organometallics* 7: 2266
233. Mashima K, Yamanaka Y, Fujikawa S, Yasuda H, Nakamura A (1992) *J Organomet Chem* 428: C5
234. Gibson VC (1994) *J Chem Soc, Dalton Trans* 1607
235. Gibson VC (1994) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 33: 1565
236. Cockcroft JK, Gibson VC, Howard JAK, Poole AD, Siemeling U, Wilson C (1992) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1668
237. Buijink J-K, Teuben JH, Kooijman H, Spek AL (1994) *Organometallics* 13: 2922
238. Sundermeyer J, Runge D (1994) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 33: 1255
239. Uhrhammer R, Crowther DJ, Olson JD, Swenson DC, Jordan RF (1992) *Organometallics* 11: 3098
240. Williams DS, Schofield MH, Anhaus JT, Schrock RR (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 6728
241. Williams DS, Schofield MH, Schrock RR (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 4560
242. Dyer PW, Gibson VC, Howard JAK, Whittle B, Wilson C (1992) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1666
243. Mashima K, Tanaka Y, Nakamura A (1995) *J Organomet Chem* 502: 19
244. Mashima K, Tanaka Y, Nakamura A (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 5642
245. Mashima K, Tanaka Y, Kaidzu M, Nakamura A (1996) *Organometallics* 15: 2431
246. Mashima K, Fujikawa S, Nakamura A (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 10990
247. Mashima K, Fujikawa S, Urata H, Tanaka Y, Nakamura A (1994) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1623
248. Mashima K, Fujikawa S, Tanaka Y, Urata H, Oshiki T, Tanaka E, Nakamura A (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 2633
249. Gardiner MG, Raston CL (1993) *Organometallics* 12: 81
250. Mashima K, Nakamura A (unpublished results)
251. Temme B, Erker G, Karl J, Luftmann H, Fröhlich R, Kotila S (1995) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 34: 1755
252. Blenkins J, Hessen B, van Bolhuis F, Wagner AJ, Teuben JH (1987) *Organometallics* 6: 459
253. Meijer-Veldman MEE, Tan YY, de Liefde Meijer HJ (1985) *Polym Commun* 26: 200
254. Bazan GC, Donnely SJ, Rodriguez G (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 2671
255. Rodriguez G, Bazan GC (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 10155
256. Scheuer S, Fischer J, Kress J (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 2627
257. Feher FJ, Walzer JF, Blanski RL (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 3618
258. Feher FJ, Blanski RL (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 5886
259. Clark A (1969) *Catal Rev* 3: 145
260. Karol KFJ, Brown GL, Davision JM (1973) *J Polym Sci, Polym Chem Ed* 11: 413
261. Thomas BJ, H. Theopold K (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 5902

262. Thomas BJ, Noh SK, Sculte GK, Sendlinger SC, Theopold KH (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 893
263. Theopold KH (1990) *Acc Chem Res* 23: 263
264. Bhandari G, Kim Y, McFarland JM, Rheingold AL, Theopold KH (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 738
265. Coles M, Dalby CI, Gibson VC, Clegg W, Elsegood MRJ (1995) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1709
266. Grubbs RH, Tumas W (1989) *Science* 243: 907
268. Feldman J, Schrock RR (1991) *Prog Inorg Chem* 39: 1
269. Skell PS, Van Dam EM, Silvon MP (1974) *J Am Chem Soc* 96: 626
270. Skell PS, McGlinchey MJ (1975) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 14: 195
271. Gausing VW, Wilke G (1981) *Angew Chem, Int Ed Engl* 93: 201
272. Skupińska J (1991) *Chem Rev* 91: 613
273. Keim W (1984) *Chem Ing Tech* 56: 850
274. Brookhart M, DeSimone JM, Grant BE, Tanner MJ (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 5378
275. Johnson LK, Killian CM, Brookhart M (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 6414
276. Guillet J (1985) *Polymer Photophysics and photochemistry*, Cambridge University, Cambridge
277. Moore JS, Stupp SI (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 3429
278. van Asselt R, Gielens EECG, Rülke RE, Vrieze K, Elsevier CJ (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 977
279. Sen A (1993) *Acc Chem Res* 26: 303
280. Jiang Z, Adams SE, Sen A (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 2694
281. Jiang Z, Sen A (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 4455
282. Brookhart M, Wagner MI, Balavoine GGA, Haddou HA (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 3641
283. Bronco S, Consiglio G, Hutter R, Batistini A, Suter UW (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4436
284. Nozaki K, Sato N, Takaya H (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 9911
285. Soga K, Kaminaka M, Kim HJ, Shiono T (1995) In *Ziegler Catalysts*; Fink G, Mülhaupt R and Brintzinger HH, Eds.; Springer: Berlin.: p 333
286. Soga K, Arai T, Hoang BT, Uozumi T (1995) *Macromol. Rapid Commun* 16: 905
287. Nishida H, Uozumi T, Arai T, Soga K (1995) *Macromol Rapid Commun* 16: 821

Editor: T. Saegusa

Received: August 1996

# Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Living Polymerizations of Polar and Nonpolar Monomers

Hajime Yasuda<sup>1</sup> and Eiji Ihara<sup>2</sup>

Department of Applied Chemistry, Faculty of Engineering,  
Hiroshima University, Higashi-Hiroshima 739, Japan

<sup>1</sup> E-mail: yasuda@ipc.hiroshima-u.ac.jp. <sup>2</sup> E-mail: ihara@ipc.hiroshima-u.ac.jp.

This review article shows that by using the versatile functions of rare earth metal complexes we can polymerize both polar and nonpolar monomers in living fashion to obtain monodisperse high molecular weight polymers at high conversions. A typical example is the polymerization of methyl methacrylate with  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  or  $\text{LnMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  (THF) (Ln = Sm, Y, Lu), which leads quantitatively to high molecular weight syndiotactic polymers ( $M_n = 500\,000$ , syndiotacticity 95%) at low temperature (–95 °C). The initiation mechanism was discussed on the basis of X-ray analysis of the 1:2 adduct (molar ratio) of  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  with MMA. Living polymerizations of alkyl acrylates (methyl acrylate, ethyl acrylate, butyl acrylate) were also made possible by using  $\text{LnMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$ (THF) (Ln = Sm, Y), with the results: poly(methyl acrylate)  $M_n = 48 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.04$ , poly(ethyl acrylate)  $M_n = 55 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.04$ , and poly(butyl acrylate)  $M_n = 70 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.05$ . By taking advantage of the ABA triblock copolymerization of MMA/butyl acrylate/MMA, it was possible to obtain rubberlike elastic polymers. Lanthanum alkoxide(III) has good catalytic activity for the polymerization of alkylisocyanates ( $M_n = 10^6$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 2.08$ ). Monodisperse polymerization of lactones, lactide, and oxirane was also achieved by polymerization with rare earth metal complexes.  $C_1$  symmetric bulky organolanthanide(III) complexes such as  $\text{SiMe}_2[2(3),4-(\text{SiMe}_3)_2\text{C}_5\text{H}_2]_2\text{LnCH}(\text{SiMe}_3)_2$  (Ln = La, Sm, Y) show high activity for linear polymerization of ethylene. Organolanthanide(II) complexes such as racemic  $\text{SiMe}_2[2-\text{SiMe}_3-4-t\text{Bu}-\text{C}_5\text{H}_2]_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$  as well as  $C_1$  symmetric  $\text{SiMe}_2[2(3),4-(\text{SiMe}_3)_2\text{C}_5\text{H}_2]_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$  were also found to have a very high activity for polymerization of ethylene. Thus, polyethylene of  $M_n = 10^6$  ( $M_w/M_n = 1.60$ ) was obtained by using  $\text{SiMe}_2[2(3),4-(\text{SiMe}_3)_2\text{C}_5\text{H}_2]_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$ . 1,4-*cis* Conjugated diene polymers of butadiene and isoprene became available by the efficient catalytic activity of  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_5\text{NdCl}/\text{AlR}_3$  or  $\text{Nd}(\text{octanoate})_3/\text{AlR}_3$ . The  $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  system allows selective polymerization of acetylene in *cis* fashion to take place at high yield. Considering the fact that rare earth metal-initiated living polymerization can be achieved for both polar and nonpolar monomers, attempts have been made to block copolymerization of ethylene with MMA or lactones yielding polyethylene derivatives having high chemical reactivity.

## List of Abbreviations . . . . . 55

## 1 Introduction . . . . . 56

|   |           |
|---|-----------|
| <b>2 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerizations of Polar Vinyl Monomers . . . . .</b> | <b>57</b> |
| 2.1 General Remarks . . . . .   | 57        |
| 2.2 Highly Stereospecific Living Polymerizations of Alkyl Methacrylates . . . . .     | 59        |
| 2.3 Living Polymerizations of Alkyl Acrylates . . . . .                               | 68        |
| 2.4 Polymerization of Acrylonitrile . . . . .   | 72        |

|  |           |
|--|-----------|
| <b>3 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerizations of Alkyl Isocyanates . . .</b>                       | <b>72</b> |
| <b>4 Ring-Opening Polymerizations of Cyclic Monomers . . . . .</b>                                   | <b>74</b> |
| 4.1 Living Polymerization of Lactones . . . . .  | 74        |
| 4.2 Polymerization of Tetrahydrofuran . . . . .  | 77        |
| 4.3 Stereospecific Polymerizations of Oxiranes . . . . .   | 78        |
| 4.4 Polymerization of Lactide . . . . .  | 80        |
| 4.5 Polymerization of Cyclic Carbonate . . . . .   | 80        |
| <b>5 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerizations of Olefins, Dienes,<br/>and Acetylenes . . . . .</b> | <b>81</b> |
| 5.1 Stereospecific Polymerization of Olefins . . . . .   | 81        |
| 5.2 Polymerization of Styrene . . . . .  | 89        |
| 5.3 Stereospecific Polymerization of Conjugated Dienes . . . . .                                     | 90        |
| 5.4 Stereospecific Polymerization of Acetylene<br>and Its Derivatives . . . . .                      | 94        |
| <b>6 Block Copolymerization of Ethylene with Polar Monomers . . . . .</b>                            | <b>96</b> |
| <b>7 Conclusion . . . . .</b>  | <b>98</b> |
| <b>8 References . . . . .</b>  | <b>99</b> |

## List of Abbreviations

|                  |   |
|------------------|---|
| $M_w$            | weight-average molecular weight   |
| $M_n$            | number-average molecular weight   |
| MMA              | methyl methacrylate   |
| <i>t</i> BuMA    | <i>t</i> -butyl methacrylate  |
| iBuMgBr          | isobutylmagnesium bromide   |
| THF              | tetrahydrofuran   |
| MeA              | methyl acrylate   |
| EtA              | ethyl acrylate  |
| BuA              | butyl acrylate  |
| 2-EP             | 2-ethylhexylphosphate   |
| EO               | ethylene oxide  |
| PO               | propylene oxide   |
| AGE              | allyl glycidylether   |
| EPH              | epichlorohydrin   |
| CL               | caprolactone  |
| VL               | valerolactone   |
| TMC              | trimethylenecarbonate   |
| P <sub>204</sub> | [CH <sub>3</sub> (CH <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>3</sub> (CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>3</sub> )CHCH <sub>2</sub> O] <sub>2</sub> P(O)OH |
| P <sub>507</sub> | (iC <sub>8</sub> H <sub>17</sub> O) <sub>2</sub> P(O)OH   |
| P <sub>215</sub> | [C <sub>6</sub> H <sub>13</sub> CH(CH <sub>3</sub> )O] <sub>2</sub> P(O)OH  |
| PA               | polyacetylene   |
| DSC              | differential scanning calorimetry   |
| XRD              | X-ray diffraction   |
| SEM              | scanning electron micrograph  |
| GPC              | gel permeation chromatograph  |
| $v_{as}$         | asymmetric vibration  |
| $v_s$            | symmetric vibration   |

## 1 Introduction

Recently, it has been made clear that the rare earth metal-initiated living polymerizations of polar and nonpolar monomers allow the synthesis of high molecular weight polymers with a very narrow molecular weight distribution. The conditions required for ideal living polymerization may be (1) the number-average molecular weight  $M_n$  100 000, (2) the polydispersity index  $M_w/M_n$  1.05, (3) stereoregularity 95%, and (4) high conversion in a short period of time 95%. Even the famous living polystyrene system [1] and the group transfer system [2] do not simultaneously satisfy conditions (1) and (2). Recently, after a long wait by many polymer chemists, all four conditions have been found to be met in the rare earth metal-initiated polymerization of methyl methacrylate (MMA). The success is mainly ascribed to the use of single crystalline rare earth metal complexes as initiators and that of a thoroughly dried monomer. Although single air- and moisture-sensitive complexes are generally difficult to prepare, especially for polymer chemists, it is a rather easy task for organometallic chemists who are familiar with Schlenk techniques.

The synthesis of monodisperse high molecular weight syndiotactic poly(methyl methacrylate) mentioned above was possible at a polymerization temperature as low as 95 °C [3]. However, methods to synthesize it at a relatively high temperature or to synthesize its isotactic counterpart remain to be found. When the latter is made available, the synthesis of stereo-complexes of poly(methyl methacrylate) will become the focus of considerable interest.

Alkyl acrylates were polymerized for the first time in living fashion with the aid of the unique catalytic action of rare earth metal complexes [4]. Since these monomers have an acidic  $\alpha$ -H, termination and chain transfer reactions occur so frequently that their polymerization generally does not proceed in living manner. The lowest polydispersity index reported so far is 1.06 for poly(*t*Bu acrylate,  $M_n$  21 000) obtained using the RLi/LiCl system [5], 1.1 for poly(methyl acrylate,  $M_n$  20 000) obtained by the catalysis of  $\text{Sm}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{CH}_2\text{-CH-CH-CH}_2\text{-})_2$  [6], and 1.03 for poly(ethyl acrylate,  $M_n$  3300) obtained by the catalysis of a group transfer agent [7]. By taking advantage of the living nature of both poly(methyl methacrylate) and poly(alkyl acrylate)s, ABA-type triblock copolymerization of methyl methacrylate (MMA)/butyl acrylate(BuA)/MMA was performed to obtain thermoplastic elasticity. Since MMA acts as a hard segment and BuA as a soft segment, the former will work as a node and the latter as an elastomer in the resulting network system. In fact, the poly(MMA/BuA/MMA)(8:72:20) system obtained exhibited good elastic properties [4], while the (20:47:33, 6:91:3) system did not. How syndiotactic or isotactic poly(alkyl acrylate) with relatively large  $M_n$  and relatively small  $M_w/M_n$  can be produced remains to be elucidated.

Living polymerization of lactones has been successfully performed by catalysis of rare earth metal complexes to obtain  $M_w/M_n$  of 1.07–1.08 [8]. The lowest polydispersity index attained so far with the  $\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system is 1.13.

Dielectric normal mode relaxation has been examined using the resulting pure poly(lactone) [9]. Cyclic carbonates such as trimethylenecarbonate also undergo living polymerization [10]. However, it should be noted that their complete drying was mandatory for the synthesis of high molecular weight polymers. More recently, acrylonitrile and alkyl isocyanates have been polymerized using  $(C_5Me_5)_2LaCH(SiMe_3)_2$ . The polymerization of various oxiranes has also been attempted using the  $Ln(acac)_3/AIR_3/H_2O$  system [11]. All these recent studies have made it clear that most polar monomers can be polymerized by using various organolanthanide catalysts. There are several polymerization systems which do not satisfy the four conditions mentioned earlier. The use of a single-component catalyst of suitable ligand bulkiness is necessary to achieve the ideal living polymerization of propylene oxide, propylene sulfide, and ethylene oxide.

Rare earth metal initiators also show good activity towards nonpolar monomers such as ethylene, 1-olefins, styrene, conjugated diene, and acetylene. In fact, the polymerization of poly(ethylene) of  $M_n = 1\,000\,000$  with  $M_w/M_n = 1.6$  was made possible by the use of a  $C_1$  symmetric complex,  $Me_2Si[3,4-(SiMe_3)_2C_5H_2]$  [2,4-( $SiMe_3$ )<sub>2</sub>C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>]Sm(THF). This  $M_w/M_n$  value is the smallest ever obtained for poly(ethylene). The conventional  $MgCl_2$ -assisted Ziegler-Natta catalyst produced a polymer of  $M_w/M_n = 4.0$ , and the Kaminsky-type catalyst a polymer of  $M_w/M_n = 2.0$ . However, the magnitudes of  $M_n$  for poly(olefin)s such as poly(1-pentene), polystyrene, and poly(1,5-hexadiene) did not reach high enough levels even with the help of the characteristic catalytic action of rare earth metal complexes. The maximum  $M_n = 60\,000$  obtained is far below the desired minimum of 400 000. Furthermore, the synthesis of syndiotactic poly(1-olefin) is desirable because excellent physical properties are expected. Conjugate diene and acetylene derivatives were polymerized by using rather complex rare earth metal catalysts, but the  $M_w/M_n$  obtained remained fairly large. This indicates that the polymerization should be performed using multisite catalytic species. The use of a mononuclear single-site catalyst is required for the polymerization of these derivatives.

## 2 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerization of Polar Vinyl Monomers

### 2.1 General Remarks

Rare earth elements are the general term for 15 kinds of lanthanide elements (La, Ce, Pr, Nd, Pm, Sm, Eu, Gd, Tb, Dy, Ho, Er, Tm, Yb, Lu) together with Sc and Y elements. They prefer trivalent states in the complex formation, though three elements (Eu, Sm, Yb) can assume tri- and divalent states and Ce a tri- or tetravalent state. Their ionic radii are fairly large (1.0–1.17 Å) and their electronegativities are low (1.1–1.2). In fact, the former are much larger than those of

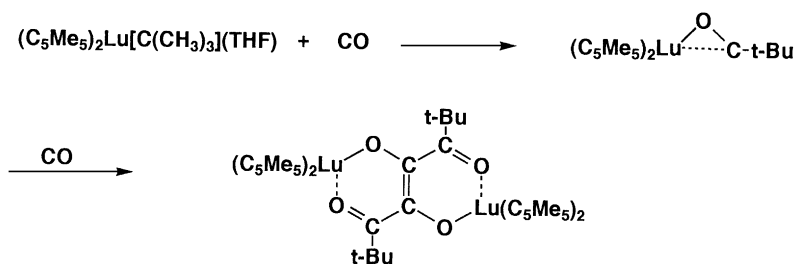


the main group metals (Li 0.73; Mg 0.71; Al 0.68 Å) and transition metals (Ti 0.75; Mo 0.75; Fe 0.75 Å), while the latter are similar to those of Li (1.0) and Mg (1.2) (Table 1). With regard to these properties, the organometallic complexes of rare earth metals have strong basicity and therefore allow anionic polymerization to take place. Rare earth metal complexes often form  $\eta$ -ate complexes such as  $R_4LnLi$  and  $R_2LnClNaCl(THF)_2$ , but it was possible to obtain neutral complexes by using a bulky  $C_5Me_5$  or a  $C_8H_8$  ligand. Characteristic reactions were observed in their reaction with CO. For example when it reacts with CO,  $(C_5H_5)_2Lu[C(CH_3)_3](THF)$  produces acyl complexes, leading to a double insertion complex of CO by reaction with two equivalent CO [12] Scheme 1. The double insertion of the CO molecule into the C–C [13] or N–N double bond [14] was also observed for a rare earth metal.

Characteristic initiation behavior of rare earth metals was also found in the polymerization of polar and nonpolar monomers. In spite of the accelerated development of living isotactic [15] and syndiotactic [16] polymerizations of methyl methacrylate (MMA), the lowest polydispersity indices obtained remain in the region of  $M_w/M_n = 1.08$  for an  $M_n$  of only 21 200. Thus, the synthesis of high molecular weight polymers ( $M_n = 100 \times 10^3$ ) with  $M_w/M_n = 1.05$  is still an important target in both polar and nonpolar polymer chemistry. Undoubtedly, the availability of compositionally pure materials is a must for the accurate physical and chemical characterization of polymeric materials.

Table 1. Ionic radii and electronegativities of rare earth elements

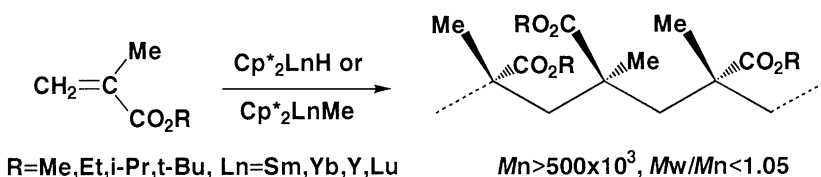
| Elements | Ionic radius (Å) | Electro-negativities | Elements | Ionic radius (Å) | Electro-negativities |
|----------|------------------|----------------------|----------|------------------|----------------------|
| Sc       | 0.89             |                      | Li       | 0.73             | 1.0                  |
| Y        | 1.04             |                      | Mg       | 0.71             | 1.2                  |
| La       | 1.17             |                      | Al       | 0.68             | 1.5                  |
| Sm       | 1.11             | 1.1–1.2              | Ti       | 0.75             | 1.5                  |
| Eu       | 1.09             |                      | Mo       | 0.75             | 1.8                  |
| Yb       | 1.01             |                      | Fe       | 0.75             | 1.8                  |
| Lu       | 1.00             |                      | Pt       | 0.94             | 2.2                  |



Scheme 1. Typical reactions of alkylanthanides with CO

## 2.2 Highly Stereospecific Living Polymerization of Alkyl Methacrylates

As mentioned above, it is very important to find ways in which to synthesize highly syndiotactic or isotactic polymers with  $M_n$  500 000 and  $M_w/M_n$  1.05. Although various living polymerization systems have been proposed for this purpose, anionic [17], cationic [18], group transfer [2], and metal carbene-initiated polymerizations [19] have not been successful. Therefore, it is remarkable that in recent years, high molecular weight poly(MMA) having an unusually low polydispersity has been synthesized by using the unique initiating function of organolanthanide (III) complexes (Scheme 2, Fig. 1) [3]. The relevant complexes include lanthanide hydrides, trialkylaluminum



Scheme 2. Living polymerization of MMA

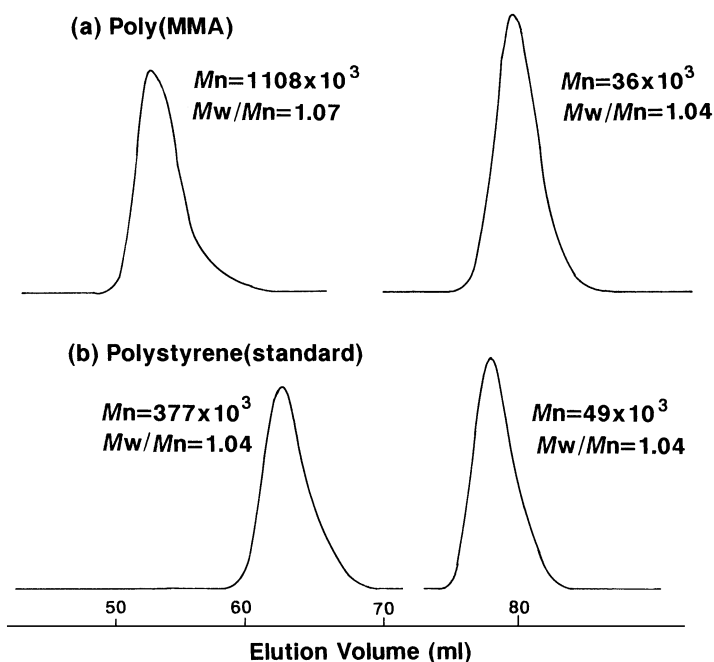


Fig. 1. GPC profiles of poly(MMA) and standard poly(styrene)

complexes of alkylanthanides, bulky alkylanthanide and simple alkyl complexes synthesized from  $\text{Ln}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{Cl}$  (Fig. 2). Most of them have been characterized by single X-ray analysis [20]. The results from the polymerization of MMA with the  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  initiator at different temperatures are summarized in Table 2. The most striking is  $M_w/M_n$  1.02–1.04, for  $M_n$   $60 \times 10^3$ . Remarkably, the organolanthanide complexes give high conversions (polymer yields) in a relatively short period and allow the polymerization to proceed over a wide range of reaction temperatures (from 78 to 60 °C). Furthermore, syndiotacticity exceeding 95% is obtained when the polymerization temperature is lowered to 95 °C.

From these findings we see that the ideal living polymerization is made possible when  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  or  $\text{LnR}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Y, Sm, Yb, Lu}$ ) is used as the initiator. A polymerization process can be judged as living if the following four criteria are met. First, the number-average molecular weight of the resulting polymer should increase linearly in proportion to the conversion (polymer yield) irrespective of the initiator concentration, with  $M_w/M_n$  remaining in

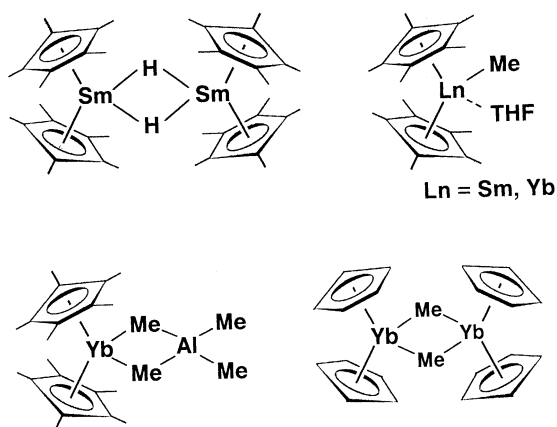


Fig. 2. Typical organolanthanide(III) initiators

Table 2. Characterization of monodisperse poly(MMA) synthesized by  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  initiator

| Polymerization temperature (°C) | MMA/initiator charged | $M_n \times 10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | rr%  | Conversion/% (reaction time) |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------|-----------|------|------------------------------|
| 40                              | 500                   | 55                | 1.03      | 77.3 | 99 (1 h)                     |
| 0                               | 500                   | 58                | 1.02      | 82.4 | 99 (1 h)                     |
| 0                               | 1500                  | 215               | 1.03      | 82.9 | 93 (2 h)                     |
| 0                               | 3000                  | 563               | 1.04      | 82.3 | 98 (3 h)                     |
| 78                              | 500                   | 82                | 1.04      | 93.1 | 97 (18 h)                    |
| 95                              | 1000                  | 187               | 1.05      | 95.3 | 82 (60 h)                    |

$M_n$  and  $M_w/M_n$  were determined by GPC using standard poly(MMA) whose  $M_w$  was measured by light scattering method. Solvent, toluene;  $[\text{M}]_0/\text{solvent} = 5$  (vol/vol)

the 1.03–1.04 range during the reaction (Fig. 3). Second,  $\log [M]_0/[M]_t$  varies linearly with time, as the result of constancy of the number of growing polymer ends. Third, the maximum efficiency of the initiator should be greater than 95%; actually, neither termination nor chain transfer should take place. Fourth, homogeneous polymerization proceeds very rapidly and is completed within 30 min when 200 equivalents of monomer are fed to the initiation system.

In general, syndiotacticity (rr%) increases with a reduction of the polymerization temperature. In the case of  $\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$ , it increased from 78 to 95.2% as the polymerization temperature was reduced from 25 to  $95^\circ\text{C}$ , but the polydispersity index remained low [3]. Extrapolating the data suggests that syndiotacticity over 97% may be obtained at  $115^\circ\text{C}$ . Polymerization of MMA in both THF and toluene using the organolanthanide initiators produced syndiotactic polymers, despite the fact that the  $\text{RMgX}$  initiator in toluene led to isotactic polymers [15].

The typical initiator systems reported so far for the synthesis of highly syndiotactic poly(MMA) are bulky alkyl lithium  $\text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_4\text{CPh}_2\text{Li}$  [21], Grignard reagents in THF [22], and some  $\text{AlR}_3$  complexes [23]. Although the first initiator in THF reacted rapidly with MMA at  $78^\circ\text{C}$ , the  $M_n$  reached only 10000 with  $M_w/M_n = 1.18$ , while it produced isotactic polymers in toluene. Isobutylmagnesium bromide and vinylbenzylmagnesium bromide in THF at lower temperatures also produced high syndiotacticity, but  $M_n$  remained as low as 14000–18000 and the yields were quite low. When  $i\text{BuMgBr}$  or  $t\text{BuMgBr}$

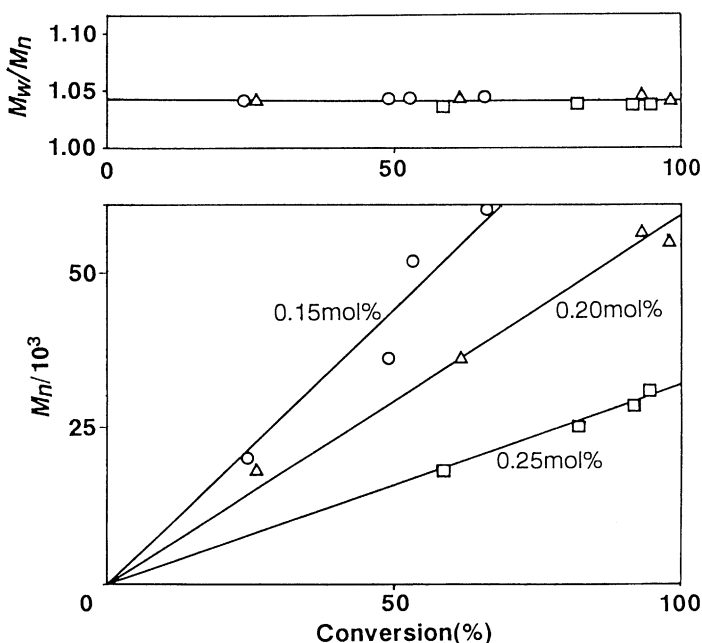


Fig. 3.  $M_w/M_n$  and  $M_n$  vs. conversion plots for poly(MMA) obtained using  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]$

was used in toluene instead of THF, the resulting poly(MMA) had a high isotacticity of 96.7% with  $M_n$  19 900 and  $M_w/M_n$  1.08 [24].  $AlEt_3 \cdot PR_3$  complexes produced a high syndiotacticity, but not a high molecular weight [23].

Ketene silyl acetal/nucleophilic agent systems initiate the polymerization of alkyl methacrylates. These well-known group transfer systems yielded living polymers with atactic sequences at relatively high temperatures [2].  $Me_2C C(OMe)OSiR_3$  and  $R_2POSiMe_3$  can be used as initiators, and tris(dimethylamino) sulfonium bifluoride and  $Et_4NCN$  are frequently used as catalysts. For example, the  $M_w/M_n$  of the resulting poly(MMA) was 1.06 for  $M_n$  3800, and 1.15 for  $M_n$  6300. In the polymerization of butyl acrylate, the molecular weight obtained was only 4800 with an  $M_w/M_n$  of 2.14. Thus, we conclude that organolanthanide-initiated polymerization is superior in obtaining monodisperse high molecular weight poly(MMA) and poly(alkyl acrylate). However, the group transfer systems have some advantages in synthesizing poly(acrylonitrile) and poly(N,N-dimethylacrylamide), which are hardly produced with conventional organolanthanide initiators.

For the organolanthanide system, which allows the living polymerization of MMA, Yasuda et al. [3] studied the dependence of  $M_n$  on the initiator concentration (Fig. 4). When the reaction was conducted at 0 °C, an  $M_n$  of  $530 \times 10^3$  with  $M_w/M_n$  1.04 was obtained quantitatively at an initiator concentration of 0.05 mol%. This  $M_n$  value is the largest ever reported for living polymers. However, when the reaction temperature was lowered to -78 °C,  $M_w/M_n$

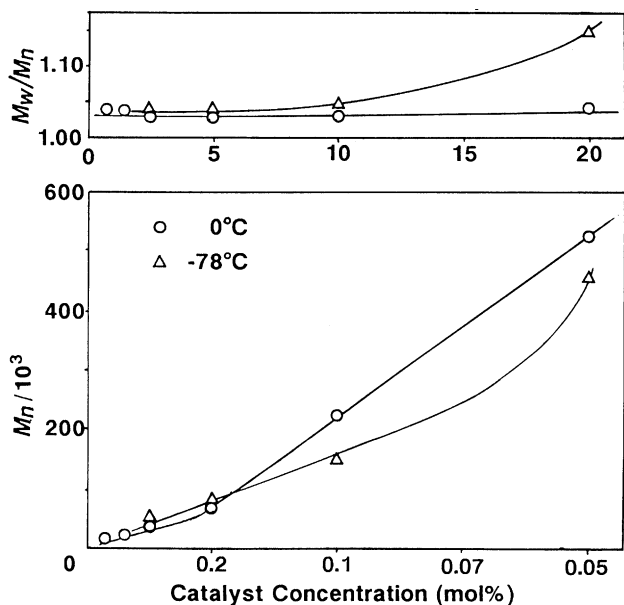
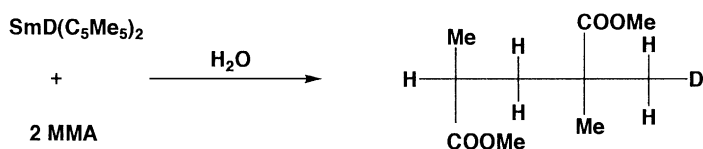


Fig. 4.  $M_n$  and  $M_w/M_n$  vs. catalyst concentration plots, initiator  $[SmH(C_5Me_5)_2]_2$

increased to 1.15, due presumably to the occurrence of undesirable side reactions with water or oxygen contaminants in the monomer or solvent. In order to evaluate the living nature of the polymerization, 160 equivalents of MMA were first polymerized and a polymer of  $M_n = 16 \times 10^3$  was obtained at a quantitative yield. After 30–40 min, 160 equivalents of MMA were added further to the system, which was then maintained at  $0^\circ\text{C}$ . Living polymerization took place after 1 h and produced poly(MMA) of  $M_n = 32 \times 10^3$  with  $M_w/M_n = 1.03$  at 99% yield. The polymer produced after a 10-h reaction had an  $M_n = 53 \times 10^3$  with  $M_w/M_n = 1.03$ , and the yield was still high (78%), indicating that only 22% of the growing ends were “dead” or dormant. Interestingly, such a long life of growing polymer ends has never been observed for other polymeric systems. When *t*BuMgBr- or *i*BuMgBr-initiated polymerization was carried out at  $0^\circ\text{C}$ , the resulting poly(MMA) showed broad polydispersity ( $M_w/M_n = 2.5$ ). This implies the need of a lower temperature for the living polymerization using the RMgX system.

These findings motivated Yasuda and coworkers [3] to isolate the 1:1 or 1:2 adduct of  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  with MMA in order to elucidate the initiation mechanism. They obtained the desired 1:2 adduct as an air-sensitive orange crystal (mp  $132^\circ\text{C}$ ). Upon deuteration it produced  $\text{DCMe}(\text{CO}_2\text{Me})\text{CH}_2\text{CMe}(\text{CO}_2\text{Me})\text{CH}_3$  at an excellent yield (90%), suggesting that it contains either a Sm-enolate or a Sm  $\alpha$ -C bond (Scheme 3). The addition of 100 equivalents of MMA yielded poly(MMA) with  $M_n$  ca.  $11 \times 10^3$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.03$ . This result provides evidence that the 1:2 adduct is a real active species. In this way, Yasuda et al. [3] succeeded for the first time in isolating the intermediate and were able to prove that the initiation process occurs much faster than the propagation process.

Yasuda et al. [3c] also examined the eight-membered structure of  $\text{Sm}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{MMA})_2\text{H}$  by single X-ray analysis ( $R_w = 0.082$ ) (Fig. 5), finding that one of the MMA units is linked to the metal in an enolate form and at the other end the penultimate MMA unit is attached to the metal through its C–O group. Although similar cyclic intermediates have been proposed by Bawn et al. [25] and Cram and Kopecky [26] for the isotactic polymerization of MMA, the isolation of such active species has not been successful. It is expected that, in the initiation step, the hydride attacks the  $\text{CH}_2$  group of MMA, and a transient  $\text{SmOC}(\text{OCH}_3)\text{C}(\text{CH}_3)_2$  species is formed. Then, the incoming MMA molecule is assumed to participate in the 1,4-addition to produce an eight membered cyclic intermediate (Fig. 6). Further addition of MMA to



Scheme 3. Hydrolysis product of the 1:2 adduct

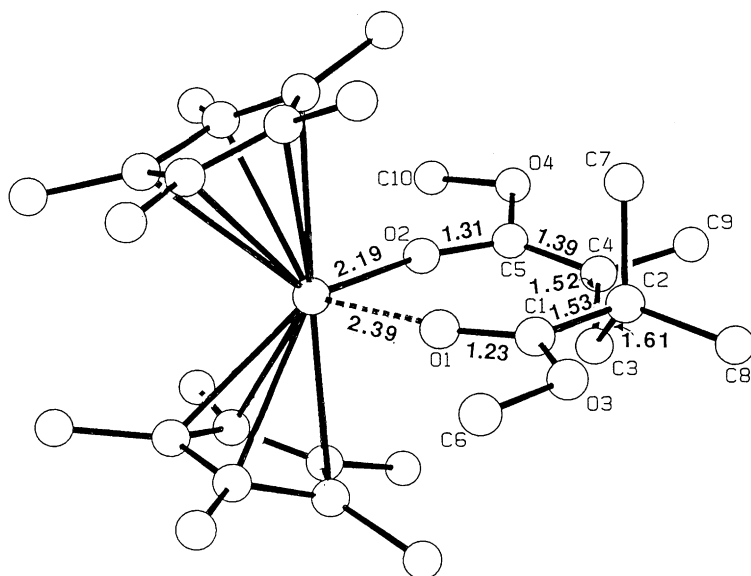


Fig. 5. X-ray structure of  $\text{Sm}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{MMA})_2\text{H}$

the 1:2 addition compound liberates the coordinated ester group and the eight membered cyclic intermediate is again generated. In order to ascertain the above-mentioned initiation mechanism, Yasuda et al. [3c] allowed  $[\text{Y}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{OCHCH}_2]_2$  to react with excess MMA (100 equimolar: monomer/initiator 100 mol/mol) and obtained poly(MMA) with  $M_n$  10 200 and  $M_w/M_n$  1.03 at high yield. However,  $[\text{Y}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{OMe}]_2$  and  $\text{Sm}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{OEt}(\text{Et}_2\text{O})$  were completely inert in the polymerization of MMA. Other related rare earth metal complexes such as  $\text{YMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{OEt}_2)$ ,  $\text{YbMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ ,  $[\text{YMe}(\text{C}_5\text{H}_5)_2]_2$ ,  $\text{SmMe}_2\text{AlMe}_2(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$ ,  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ , and  $\text{LuMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  also showed comparably high initiating activity, and they all allowed living syndiotactic polymerization of MMA, producing polymers with  $M_n$   $65\text{--}120 \times 10^3$  and  $M_w/M_n$  1.03–1.05. The efficiency of these initiators was higher than 90%. Lowering the reaction temperature to  $78^\circ\text{C}$  led to the production of syndiotactic polymers with  $rr$  90% in all cases.

The apparent rate of polymerization (the activity) increased with increasing ionic radius of the metal (Sm < Y < Yb < Lu) and decreased with increasing steric bulkiness of the auxiliary ligands ( $\text{C}_5\text{H}_5$  <  $\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5$ ) [3a]. The former agrees with the order of ionic radii, Sm(1.11 Å) < Y(1.04 Å) < Yb(1.01 Å) < Lu(1.00 Å). More precisely, it conforms to the order of the Cp(centroid)-lanthanide bond length of  $\text{Ln}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{X}$ , i.e., Sm(2.72 Å) < Y(2.65 Å) < Yb(2.64 Å) < Lu(2.63 Å). This suggests that the use of  $\text{LnMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  (Ln = La, 1.17 Å) is preferable to obtain high molecular weight polymers in a short time.

On the basis of the X-ray structural data as well as the mode of polymerization, Yasuda et al. [3a] proposed a coordination anionic mechanism involving an eight membered transition state for the organolanthanide-initiated polymerization of MMA (Fig. 6). The steric control of the polymerization reaction may be ascribed to the intermolecular repulsion between C(7) and C(9) (or the polymer chain), since completely atactic polymerization occurred when the monomer was methyl or ethyl acrylate.

Recently, isotactic polymerization of MMA has also been achieved (mm 94%,  $M_n$   $134 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n$  6.7) by using  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)(\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{-1S,2S,5R-neomenthyl})\text{LaR}$  [ $\text{R} = \text{CH}(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2$  or  $\text{N}(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2$ ] [27], but  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)(\text{C}_5\text{H}_3\text{-1S,2S,5R-menthyl})\text{LnR}$  [ $\text{Ln} = \text{Lu, Sm}$ ;  $\text{R} = \text{CH}(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2$  or  $\text{N}(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2$ ] has been effective in producing a syndiotactic poly(MMA) (rr 69%,  $M_n$   $177 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n$  15.7) (Fig. 7). A possible explanation for this difference is that the menthyl complex produces a syndiotactic polymer via a cycle eight membered intermediate, while the neomenthyl complex produces an isotactic polymer via a noncyclic intermediate. To confirm this concept,  $i\text{Pr}(\text{Cp})(2,7\text{-}t\text{Bu-fluorenyl})\text{YCH}(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2$  was synthesized and used to isotactically polymerize MMA [28]. The resulting polymer had 78–79% syndiotacticity, contrary to expectation. Therefore, it was concluded that stereoregularity varies with a subtle difference in steric bulkiness between the complexes. Actually, isotactic poly(MMA) (mm 97%) was obtained ( $M_n$  200,000,  $M_w/M_n$  1.11) when the nonmetallocene system,  $[(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_3\text{C}]_2\text{Yb}$ , was used [29].

Boff and Novac [6] found a divalent rare earth metal complex,  $(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{Sm}$ , to be a good catalyst for the polymerization of MMA. The initiation started with

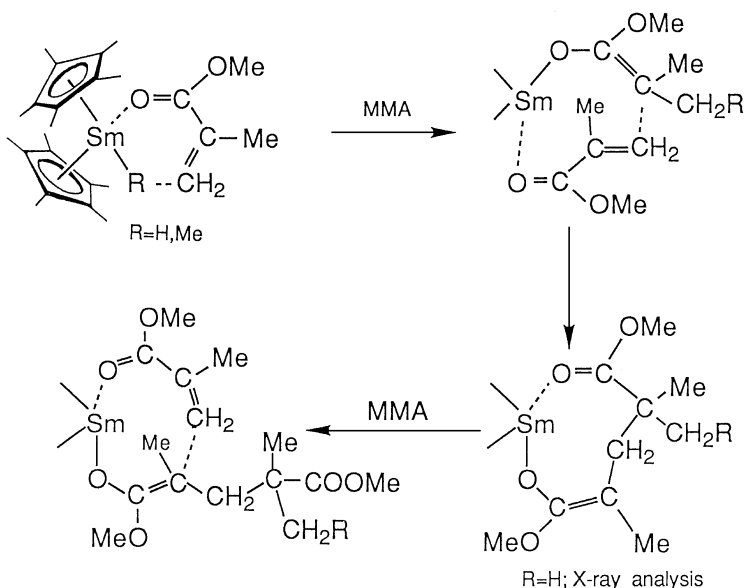


Fig. 6. Initiation mechanism for polymerization of MMA



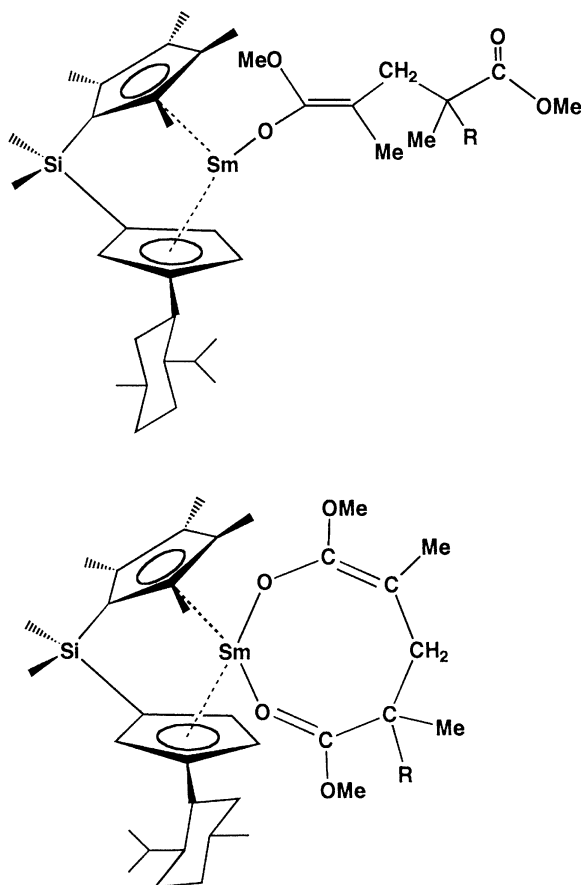


Fig. 7. Intermediates for syndio- and isotactic polymerization of MMA

the coupling of two coordinated MMA molecules to form Sm(III) species. The bisallyl initiator,  $[(C_5Me_5)_2Sm(\mu-\eta^3-CH_2CHCHCH_2)]_2$ , was also effective for the living polymerization of MMA. In this case, MMA must be added to both ends of the butadiene group. In the polymerization of MMA initiated with methylaluminum tetraphenylporphyrine, a sterically crowded Lewis acid such as methylaluminum bis(ortho-substituted phenolate) serves as a very effective accelerator without damaging the living character of polymerization. Thus, the polymer produced in 3 s has a narrow molecular weight distribution ( $M_w/M_n$  1.09) and a sufficiently high molecular weight,  $M_n$  25 500. However, an ortho-nonsubstituted analog and a simple organoaluminum such as trimethylaluminum cause termination [30].

The organolanthanide initiators allowed stereospecific polymerization of ethyl, isopropyl, and *t*-butyl methacrylates (Table 3). The rate of polymerization and the syndiotacticity decreased with increasing bulkiness of the alkyl group in

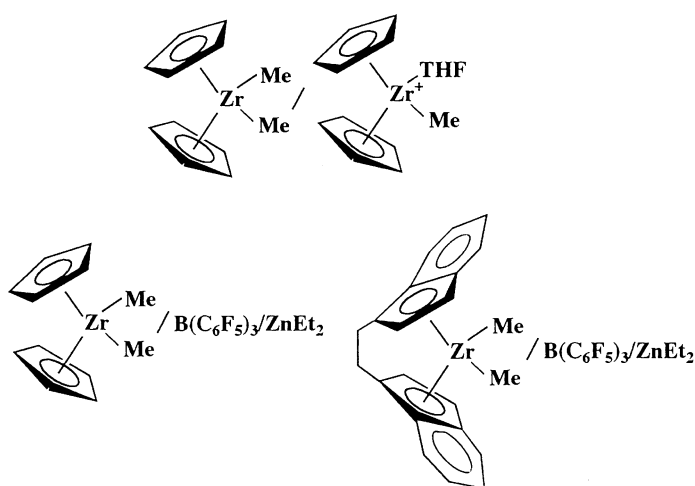
the order Me Et iPr tBu. Butyl methacrylate was also polymerized using  $\text{Nd}(\text{octanoate})_3/\text{AlisoBu}_3$  ( $\text{Al}/\text{Nd}$  7–10), but the molecular weight distribution and stereoregularity were not reported [31].

In general, Ziegler-Natta catalysts such as  $\text{TiCl}_4/\text{MgCl}_2/\text{AlR}_3$  and Kaminsky catalysts such as  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrCl}_2/(\text{AlMe}_2\text{-O})_n$  do not catalyze the polymerization of polar monomers. However, a mixture of cationic species  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}(\text{THF})^+$  and  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}_2$  has been found to do so for MMA [32], allowing syndiotactic poly(MMA) ( $\text{rr}$  80%,  $M_n$  120 000,  $M_w/M_n$  1.2–1.3) to be obtained. Recently, Soga et al. [33] reported the syndio-rich polymerization of MMA catalyzed by  $\text{Cp}_2\text{ZrMe}_2/\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3$  or  $\text{Ph}_3\text{CB}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_4/\text{ZnEt}_2$  and also the isotactic polymerization of MMA catalyzed by  $\text{rac-Et}(\text{ind})_2\text{ZrMe}_2/\text{B}(\text{C}_6\text{F}_5)_3/\text{ZnEt}_2$  (Scheme 4).

**Table 3.** Organolanthanide-initiated polymerization of alkyl methacrylates

| Initiator  | Monomer | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | rr % | Conversion/% |
|--|---------|------------|-----------|------|--------------|
| $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$          | MMA     | 57         | 1.03      | 82.4 | 98           |
|  | EtMA    | 80         | 1.03      | 80.9 | 98           |
|  | iPrMA   | 70         | 1.03      | 77.3 | 90           |
|  | tBuMA   | 63         | 1.42      | 77.5 | 30           |
| $\text{LuMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ | MMA     | 61         | 1.03      | 83.7 | 98           |
|  | EtMA    | 55         | 1.03      | 81.0 | 64           |
|  | iPrMA   | 42         | 1.05      | 80.0 | 63           |
|  | tBuMA   | 52         | 1.53      | 79.5 | 20           |

Polymerization conditions: 0°C in toluene, initiator concentration 0.2 mol%



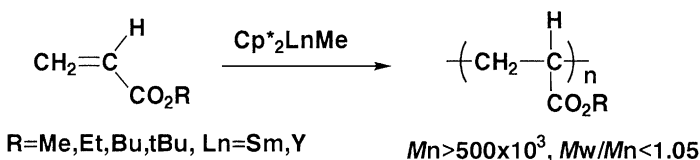
**Scheme 4.** Zirconium catalytic systems useful for polymerization of MMA

### 2.3 Living Polymerization of Alkyl Acrylates

In general, living polymerization of alkyl acrylates is difficult because chain transfer or termination occurs owing to a high sensitivity of the acidic  $\alpha$ -proton to nucleophilic attack. Exceptions are the living polymerization of a bulky acrylic ester catalyzed by the bulky alkyl lithium/inorganic salt (LiCl) system [5] as well as the group transfer polymerization of ethyl acrylate with  $\text{ZnI}_2$  as the catalyst [2]. Aluminum-porphyrin initiator systems also induced the living polymerization of *t*-butyl acrylate [34], but the upper limit of molecular weight attained was ca. 20 000.

Ihara et al. [35] found the efficient initiating properties of  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  and  $\text{YMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  for living polymerization of acrylic esters, i.e., methyl acrylate (MeA), ethyl acrylate (EtA), and butyl acrylate (BuA) (Scheme 5), although the reactions were nonstereospecific (Table 4). The initiator efficiency exceeded 90% except for *t*BuA. Ihara et al. [35] therefore concluded that the reactions occur in living fashion. In fact, the  $M_n$  of poly(BuA) initiated by  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  increased linearly in proportion to the conversion, while  $M_w/M_n$  remained unchanged, irrespective of the initiator concentration. The rate of polymerization increased with increasing bulkiness of alkyl acrylates in the order nBuA > EtA > MeA, but the order was reversed in the case of methacrylic ester systems, MMA > EtMA (ethyl methacrylate) > BuMA (butyl methacrylate). For MeA, the polymerization was completed in 300 s, and both  $M_n$  and conversion increased with the polymerization time. On the other hand, the polymerization was completed in 5 s for EtA and BuA. When the initiator concentration was decreased from 0.1 to 0.02 mol%, high molecular weight poly(EtA) of  $M_n = 400\,000$  with a narrow molecular weight distribution ( $M_w/M_n = 1.05$ ) was obtained, showing the characteristic nature of these initiation systems. In a similar manner, high molecular weight poly(BuA) and poly(MeA) were synthesized successfully.

Ihara et al. [35], who measured the lifetime of the growing polymer end, found that methyl acrylate (200 mmol) in toluene underwent living polymerization with  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  (0.2 mol% of monomer). After completion of the polymerization (1 min), they added the same amount of methyl acrylate (200 mmol) to the polymerization system, but observed no polymerization taking place. In contrast, the polymerization resumed after the system had been kept for 1 min in THF, which indicated that the growing polymer ends were completely living. When this polymerization system was maintained for a longer



Scheme 5. Living polymerization of alkyl acrylates

**Table 4.** Polymerization of alkyl acrylates initiated by organolanthanide complexes

| Initiator  | Monomer | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | Tacticity/%<br>rr | mr | mm | Conversion<br>% | Initiator<br>efficiency/% |
|--|---------|------------|-----------|-------------------|----|----|-----------------|---------------------------|
| SmMe(C <sub>5</sub> Me <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> (THF) | MeA     | 48         | 1.04      | 30                | 50 | 20 | 99              | 89                        |
|  | EtA     | 55         | 1.04      | 51                | 49 |    | 94              | 86                        |
|  | BuA     | 70         | 1.05      | 28                | 53 | 19 | 99              | 91                        |
|  | tBuA    | 15         | 1.03      | 27                | 47 | 26 | 99              | 79                        |
| YMe(C <sub>5</sub> Me <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> (THF)  | MeA     | 50         | 1.07      | 33                | 51 | 16 | 99              | 86                        |
|  | EtA     | 53         | 1.05      | 47                | 53 |    | 96              | 91                        |
|  | BuA     | 72         | 1.04      | 22                | 51 | 27 | 98              | 88                        |
|  | tBuA    | 17         | 1.03      | 25                | 45 | 30 | 99              | 75                        |

Polymerization conditions: 0°C in toluene, initiator concentration 0.2 mol%

time (10 min at 0 °C) all the growing polymer ends were dead. Thus, the final polymer formed had a rather broad molecular weight distribution.

To gain insight into the initiation mechanism, Ihara et al. [35] examined the 1:1 reactions of  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  with methyl acrylate and *t* butyl acrylate. Quenching of the reaction mixture of methyl acrylate and organolanthanide yielded  $\text{CH}_3\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CO}_2\text{Me})\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CO}_2\text{Me})\text{H}$  at 65% yield. More efficient initiating properties were found when *t* butyl acrylate was allowed to react with  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ , yielding  $\text{CH}_3\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CO}_2t\text{Bu})\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CO}_2t\text{Bu})\text{H}$  to 96% at 0 °C upon hydrolysis. Thus, the constitution of the acrylic ester dimer is essentially the same as that observed with the addition of MMA to  $\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$ . Therefore, the formation of an eight-membered intermediate is highly probable in this case too.

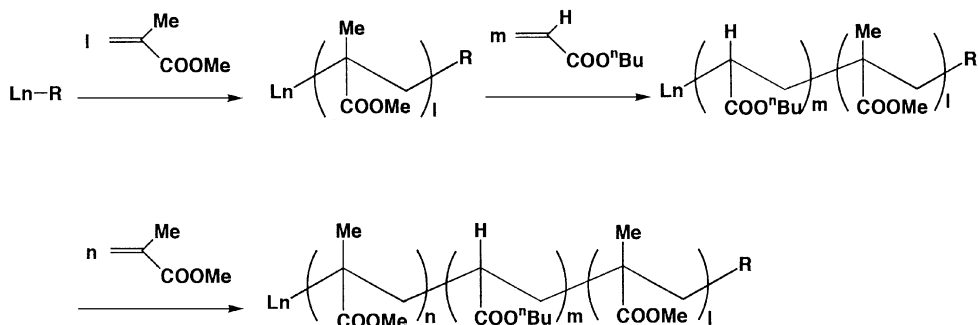
Ihara et al. [35] measured the tacticity at temperatures from 78 to 60 °C, but observed little change. This may be ascribed to the absence of steric repulsion between H(7) and H(9) atoms. The organolanthanide system was found to initiate the living copolymerization of methyl acrylate with ethyl or butyl acrylate and also that of ethyl acrylate with butyl acrylate. Table 5 shows the monomer reactivity ratio determined by using the Fineman-Ross equation. It is seen that the monomer reactivity ratio of methyl acrylate is higher than that of ethyl acrylate, but similar to that of *n* butyl acrylate. By contrast, the monomer reactivity ratios of alkyl acrylates are higher than that of MMA. Although in free radical initiating systems using AIBN, MMA exhibits a higher reactivity than methyl acrylate, i.e.,  $r_1(\text{MMA}) = 1.0$ ,  $r_2(\text{MeA}) = 0.5$ , the reverse is the case in the  $\text{NaNH}_2$  initiating system,  $r_1(\text{MMA}) = 0.1$  and  $r_2(\text{MeA}) = 4.5$  [35c, d]. This implies that block copolymerization occurs preferentially at high conversion in the case of lanthanide initiator even when a mixture of alkyl acrylate and methyl methacrylate is used. In fact, in the random copolymerization of MMA with BuA (charged ration 1:1), the BuA component in the resulting copolymer is higher than 88% when the conversion reaches 50%.

ABA-type triblock copolymerization of MMA/BuA/MMA should give rubberlike elastic polymers. The resulting copolymers should have two vitreous outer blocks, where the poly(MMA) moiety (hard segment) associates with the nodules, and the central soft poly(BuA) elastomeric block provides rubber elasticity. Ihara et al. [35] were the first to synthesize an AB-type block copolymer, with MMA (190 equivalents of initiator) first polymerized by

**Table 5.** Monomer reactivity ratios of alkyl acrylates and MMA

|          | $r_1$  | $r_2$ | $r_1 \cdot r_2$ |
|----------|--------|-------|-----------------|
| MeA/EtA  | 0.959  | 0.597 | 0.573           |
| MeA/nBuA | 0.426  | 0.578 | 0.246           |
| EtA/nBuA | 0.535  | 0.834 | 0.466           |
| MMA/MeA  | 0.0145 | 19.9  | 0.289           |
| MMA/EtA  | 0.0084 | 15.9  | 0.133           |
| MMA/nBuA | 0.0048 | 42.6  | 0.205           |

Initiator  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  in toluene at 0 °C



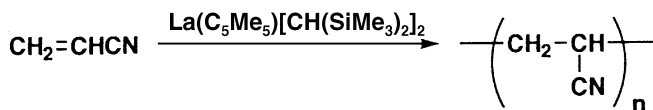
**Scheme 6.** ABA triblock copolymerization of MMA/butyl acrylate/MMA

**Table 6.** Mechanical properties of triblock copolymers

| Copolymer                    | Tensile modulus (MPa) | Tensile strength (MPa) | Elongation (%) | Izod impact strength (J/m) | Compression set/% (70 °C, 22 h) |
|------------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|----------------|----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Poly(MMA)                    | 610                   | 80                     | 21             | 18                         | 100                             |
| poly(MMA/BuA/MMA) (20:47:33) | 75                    | 27                     | 83             | 383 (N.B.)                 | 101                             |
| poly(MMA/BuA/MMA) (25:51:24) | 46                    | 22                     | 81             | 390 (N.B.)                 | 103                             |
| poly(MMA/BuA/MMA) (8:72)     | 0.8                   | 0.7                    | 163            | 400 (N.B.)                 | 58                              |
| poly(MMA/BuA/MMA) (6:91:3)   | 0.2                   | 0.1                    | 246            | 410 (N.B.)                 | 97                              |
| poly(MMA/EtA/MMA) (26:48:26) | 119                   | 22                     | 276            | 34                         | 62                              |

N.B., not break

SmMe(C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>5</sub>)<sub>2</sub>(THF) and then BuA (290 equivalents of initiator) polymerized to the poly(MMA). It consisted of 52 MMA and 48 BuA with  $M_n = 47\,000$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.04$ . When the BuA was first polymerized and MMA was polymerized after the system had been maintained for 5 min, the resulting polymer had a lower molecular weight ( $M_n = 21\,700$ ) and a higher polydispersity ( $M_w/M_n = 1.19$ ). This result may be due to partial deactivation of the living polymer chain end during the maintaining the system at ambient temperature. Thus, BuA was added immediately after MMA was polymerized for 30 min; after BuA was polymerized for 2 min, MMA was again added (Scheme 6). The first step produced poly(MMA) with  $M_n = 15\,000$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.04$ , the second step produced poly(MMA-blo-BuA) with  $M_n = 36\,000$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.05$  (MMA/BuA 43/57), and the final step produced poly(MMA-blo-BuA-blo-MMA) with  $M_n = 144\,000$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.09$  (MMA/BuA/MMA 13/15/72). Thus, the MMA block was lengthened longer than expected, which may be attributed to partial deactivation of the living polymer chain end of poly(MMA/BuA). Thus, a mixture of MMA and BuA was added at once to the living polymer chain end of



Scheme 7. Polymerization of acrylonitrile

poly(MMA) (BuA polymerized more rapidly than MMA), and it was found that this treatment allowed living triblock copolymerization to proceed preferentially and produced various triblock copolymers [35]. Table 6 shows the typical mechanical properties of the copolymers thus obtained. It is seen that homo-poly(MMA) has a large tensile modulus and great tensile strength, but is poor in elongation and Izod impact strength. Furthermore, homo-poly(MMA) shows no decrease in compression set (typical rubber shows ca. 20%). In contrast, the triblock copolymer (8:72:20) shows a 58% compression set, and its Izod impact strength is in the range “not break” (400 J/m), while its hardness is lowered to 20 JISA. Its most interesting property is increased elongation (163%). By contrast, for the triblock copolymers composed of MMA/BuA/MMA (6:91:3 and 25:51:24 ratios), the compression set increases to 97 or 101%, which indicates that these polymers are not elastic. The elongation of the 25:51:24 triblock copolymer is 81%, and that of the 6:91:3 copolymer is 246%. Thus a suitable composition ratio is required to obtain elastic triblock copolymers.

#### 2.4 Polymerization of Acrylonitrile

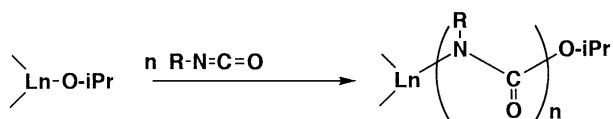
Ren et al. [36] carried out polymerization of acrylonitrile using  $[(t\text{Bu-Cp})_2\text{NdCH}_3]_2$  to obtain an  $M_n$  of  $2.6 \sim 8.2 \times 10^4$  at 10–28% yield, and showed that the product was atactic (rr 26–30%, rm 41–46%, mm 27–30%) (Scheme 7). Hu et al. [37] found a bulky phenoxy complex,  $\text{Sm}[\text{O-C}_6\text{H}_2\text{-2,6-(}t\text{Bu)-4-Me}]_2$ , initiates the atactic polymerization of acrylonitrile at 60 °C in toluene and obtained  $M_n = 2.1 \times 10^4$  when the conversion reached 72%. According to recent work by Tanaka et al. [11],  $\text{La}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)[\text{CH}(\text{SiMe}_3)_2]_2$  has good catalytic activity for the polymerization of acrylonitrile (Scheme 6). However, the product was very poor in stereoregularity (rr 26–29%, mr 42–46%, mm 25–32%), as was the case with such anion-type catalysts as BuLi and  $t\text{BuMgCl}$  [38].

### 3 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerizations of Alkyl Isocyanates

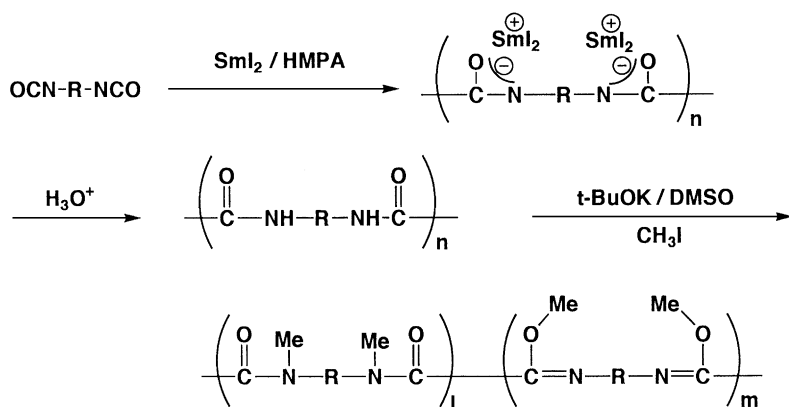
Polysocyanates have attracted much attention owing to their liquid crystalline properties, stiff-chain solution characteristics, and induced optical activities associated with helical chain conformation (Scheme 8). Pattern and Novak [39]

discovered that titanium complexes such as  $\text{TiCl}_3(\text{OCH}_2\text{CF}_3)$  and  $(\text{C}_5\text{H}_5)\text{TiCl}_2(\text{OCH}_2\text{CF}_3)$  initiate the living polymerization of isocyanates, producing polymers with narrow molecular weight distributions. When hexyl isocyanate was added to  $\text{TiCl}_3(\text{OCH}_2\text{CF}_3)$ , the polymerization took place at room temperature, with  $M_n$  increasing linearly with the initial monomer-to-initiator mole ratio or the monomer conversion ( $M_w/M_n$  1.1–1.3) over a wide range. Recently, Fukuwatari et al. [40] have found lanthanum isopropoxide to serve as a novel anionic initiator for the polymerization of hexyl isocyanate at low temperature ( $-78^\circ\text{C}$ ), which led to very high molecular weight ( $M_n$   $10^6$ ) and rather narrow molecular weight distribution ( $M_w/M_n$  2.08–3.16). Other lanthanide alkoxides such as  $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3$ ,  $\text{Yb}(\text{OiPr})_3$ , and  $\text{Y}(\text{OiPr})_3$  also induced the polymerization of hexyl isocyanate. Furthermore, it was shown [40] that butyl, isobutyl, octyl, and *m*-tolyl isocyanates were polymerizable with lanthanum isopropoxide as the initiator. However, *t*-butyl and cyclohexyl isocyanates failed to polymerize with this initiator under the same conditions. When the reaction temperature was raised to ambient temperature, only cyclic trimers were produced at high yields. In an unpublished work, Tanaka et al. [11] showed that  $\text{La}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2[\text{CH}(\text{SiMe}_3)_2]$  also initiates the polymerization of butyl isocyanate and hexyl isocyanate at 50–60% yields.

It has been shown recently that the selective reductive homo-coupling polymerization of aromatic diisocyanates via one electron transfer promoted by samarium iodide in the presence of hexamethylphosphoramide [ $\text{PO}(\text{NMe}_2)_3$ ] (HMPA) can produce poly(oxamide)s in nearly quantitative yield (Scheme 9).



Scheme 8. Organolanthanide-initiated polymerization of alkylisocyanate



Scheme 9. Lanthanide-initiated polymerization of diisocyanate



The polymers obtained were insoluble in common organic solvents. The alkylation of poly(oxamide)s with methyl iodide or alkyl bromide at the presence of potassium *t*-butoxide gave readily soluble alkylated polymers at good yield. In either case, the alkylation was almost complete, and both N- and O-alkylation proceeded. The ratio of N- and O-methylation was found to be 64:36 by  $^1\text{H-NMR}$ , and that of N- and O-alkylation was 3:1 by  $^{13}\text{C-NMR}$  analysis. The  $\text{SmI}_2(\text{HMPA})$ -initiated polymerization system was applied to a variety of diisocyanates including diphenylmethanediisocyanate, toluene 2,6-diisocyanate, 2,6-naphthyl diisocyanate, and *o*-toluidine diisocyanate, producing polymers with molecular weights of 2000–9000. TGA measurements showed  $T_{\text{d}10}$  to be in the range of 248–320 °C [41, 42].

## 4 Ring-Opening Polymerization of Cyclic Monomers

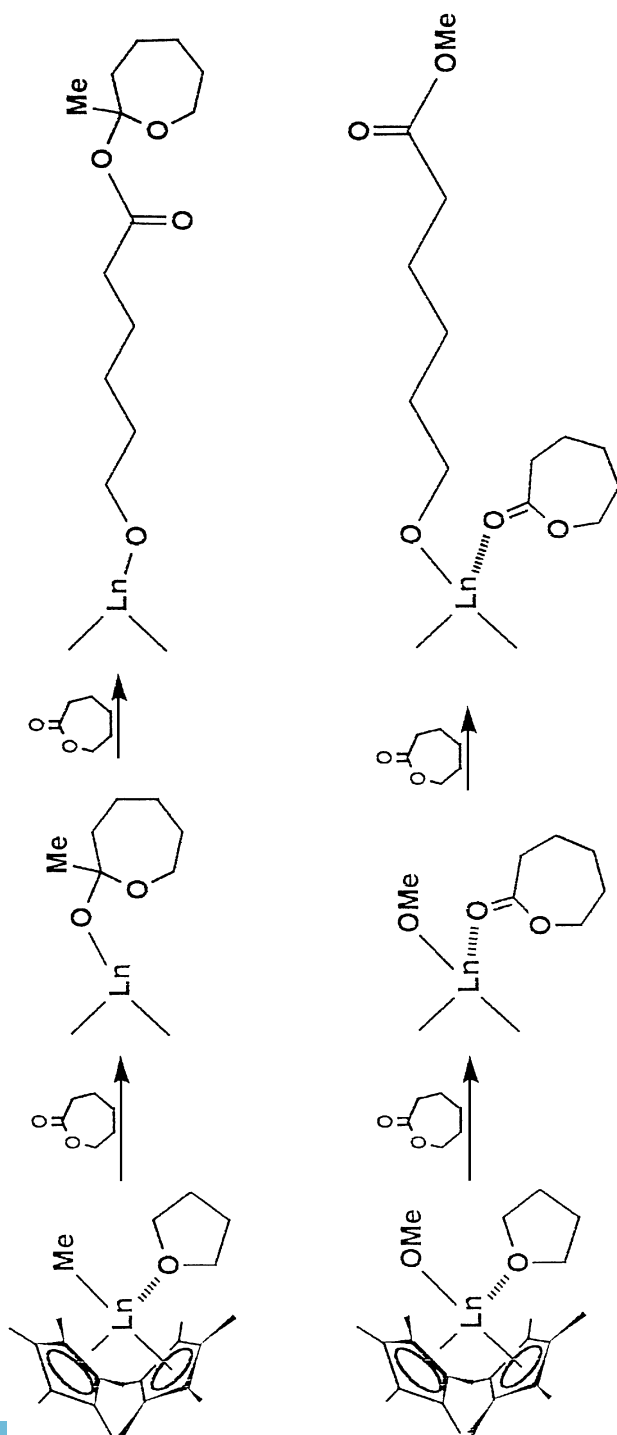
### 4.1 Living Polymerization of Lactones

$\text{AlEt}_3\text{-H}_2\text{O}$  or  $\text{AlEt}_3$  catalyzed polymerization of  $\beta$ -methylpropiolactone and  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone has been reported [43, 44], but this polymerization generally gives a broad molecular weight distribution. Yamashita et al. [45] explored the polymerization of various lactones [including  $\beta$ -propiolactone (PL),  $\beta$ -methylpropiolactone (MePL),  $\delta$ -valerolactone (VL), and  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone (CL)] initiated by single organolanthanides obtained polymers with narrow molecular weight distributions, and found that VL and CL led to living polymerization yielding polymers with  $M_w/M_n$  1.05–1.10 at quantitative yields (Table 7). For  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone,  $M_n$  obtained with the  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  or  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  system increased with increasing conversion, but  $M_w/M_n$  remained constant, irrespective of the conversion. For  $\beta$ -propiolactone, the use of  $\text{YOR}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  was more favorable. On the other hand, though divalent organolanthanide complexes initiated the polymerization of lactones, the resulting polymers had rather broad molecular weight distributions [46].  $\text{Nd}(\text{acac})_3 \cdot 3\text{H}_2\text{O}/\text{AlR}_3$  and  $\text{Nd}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{AlR}_3$  initiators were effective in the ring-opening

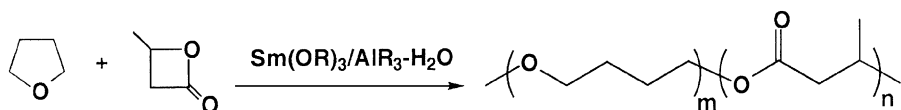
**Table 7.** Living polymerization of lactones with organolanthanide complexes

| Initiator  | Monomer | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ | Conversion/% |
|--|---------|------------|-----------|--------------|
| $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ | VL      | 75.2       | 1.07      | 80.1 (7 h)   |
|  | CL      | 109.4      | 1.09      | 92.0 (7 h)   |
| $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$          | VL      | 65.7       | 1.08      | 90.5 (7 h)   |
|  | CL      | 71.1       | 1.19      | 28.7 (5 h)   |
| $[\text{YOMe}(\text{C}_5\text{H}_5)_2]_2$          | CL      | 162.2      | 1.10      | 87.5 (5 h)   |
|  | PL      | 60.5       | 3.0       | 94.5 (5 h)   |

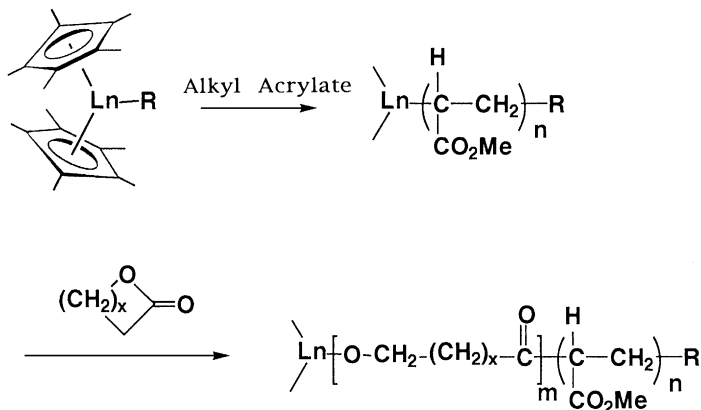
PL, propiolactone; VL, varelolactone; CL, caprolactone; Polymerization, 0 °C in toluene



Scheme 10. Proposed mechanism for initiation of lactone polymerization



Scheme 11. Copolymerization of THF with  $\beta$ -methylpropiolactone



Scheme 12. Block copolymerization of MMA with lactones

polymerization of caprolactone, but no data for molecular weight distribution were reported [47].  $\text{Ln}(\text{OiPr})_3$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{La, Pr, Nd, Gd, Y}$ ) also catalyzed the polymerization of CL, but the polydispersity index was larger ( $M_w/M_n = 1.2\text{--}2.4$ ) than that obtained with  $\text{Ln}(\text{C}_5\text{H}_5)_2\text{Me}(\text{THF})$  [48]. Furthermore,  $(2,6\text{-}t\text{Bu}_2\text{-4-Me-C}_6\text{H}_2)_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_4$  initiated the polymerization of CL to form a polymer with  $M_n$  of  $15\text{--}16 \times 10^4$  and  $M_w/M_n$  of 1.6.

At the early stage of the reaction of lactones with  $\text{LnOR}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$ , 1 mol of  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone may attach to the metal, as is the case for the reaction of  $\text{YCl}_3$  with  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone, giving the first six-coordinate mer complex,  $\text{YCl}_3 \cdot (\epsilon\text{-caprolactone})_3$  in which each caprolactone molecule is attached as a monodentate ligand through its carbonyl oxygen [49]. The polymerization starts with the attachment of  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone to form the 1:1 complex  $\text{LnOR}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\epsilon\text{-caprolactone})$ , and in its propagation step the alkoxide attacks the C=O group to produce  $\text{LnO}(\text{CH}_2)_5\text{C}(\text{O})\text{OR}-(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\epsilon\text{-caprolactone})$  [50]. In the  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  initiator system, the reaction is initiated by the attack of  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone or  $\delta$ -valerolactone to give the acetal and ring opening follows. This process has been confirmed by  $^{13}\text{C}$ -NMR studies of the stoichiometric reaction products (Scheme 10).

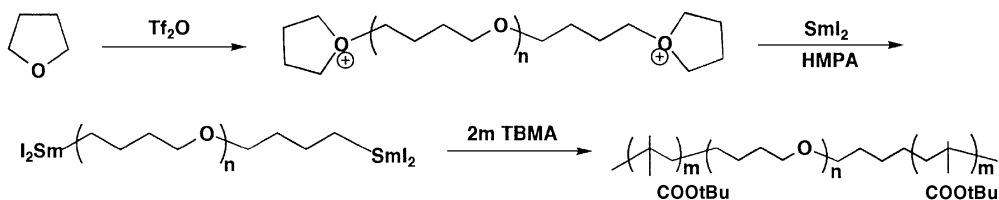
The above organolanthanide complexes are less effective in obtaining high molecular weight polymers of  $\beta$ -methylpropiolactone. However, random

copolymerization of  $\beta$ -methylpropiolactone with THF occurred upon initiation with the  $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlEt}_3\text{-H}_2\text{O}$  system (1:5–1:10) (Scheme 11), although the  $\text{AlEt}_3\text{-H}_2\text{O}$  system was completely inert in the polymerization of tetrahydrofuran (THF) [51]. The polymers produced were 43/57–24/76 in the lactone/THF ratio with an  $M_n$  of 10 000–200 000 and an  $M_w/M_n$  of 1.08–1.26. In this system, some cationic initiator is supposed to be formed when the two components are mixed.

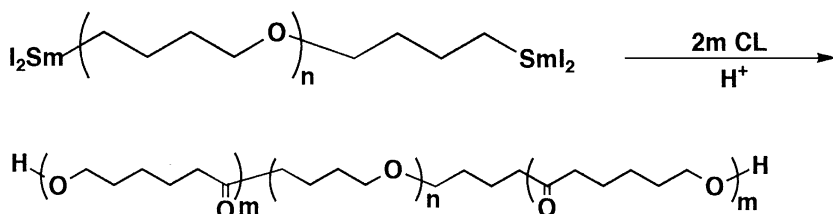
Anionic block copolymerizations of MMA with lactones proceeded smoothly to give copolymers with  $M_w/M_n$  1.11–1.23 when the monomers were added in this order. However, when the order of addition was reversed, no copolymerization took place [3c], i.e., no addition of MMA to the polylactone active end group occurred (Scheme 12).

## 4.2 Polymerization of Tetrahydrofuran

The ring-opening polymerization of tetrahydrofuran (THF) was first reported by Meerwein [52], who used the trialkyloxonium salt as the initiator. Recently, Jin et al. [53] found that the  $\text{Ln}(\text{CF}_3\text{COO})_3/\text{AlHBU}_2/\text{propylene oxide}$  (1/4/1) system allowed THF to polymerize at high yield (50–55%). Nomura et al. [54] succeeded in a quantitative one-pot transformation of the cationic growing centers of telechelic poly(THF) into anionic ones by using samarium (II) iodide/HMPA. The transformed poly(THF) macrodianion initiated the polymerization of *t*-butyl methacrylate (*t*BuMA) with quantitative initiation efficiency,



Scheme 13. Copolymerization of THF with TBMA



Scheme 14. Copolymerization of THF with caprolactone

and a unimodal triblock copolymer of *t*BuMA and THF was obtained (Scheme 13). According to Nomura et al. [55], the transformed poly(THF) macroanion is active in the living polymerization of CL producing an ABA-type triblock copolymer of CL with THF (Scheme 14).

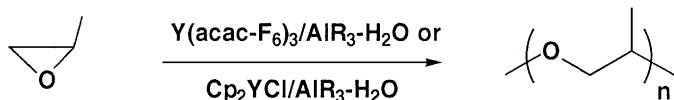
### 4.3 Stereospecific Polymerization of Oxiranes

Such organolanthanide(III) complexes as  $\text{LnMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  or  $\text{LnH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  do not initiate the polymerization of oxiranes, but more complex systems like  $\text{Ln}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{Ln}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  (2-EP; di-2-ethylhexylphosphate) do this with good initiation activity [56]. High molecular weight poly(ethylene oxide) is one of the common water-soluble polymers useful as adhesives, surfactants, plasticizers, and dispersants as well as for sizes. Poly(ethylene oxide) of  $M_n = 2.85 \times 10^6$  was obtained with the  $\text{Y}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AliBu}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system at a ratio of  $\text{Y}/\text{Al}/\text{H}_2\text{O} = 1/6/3$ . The initiator activity depended upon the molar ratio of the components. Polymerization of propylene oxide was reported to proceed with the  $\text{Ln}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system, and it was found that light rare earth elements (Y, La, Pr, Nd, Sm) produced very high molecular weight poly(propylene oxide) at  $\text{Al}/\text{Ln} = 6$  in a short period of time (2 h) in toluene [57]. It was also found that the  $\text{Nd}(\text{acac-F}_3)_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Y}, \text{Nd}$ ) systems [58] gave isotactic poly(propylene oxide), while the  $\text{Cp}_2\text{LnCl}/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$ ,  $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$ , or  $\text{Y}(\text{2-ethylhexanoate})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system produced relatively low molecular weight isotactic species of this polymer (Table 8, Scheme 15).

Random copolymerization of propylene oxide with ethylene oxide proceeded smoothly with the  $\text{Nd}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system at  $80^\circ\text{C}$  [59]. From

**Table 8.** Polymerization of propylene oxide

| Initiator   | Polymer   |
|---|---|
| $\text{Ln}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$<br>(Ln = La, Pr, Nd, Sm, Eu, Y) | Head-to-tail, isotactic                             |
| $\text{Y}(\text{acac-F}_6)_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$                              | $M_n = 14.2 \times 10^4$ , $M_w/M_n = 4.28$ mm, 70% |
| $\text{Nd}(\text{acac-F}_3)_3/\text{AlMe}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$                             | $M_n = 97.6 \times 10^4$ , $M_w/M_n = 3.86$ mm, 72% |
| $\text{Cp}_2\text{YCl}/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$                                    | $M_n = 24.8 \times 10^4$ , $M_w/M_n = 4.69$ mm, 51% |
| $\text{Y}(\text{2-ethylhexanoate})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$                       | $M_n = 32.6 \times 10^4$ , $M_w/M_n = 3.41$ mm, 44% |
| $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$                                 | $M_n = 6.6 \times 10^4$ , $M_w/M_n = 1.75$ mm, 36%  |

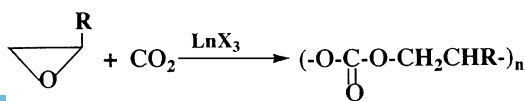


**Scheme 15.** Polymerization of propylene oxide

the copolymerization composition curve, the monomer reactivity ratios were evaluated to be  $r_1(\text{EO}) = 1.60$  and  $r_2(\text{PO}) = 0.45$ . The conversion increased with an increase in the Al/Nd ratio and was saturated at a molar ratio of 16. The  $^{13}\text{C}$ -NMR spectrum of the random copolymer clearly indicated the existence of the propylene oxide-ethylene oxide linkages in the polymer chains. Since the  $\text{Nd}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system generates a growing poly(propylene oxide) chain having a very long life, block copolymerization with ethylene oxide can be achieved successfully. The  $\text{Ln}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AliBu}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  (1 : 8 : 4) systems, especially in the case of an Nd derivative, also initiated the polymerization of epichlorohydrin (EPH) to yield a polymer of  $M_v = 16.5 \times 10^5$  with 21% crystallinity, and a remarkable solvent effect was observed [60]. Toluene is used preferably; aliphatic hydrocarbons are not suitable because poly(epichlorohydrin) precipitates from the solvent during the polymerization. The relative monomer reactivities evaluated for the propylene oxide (PO)-allyl glycidylether (AGE) system were  $r_1(\text{PO}) = 2.0$  and  $r_2(\text{AGE}) = 0.5$ , and those for the epichlorohydrin-AGE system were  $r_1(\text{EPH}) = 0.5$  and  $r_2(\text{AGE}) = 0.4$  [60]. This combination of monomer reactivity ratios indicates that the polymerization with  $\text{Ln}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AliBu}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  follows a coordination anionic mechanism, but that with the  $\text{AliBu}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system follows a cationic polymerization mechanism. The ability to produce high molecular weight polymers is in the order Nd > La > Sm > Pr > Dy > Y > Gd > Yb > Eu.

Although the copolymerization of propylene oxide with  $\text{CO}_2$  takes place effectively with organozinc additives or the (tetraphenyl) porphyrin-AlCl system [61], the copolymerization of epichlorohydrin with  $\text{CO}_2$  seldom occurs with these catalysts. Shen et al. [62] showed that a rare earth metal catalyst such as the  $\text{Nd}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AliBu}_3$  (Al/Nd = 8) system was very effective for the copolymerization of epichlorohydrin with  $\text{CO}_2$  (30–40 atm) at  $60^\circ\text{C}$  (Scheme 16). The content of  $\text{CO}_2$  in the copolymer reached 23–24 mol % when 1,4-dioxane was used as solvent.

The  $\text{ZnEt}_2/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  [63],  $\text{AlEt}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  [64], and Cd salt [65] systems are well-known initiators for the polymerization of propylene sulfide. Shen et al. [66] examined this polymerization with the  $\text{Ln}(\text{2-EP})_3/\text{AliBu}_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system and found that high molecular weight polymers were produced at a low concentration of Nd ( $6.04 \times 10^{-3}$  mol/l) and at a ratio of Nd/Al/ $\text{H}_2\text{O} = 1/8/4$ . The polymerization activity decreased in the order Yb > Pr > Nd > Eu > Lu > Gd > Dy > Ho > Er. The  $^{13}\text{C}$ -NMR spectrum indicated that  $\beta$ -cleavage occurs preferentially over the  $\alpha$ -cleavage and the ratio of these ring openings changes little with the initiator system or the polymerization temperature. The polymers obtained were amorphous according to DSC and XRD analyses. Shen et al. [67] also showed that chlorotrimethylthiirane



**Scheme 16.** Random copolymerization of oxirane with  $\text{CO}_2$

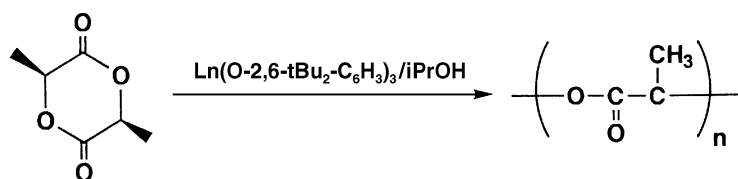
(1-chloromethylethylene sulfide) can be polymerized to high molecular weight polymers ( $[\eta] \times 10^2 \text{ dl/g}$  4–5) by using  $\text{Nd}(\text{P}_{204})_3/\text{AlR}_3$  ( $\text{P}_{204}$   $[\text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_3(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_3)\text{CHCH}_2\text{O}]_2\text{P}(\text{O})\text{OH}$ ) at a 1:12 ratio. Conversions were higher than 80%. Thus far, this monomer has not led to high molecular weight polymers regardless of catalyst.

#### 4.4 Polymerization of Lactide

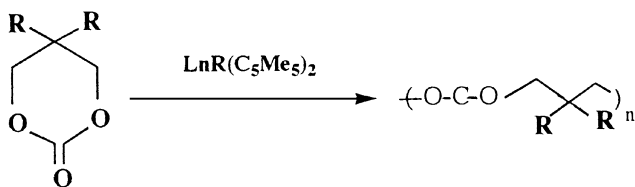
Shen et al. [68] was succeeded in the ring-opening polymerization of racemic D, L-lactide using  $\text{Nd}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}(\text{iBu})_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  (1:5:2.5),  $\text{Nd}(\text{P}_{204})_3/\text{Al}(\text{iBu})_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$ ,  $\text{Nd}(\text{P}_{507})_3/\text{Al}(\text{iBu})_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  [ $\text{P}_{507}$   $(\text{iC}_8\text{H}_{17}\text{O})_2\text{P}(\text{O})\text{OH}$ ], and  $\text{Nd}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}(\text{iBu})_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  systems, obtaining polymers with molecular weights  $M_n$   $3.1\text{--}3.6 \times 10^4$  and conversions larger than 94%. When the  $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}(\text{iBu})_3/\text{H}_2\text{O}$  system was used, almost the same results were obtained irrespective of the metals used (La, Pr, Nd, Sm, Gd, Ho, Tm). Divalent  $(2,6\text{-}t\text{Bu}_2\text{-4-Me-phenyl})_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_4$  was also found to be active in the polymerization of D, L-lactide at  $80^\circ\text{C}$  in toluene, giving  $M_n$  of  $1.5\text{--}3.5 \times 10^4$  [69]. A more recent finding is that the  $\text{Ln}(\text{O-}2,6\text{-}t\text{Bu}_2\text{-C}_6\text{H}_3)_3/\text{iPrOH}$  (1:1–1:3) catalyst system initiates a smooth homo-polymerization of L-lactide, CL (caprolactone), and VL (valerolactone) and produces relatively high molecular weights ( $M_n$   $24 \times 10^3$ ) with low polydispersity indices ( $M_w/M_n$  1.2–1.3) (Scheme 17). Ring-opening polymerization of D, L-lactide was also carried out by using  $\text{Ln}(\text{OiPr})_3$  as the catalyst at  $90^\circ\text{C}$  in toluene. The catalytic activity increased in the order La > Nd > Dy > Y and a molecular weight of  $4.27 \times 10^4$  (conversion 80%) was obtained [70]. However, the molecular weight distribution is not clear at present. A kinetic study [10] showed that the rate of polymerization follows the first order in both monomer and initiator. The block copolymerization of CL with L-lactide proceeded effectively and produced a polymer with a very narrow molecular weight distribution ( $M_w/M_n$  1.16). On the other hand, the addition of CL to the living poly(L-lactide) end was not effective.

#### 4.5 Polymerization of Cyclic Carbonates

Living polymerization of trimethylenecarbonate (TMC) and 2,2-dimethyltrimethylenecarbonate readily occurred in toluene at ambient temperature



Scheme 17. Polymerization of L-lactide



**Scheme 18.** Polymerization of cyclic carbonate

when  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  or  $\text{YMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  was used as the initiator, yielding polymers with an  $M_n$  of  $3\text{--}5 \times 10^4$  and very low polydispersity ( $M_w/M_n$  1.0–1.1) (Scheme 18) [71]. However, no detailed studies regarding its initiation and propagation mechanisms have been made as yet. Block copolymerization of trimethylenecarbonate with  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone was carried out using  $\text{Ln}(\text{ethyl acetoacetate})_2(\text{O-isoPr})$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Y, Nd}$ ) as the initiator [72]. CL was added to the poly(TMC) end or TMC to the living poly(CL) end, with the formed polymers having  $M_n$   $4\text{--}5 \times 10^4$  and  $M_w/M_n$  1.2–1.4.

## 5 Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Polymerization of Olefins, Dienes, and Acetylenes

### 5.1 Stereospecific Polymerization of Olefins

Bulky organolanthanide(III) complexes such as  $\text{LnH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{La, Nd}$ ) were found to catalyze with high efficiency the polymerization of ethylene [73]. These hydrides are, however, thermally unstable and cannot be isolated as crystals. Therefore, thermally more stable bulky organolanthanides were synthesized by introducing four trimethylsilyl groups into the  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}$ -bridged Cp ligand, as shown in Fig. 8. The reaction of the dilithium salt of this ligand with anhydrous  $\text{SmCl}_3$  produced a mixture of two stereo-isomeric complexes. The respective isomers were isolated by utilizing their different solubility in hexane; their structures were determined by X-ray crystallography. One isomer has a  $\text{C}_2$  symmetric (racemic) structure in which two trimethylsilyl groups are located at the 2,4-position of the Cp rings, while the other has a  $\text{C}_1$  symmetric structure in which two trimethylsilyl groups are located at the 2,4- and 2,3-positions of each Cp ring. Both were converted to alkyl derivatives by reaction with bis(trimethylsilyl) methyl lithium [74] (Fig. 9). The  $\text{Cp}'\text{-Sm-Cp}'$  angle of the racemic-type precursor is  $107^\circ$ , which is about  $15^\circ$  smaller than that of non-bridged  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$ .

Meso-type ligands were synthesized by forcing two trimethylsilyl groups to be located at the 3-position of the ligand with the introduction of two bridges (Fig. 10) [74]. Actually, the complexation of this ligand with  $\text{YCl}_3$  yielded



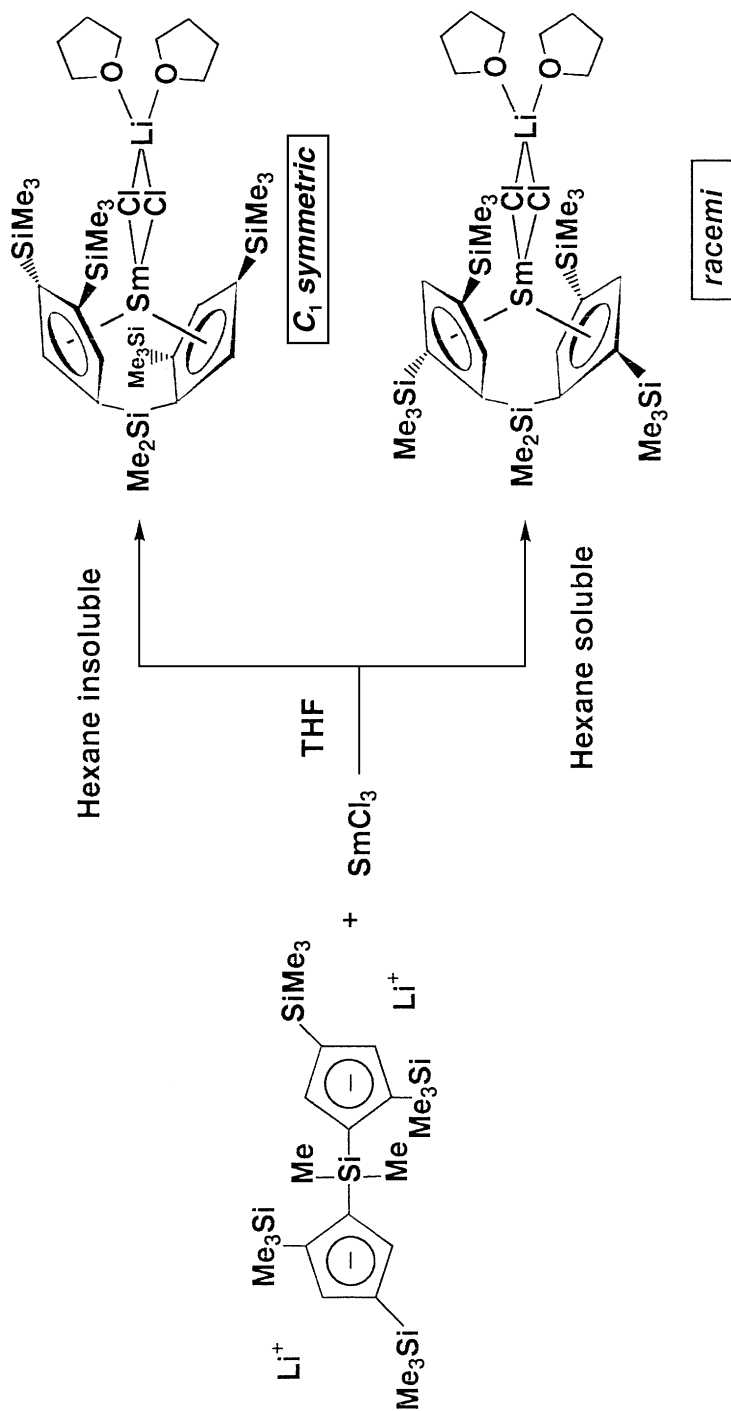


Fig. 8. Formation of organolanthanide(III) complexes

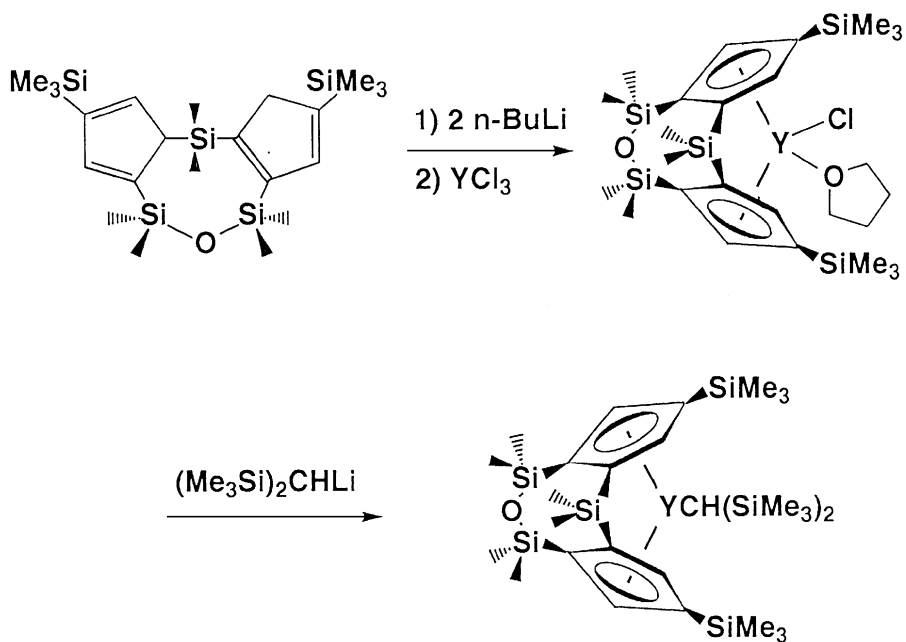


Fig. 9. Preparation of meso Me<sub>2</sub>Si(SiMe<sub>2</sub>OSiMe<sub>2</sub>)(3-SiMe<sub>3</sub>-C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>)<sub>2</sub>YCH(SiMe<sub>3</sub>)<sub>2</sub>

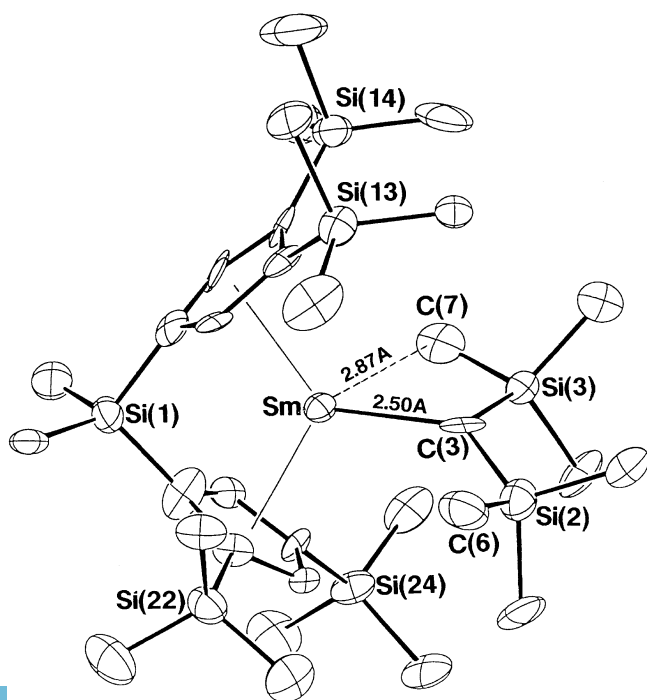


Fig. 10. X-ray structure of C<sub>1</sub> symmetric Me<sub>2</sub>Si[2(3),4-(SiMe<sub>3</sub>)<sub>2</sub>C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>]<sub>2</sub>SmCH(SiMe<sub>3</sub>)<sub>2</sub>

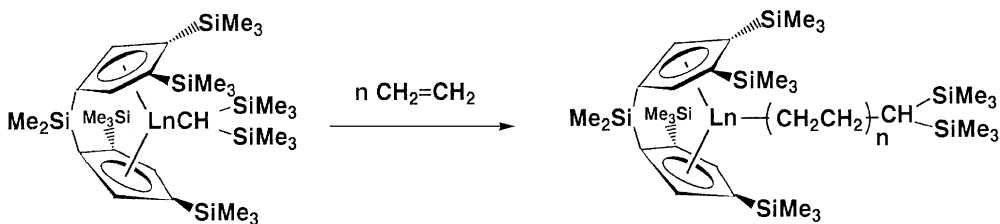
a meso-type complex, and the structure of the complex was determined by X-ray analysis. Yasuda et al. [74] were also able to synthesize the meso-type alkyl complex in a similar way.

Table 9 summarizes the results of ethylene polymerization with these organolanthanide(III) complexes. Interestingly, only  $C_1$ -type complexes can initiate the polymerization (Scheme 19), implying that the catalytic activity varies with the structure of the complex. The X-ray structure of the  $C_1$  symmetric complex is shown in Fig. 10, where the  $Cp'$ -Sm- $Cp'$  angle is  $108^\circ$ , a very small dihedral angle. The polymerization of ethylene with  $SmH(C_5Me_5)_2$  in the presence of  $PhSiH_3$  formed  $PhH_2Si$ -capped polyethylene ( $M_n$   $9.8 \times 10^4$ ,  $M_w/M_n$  1.8), and the copolymerization of ethylene with 1-hexene or styrene produced a  $PhH_2Si$ -capped copolymer (comonomer content 60 and 26 mol %, respectively;  $M_n$   $3.7 \times 10^3$ ,  $M_w/M_n$  2.9 for ethylene-1-hexene copolymer,  $M_n$   $3.3 \times 10^3$  for ethylene-styrene copolymer) (Scheme 20) [75].

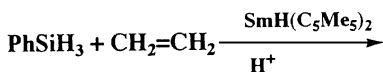
**Table 9.** Ethylene polymerization by organolanthanide (III) complexes

| Initiator  | $M_n/10^4$ | $M_w/M_n$         | Activity (g/mol·h) |
|--|------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| $(C_5Me_5)_2SmCH(SiMe_3)_2$  |            | No polymerization |                    |
| $SiMe_2[2,4-(SiMe_3)_2C_5H_2]_2SmCH(SiMe_3)_2$<br>(racemic)        |            | No polymerization |                    |
| $SiMe_2(Me_2SiOSiMe_2)(3-SiMe_3-C_5H_2)$<br>$YCH(SiMe_3)_2$ (meso) |            | No polymerization |                    |
| $SiMe_2[2(3),4-(SiMe_3)_2C_5H_2]_2SmCH(SiMe_3)_2(C_1)$             | 41.3       | 2.19              | $3.3 \times 10^4$  |
| $SiMe_2[2(3),4(SiMe_3)_2C_5H_2]_2YCH(SiMe_3)_2(C_1)$               | 33.1       | 1.65              | $18.8 \times 10^4$ |

Initiator concentration, 0.2 mol%. Ethylene was introduced by bubbling at atmospheric pressure



**Scheme 19.** Mode of lanthanide(III)-initiated polymerization of ethylene



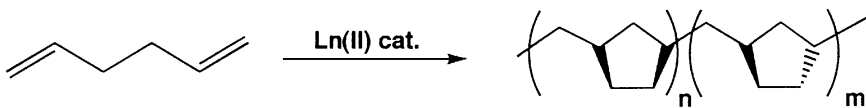
**Scheme 20.**  $PhH_2Si$ -capped polymerization of ethylene

Table 10 shows the results of polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins catalyzed with trivalent complexes. When a bulkier *t*BuMe<sub>2</sub>Si group instead of the Me<sub>3</sub>Si group was introduced into the yttrium complex, the racemic complex was formed exclusively [74c]. However, this alkyl complex did not react with olefins, and hence it was converted to a hydride complex by reaction with H<sub>2</sub>. The complex obtained was reactive to various olefins and produced polymers at

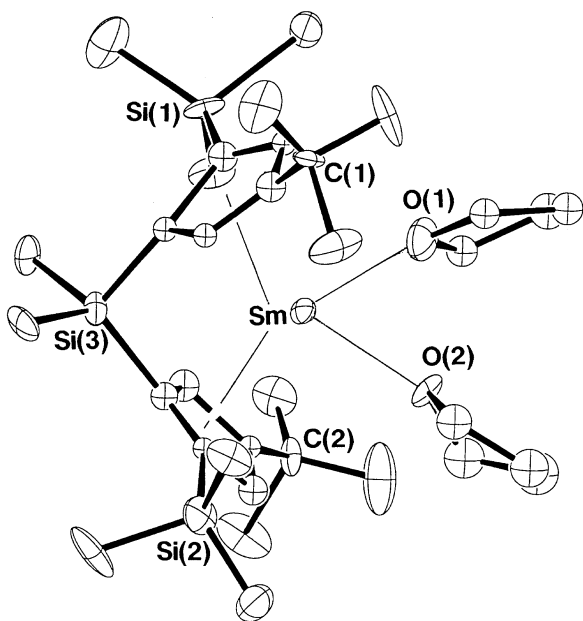
**Table 10.** Polymerization of 1-pentene and 1-hexene

| Monomer   | Initiator   | $M_n/10^3$ | $M_w/M_n$ |
|-----------|---|------------|-----------|
| 1-Pentene | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(2-SiMe <sub>3</sub> -4- <i>t</i> Bu-C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> Sm(THF) <sub>2</sub>                        | 13         | 1.63      |
|           | Me <sub>3</sub> Si [2(3),4-(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ] <sub>2</sub> Y CH(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> | 16         | 1.42      |
|           | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(2-SiMe <sub>3</sub> -4- <i>t</i> Bu-C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> YH] <sub>2</sub>                            | 20         | 1.99      |
| 1-Hexene  | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(2-SiMe <sub>3</sub> -4- <i>t</i> Bu-C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> Sm(THF) <sub>2</sub>                        | 19         | 1.58      |
|           | Me <sub>3</sub> Si[2(3),4-(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ] <sub>2</sub> Y CH(SiMe <sub>3</sub> ) <sub>2</sub>  | 64         | 1.20      |
|           | Me <sub>2</sub> Si(2-SiMe <sub>3</sub> -4- <i>t</i> Bu-C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>2</sub> ) <sub>2</sub> YH] <sub>2</sub>                            | 24         | 1.75      |

Initiator concentration, 0.2 mol% of monomer. Solvent, toluene; toluene/monomer 5 (wt/wt)



**Scheme 21.** Polymerization of 1,5-hexadiene



**Fig. 11.** X-ray structure of racemic Me<sub>2</sub>Si(2-SiMe<sub>3</sub>-4-*t*Bu-C<sub>5</sub>H<sub>2</sub>)<sub>2</sub>Sm(THF)<sub>2</sub>

high yield. Poly( $\alpha$ -olefin) thus obtained was highly isotactic with an mmmm content 95%, when examined by  $^{13}\text{C}$ -NMR at 34.91 ppm. It also initiated the polymerization of 1,5-hexadiene, yielding poly(methylene-1,3-cyclopentane) exclusively [76], whose  $M_n$  ( $M_n = 13.5 \times 10^4$ ) was much higher than that obtained with the Kaminsky-type catalyst ( $M_n = 40\,000$ ) (Scheme 21). The conversions of poly(1-pentene) and poly(1-hexene) were much higher than those using rac- $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(2\text{-SiMe}_3\text{-4-}t\text{Bu-C}_5\text{H}_2)_2\text{YH}$  [77] or  $[(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_4)\text{SiMe}_2\text{-N-}t\text{Bu}(\text{PMe}_3)\text{ScH}]_2$  [78].

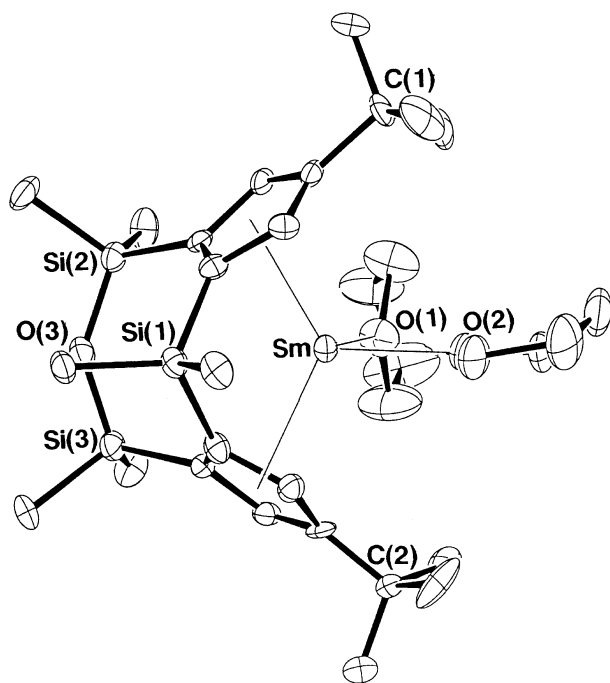
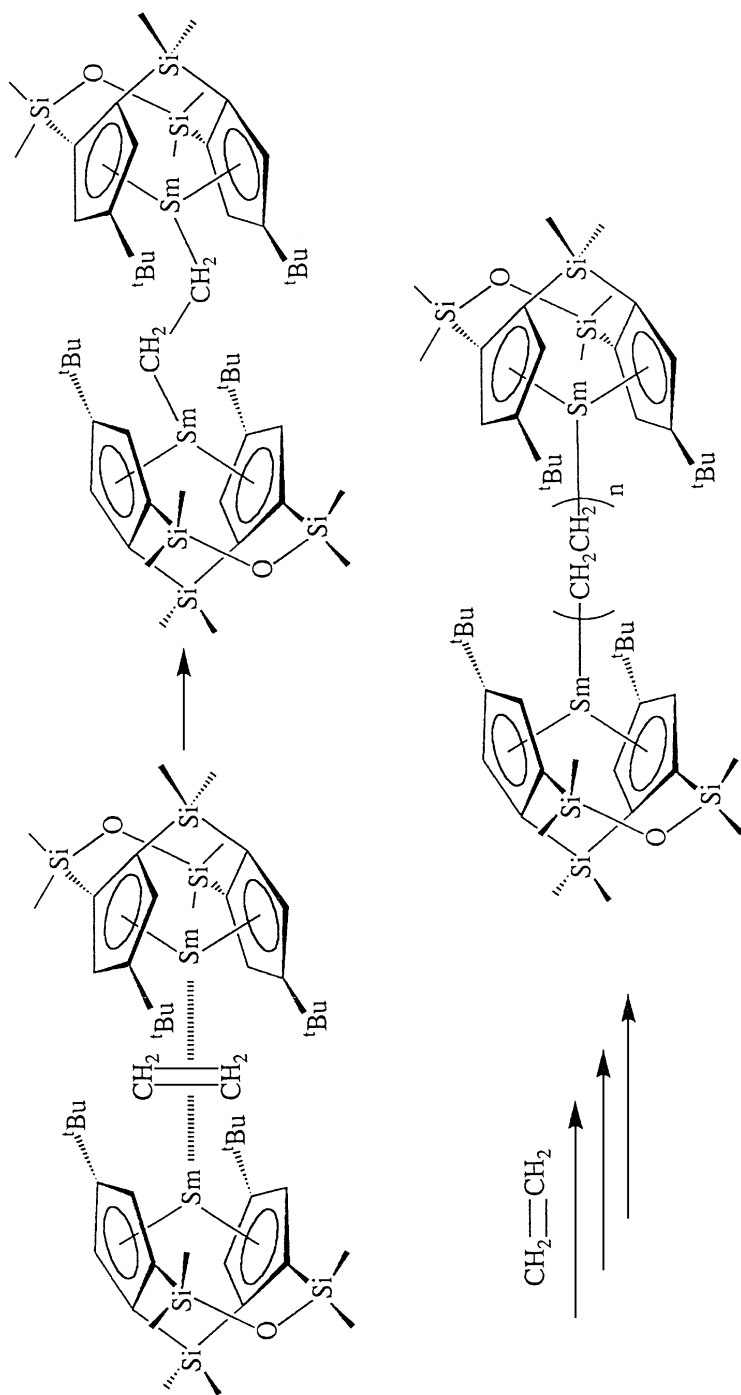


Fig. 12. X-ray structure of meso  $\text{Me}_2\text{Si}(\text{SiMe}_2\text{OSiMe}_2)(3\text{-SiMe}_3\text{-C}_5\text{H}_2)_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$

Table 11. Ethylene polymerization by divalent samarium complexes

| Initiator  | Time/min | $M_n/10^4$ | $M_w/M_n$ | Activity<br>(g/mol·h) |
|--|----------|------------|-----------|-----------------------|
| $(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$ | 1        | 2.28       | 1.25      | 43                    |
|  | 3        | 2.46       | 2.28      | 41                    |
| Racemic  | 1        | 11.59      | 1.43      | 6                     |
|  | 3        | 35.63      | 1.60      | 14                    |
| Meso   | 5        | 1.94       | 3.29      | 14                    |
|  | 10       | 4.73       | 3.49      | 47                    |
| $\text{C}_1$ symmetry                              | 15       | 100.8      | 1.60      | 1.6                   |
|  | 30       | 110.0      | 1.64      | 1.1                   |



Scheme 22. Mode of lanthanide(II)-initiated polymerization of ethylene

Racemic, meso, and  $C_1$  symmetric divalent organolanthanide complexes can also be synthesized by allowing the dipotassium salt of the corresponding ligand to react with  $SmI_2$  [79]. Figures 11 and 12 show their structures determined by  $^1H$ -NMR and X-ray analyses. Table 11 shows the results from olefin polymerization with divalent samarium complexes (Scheme 22). It can be seen that the meso-type complex has the highest activity for the polymerization of ethylene, but the molecular weights of the resulting polymers are lowest. On the other hand, the racemic and  $C_1$  symmetric complexes produce much higher molecular weight polyethylene but the activity is rather low. The very high molecular weight polyethylene ( $M_n = 100 \times 10^4$ ) obtained with the  $C_1$  complex deserves particular attention. For the polymerization of  $\alpha$ -olefins, only the racemic divalent complex showed good activity at  $0^\circ C$  in toluene: poly(1-hexene)  $M_n = 24\,600$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.85$ ; poly(1-pentene)  $M_n = 18\,700$ ,  $M_w/M_n = 1.58$ . Thus, we see that the reactivity of divalent organolanthanide complexes depends on their structure. The poly(1-alkene) obtained revealed a highly isotactic structure (95%) when examined by  $^{13}C$ -NMR (Fig. 13). The dihedral angles of  $Cp'-Ln-Cp'$  of racemic and meso-type divalent complexes were  $117^\circ$  and  $116.7^\circ$ , respectively, which are much smaller than those of  $Sm(C_5Me_5)_2(THF)$  ( $136.7^\circ$ ) [80] and  $Sm(C_5Me_5)_2$  ( $140.1^\circ$ ) [81]. Therefore, it can be concluded that the complexes having smaller  $Cp'-Ln-Cp'$  angles are more active in the

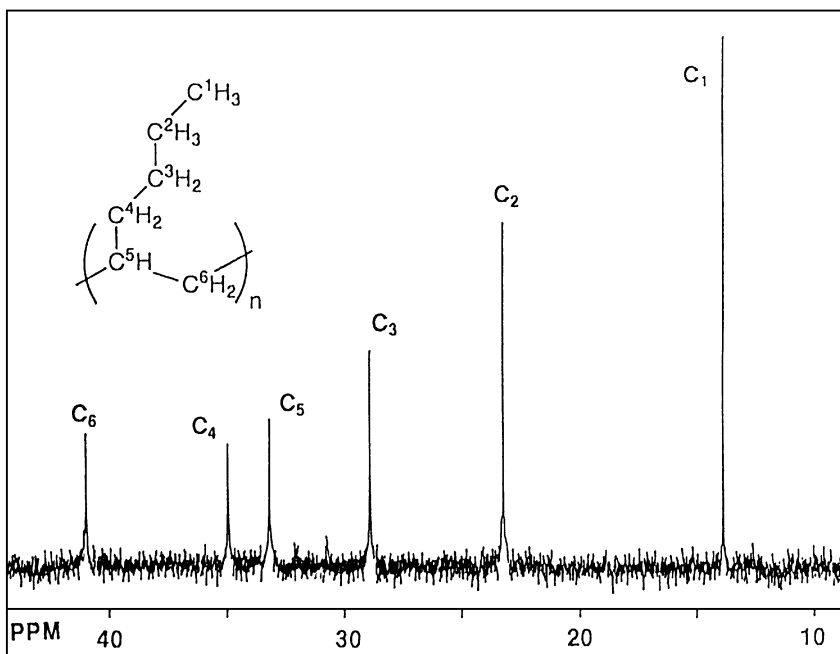
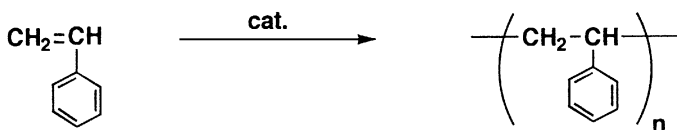


Fig. 13.  $^{13}C$ -NMR spectrum of isotactic poly(1-hexene)

polymerization of ethylene and  $\alpha$ -olefins. 1,5-Hexadiene was polymerized smoothly by the catalytic action of  $\text{rac-Me}_2\text{Si}(2\text{-SiMe}_3\text{-4-}t\text{Bu-C}_5\text{H}_2)_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$  to produce poly(methylene-1,3-cyclopentane) at a ratio of *cis/trans* 55/45 [74c].

## 5.2 Polymerization of Styrene

Styrene polymerization was performed by using binary initiator systems such as  $\text{Nd}(\text{acac})_3\text{-AlR}_3$  or  $\text{Nd}(\text{P}_{507})_3\text{-AlR}_3$ ; syndio-rich polystyrene was obtained at a ratio of Al/Nd 10–12 (Scheme 23) [82]. More recently, it has been shown that the  $\text{Gd}(\text{OCOR})_3/i\text{Bu}_3\text{Al}/\text{Et}_2\text{AlCl}$  catalytic system initiates the copolymerization of styrene with butadiene, but produces only atactic polystyrene [83]. The  $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlR}_3$  or  $\text{Sm}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlR}_2\text{Cl}$  (Sm/Al 1–15) catalytic system also initiates the polymerization of styrene, producing a high molecular weight polymer ( $M_n$  300 000), low in polydispersity but atactic in stereoregularity [84]. The cationic polymerization of styrene using  $\text{Ln}(\text{CH}_3\text{CN})_9(\text{AlCl}_4)_3$  ( $\text{CH}_3\text{CN}$ ) was also examined [85]. It was found that the activity increased in the order La (conversion 73%) Tb Ho Pr Gd Nd Sm Yb Eu (conversion 54%), while  $M_n$  decreased when the polymerization temperature increased from 0 ( $20 \times 10^3$ ) to 60 °C ( $13 \times 10^3$ ). A more recent study [86] has shown that the single-component catalyst  $[(t\text{BuCp})_2\text{LnCH}_3]_2$  (Ln Pr, Nd, Gd) initiated the polymerization of styrene at a relatively high temperature (70 °C), with a conversion of 96% for  $[(t\text{BuCp})_2\text{NdCH}_3]_2$  and  $M_n$  of  $3.3 \times 10^4$  [86], though stereoregularity was very poor. The activity varied greatly with the lanthanide element, and the catalytic activity increased in the order Nd Pr Gd  $\gg$  Sm, Y (the Sm and Y complexes showed practically no activity). Therefore, the reaction is considered to follow the radical initiation mechanism. Styrene polymerization was also performed successfully using the single-component initiators,  $[(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2\text{N}]_2\text{Sm}(\text{THF})_2$ ,  $[(\text{Me}_3\text{Si})_2\text{CH}]_3\text{Sm}$ , and  $\text{La}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)\text{-}[\text{CH}(\text{SiMe}_3)_2]_2(\text{THF})$  at 50 °C in toluene with no addition of cocatalyst. The resulting polymers had an  $M_n$  1.5–1.8  $\times 10^4$  with  $M_w/M_n$  1.5–1.8, and were only atactic [37,80]. Thus no success has yet been achieved in synthesizing syndiotactic polystyrene with rare earth metal complexes, in contrast to the synthesis of highly syndiotactic polystyrene with  $(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)\text{TiCl}_3/(\text{AlMe-O})_n$  system (syndiotacticity 95%) [87,88].



Scheme 23. Polymerization of styrene



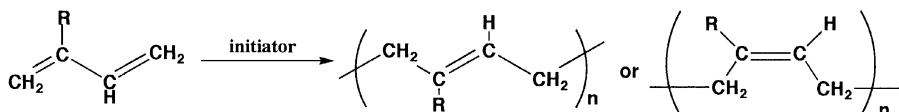
### 5.3 Stereospecific Polymerization in Conjugate Dienes

Organolanthanide(III)-based binary initiator systems were used by Yu et al. [89] for stereospecific polymerization of butadiene (Table 12) and isoprene. Typically, the polymerization of butadiene catalyzed by  $C_5H_5LnCl_2 \cdot THF/AIR_3$  yielded polymers with a *cis*-1,4-content as high as 98% (Scheme 24). The polymerization activity decreased in the order Nd > Pr > Y > Ce > Gd and  $iBu_2AlH > iBu_3Al > Et_3Al > Me_3Al$ , while the viscosity of the polymer decreased in the order  $Et_3Al > iBu_3Al > iBu_2AlH$ . Although the  $NdCl_3/iBu_3Al$  system exhibited practically no initiating activity, the use of  $NdCl_3/PrOH$  instead of the solvent-free metal chloride brought about high polymerization activity and high stereoregularity in the *cis*-1,4-polymerization of butadiene [90]. The  $M_n$  of the polymer increased linearly with increasing conversion and reached  $1530 \times 10^3$  at 85% conversion when  $NdCl_3 \cdot iPrOH/AlEt_3$  (1 : 10) was used in heptane at  $70^\circ C$ , but  $M_w/M_n$  (1.8–2.5) showed no change with conversion. The number N of polymer chains per metal atom was 1.09–1.43 at  $70^\circ C$ , and increased to 2.0–3.0 when the polymerization temperature was raised to  $0^\circ C$ . Most noteworthy is a very high *cis*-content realized at  $70^\circ C$ , which amounted to 99.4%. This indicates the existence of the anti- $\pi$ -allyl-Nd species rather than the syn- $\pi$ -allyl-Nd species in the polymerization system. The *cis*-1,4-content of poly(butadiene) increased as the  $AlEt_3$  concentration was lowered [90].

The arene organolanthanide system,  $Nd(C_6H_6)(AlCl_4)_3/Al iBu_3$  (Al/Nd = 30), also induces the catalytic polymerization of isoprene to give *cis*-1,4-polymers having 92–93% selectivity at low conversion (17–36%). Neither the

**Table 12.** Polymerization of butadiene

| Initiator  | Polymer   |
|--|---|
| $C_5H_5LnCl_3/AIR_3$<br>(Ln = Ce, Pr, Nd, Gd, Y; R = <i>i</i> Bu, Et)                      | <i>cis</i> -1,4 98%   |
| $NdCl_3/iPrOH/AlEt_3$  | <i>cis</i> -1,4, 99.4%<br>$M_n = 1.5 \times 10^5$ , $M_w/M_n = 1.0 - 2.7$           |
| ( <i>i</i> PrO) <sub>3</sub> Gd complex,<br>Dy complex,<br>Er complex,                     | <i>cis</i> -1,4, 92.5%<br><i>cis</i> -1,4, 84.6%<br><i>cis</i> -1,4, 82.8%          |
| $(CF_3COO)_2LnCl/EtOH/AlEt_3$ Nd Complex,<br>(Ln = La, Ce, Pr, Nd, Sm, Eu)                 | <i>cis</i> -1,4, 97.5%  |
| $Nd(octanoate)_3/AlEt_2Cl/AlEt_3$<br>$[(CF_3)_3(\mu-O)_3(\mu_3-O)_3NdAlEt_2 \cdot 2THF]_2$ | <i>cis</i> -1,4 98%<br><i>trans</i> -1,4, 79.2%                                     |
| Didymium(versate) <sub>3</sub> /MgBu <sub>2</sub>  | $M_n = 5 \times 10^4 - 8 \times 10^4$<br>$M_w/M_n = 1.5$ , <i>trans</i> -1,4, 96.9% |
| $LnCl_3$ or $Ce(acac)_3/AIR_3$   | <i>trans</i> -1,4, 65–70%   |



**Scheme 24.** Organolanthanide-initiated polymerization of butadiene derivatives

$\text{Nd}(\text{C}_6\text{Me}_6)(\text{AlCl}_4)_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  (1:30) nor  $\text{NdCl}_3/\text{AlCl}_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  (1:3:30) system showed catalytic activity in the polymerization of isoprene [91]. The random copolymerization of isoprene with butadiene went smoothly using the  $\text{Nd}(\text{C}_6\text{H}_6)(\text{AlCl}_4)_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  system and produced an isoprene/butadiene(1:4) copolymer at high yield, but, no data for  $M_w/M_n$  and  $M_n$  were reported [92]. The  $(\beta\text{-CH}_3\text{-}\pi\text{-allyl})_2\text{LnCl}_5\text{Mg}_2(\text{TMEDA})_2/\text{Al}i\text{R}_3$  and  $(\text{allyl})_4\text{Li}$  systems also initiate the 1,4-polymerization of isoprene in 50% stereoregularity at high conversion [92]. Highly selective *cis*-1,4-polymerizations of conjugated dienes were obtained using the homogeneous  $(\text{CF}_3\text{COO})_2\text{NdCl}\cdot\text{EtOH}/\text{Al}i\text{Et}_3$  (1:7) initiator system, i.e., 97.5% *cis*-selectivity for butadiene and 96.7% for isoprene. Although bimetallic species like  $(\text{CF}_3\text{COO})\text{EtNd}(\mu\text{-Cl})(\mu\text{-H})\text{Al}i\text{Et}_2$  are assumed to be active, their exact structure is still unknown [93]. The molecular structure of dimer complexes,  $[(\text{CF}_3\text{C})(\mu_2\text{-O})_2(\mu_3\text{-O})_4\text{YAlEt}_2(2\text{THF})]_2$  and  $[(\text{CF}_3)(\mu_2\text{-O})_3(\mu_3\text{-O})_3\text{NdAlEt}_2(2\text{THF})]_2$ , generated during the reaction between  $(\text{CF}_3\text{COO})_2\text{NdCl}$  and  $\text{Al}i\text{Et}_3$ , has recently been elucidated by X-ray analysis. However, these complexes are considered to be by-products because they produce polymers having low stereoregularity at low yield [94].

A remarkable solvent effect was observed regarding the activity of the  $\text{Nd}(\text{OCOC}_7\text{H}_{15})_3/\text{Et}_2\text{AlCl}/i\text{Bu}_3\text{Al}$  system, which initiates the *cis*-1,4-polymerization of butadiene (98%) and isoprene (95%). Aliphatic compounds such as pentane, 1-pentene, and 2-pentene act as good solvents, while aromatic compounds such as toluene and mesitylene act as inhibitors [95]. The aromatic compounds attached to the metal center may be responsible for the remarkable suppression of polymerization, as was the case in polymerizations using cobalt catalysts [96]. A binary initiator system,  $\text{LnCl}_3[(\text{BuO})_3\text{PO}]_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$ , and a ternary system,  $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3/\text{Al}_2\text{Et}_3\text{Cl}_3$  (naphthenate;  $\text{C}_{10}\text{H}_7\text{COO}$ ), also act as good initiators for the *cis*-1,4-polymerization of isoprene [97]. In both cases, the polymerization activity varies with the nature of the metal in the order  $\text{Nd} > \text{Pr} > \text{Ce} > \text{Gd} > \text{La} \gg \text{Sm} > \text{Eu}$ . Thus, the activity increases with increasing electronegativity and does so with decreasing  $M^{3+}$  ionic radius, except for  $\text{Sm}^{3+}$  and  $\text{Eu}^{3+}$  which can be easily converted to the  $M^{2+}$  species in the presence of a reducing agent. No relationship was observed between the initiating activity and the  $\text{Ln-O}$  or  $\text{Ln-Cl}$  bond energy determined by IR and laser Raman spectroscopy.

Block copolymerization of butadiene with isoprene (32:68–67:33), producing high *cis*-1,4-polymers, was also successfully carried out with the  $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3/\text{Al}_2\text{Et}_3\text{Cl}_3$  system at temperatures of 78 to 33 °C. Noteworthy is the relatively long lifetime of this initiator. Thus, it was possible to copolymerize isoprene 1752 h after the polymerization of butadiene. The  $(i\text{PrO})_2\text{HLn}_2\text{Cl}_3\text{HAlEt}_2$  species ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Gd}, \text{Dy}, \text{Er}, \text{Tm}$ ) [98] prepared from either  $\text{Ln}(i\text{PrO})_3/\text{Et}_2\text{AlCl}/\text{Et}_3\text{Al}$  or  $(i\text{PrO})_2\text{LnCl}/\text{Et}_3\text{Al}$  can also initiate the *cis*-1,4-polymerization of butadiene and isoprene. The most probable structure of this complex as evidenced by X-ray analysis is  $(i\text{PrO})\text{HLnEt}(\text{Cl})\text{Al}i\text{H}(\text{Cl})\text{LnCl}(\text{OiPr})$ . The polymerization activity decreased in the order  $\text{Gd} > \text{Dy} > \text{Er} > \text{Tm}$  and the *cis*-content ranged from 92 to 95% in the case of Gd derivatives. Random

copolymerization of butadiene with isoprene was also performed using  $\text{Nd}(\text{C}_6\text{H}_6)(\text{AlCl}_4)_3/\text{AlR}_3(\text{Al}/\text{Nd} = 30)$  in benzene. Both monomers were incorporated in the copolymer selectively with *cis*-1,4-butadiene 96.1–96.4% and *cis*-1,4-isoprene 97.5–98.3%. The conversion increased with an increase in the polymerization temperature from 0 (10%) to 80 °C (80–100%) [99].

Some rare earth metal-based initiators induce the *trans*-1,4-polymerization of conjugated dienes at high yield. The  $\text{Ce}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$  system as well as the  $\text{CeCl}_3/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$  and  $\text{GdCl}_3/\text{AlEt}_3$  systems were most effective in the polymerization of isoprene with high selectivity (91–97%) [100]. The marked difference in the selectivity between the  $\text{Ce}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlEt}_3$  and the  $\text{C}_5\text{H}_5\text{LnCl}_2/\text{AlR}_3$  or  $(\text{iPrO})_2\text{LnCl}/\text{AlR}_3$  initiator systems may be due to a specific action of small amounts of water present in the system. Actually, metal compound hydrates like  $\text{NdCl}_3 \cdot 6\text{H}_2\text{O}$ ,  $\text{PrCl}_3 \cdot 6\text{H}_2\text{O}$ , and  $\text{UO}_2(\text{C}_2\text{H}_3\text{O}_2)_2 \cdot 6\text{H}_2\text{O}$  can initiate *trans*-polymerization in the presence of  $\text{AlR}_3$  [101]. Prolonged aging of the initiator system decreased the activity significantly, presumably owing to an irreversible self-reaction of the intermediate generated from the organolanthanide and water. A recent study [101] on the effect of water has revealed that maximum conversion was attainable at an  $\text{H}_2\text{O}/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$  ratio of 1.1–1.2, which produces  $(\text{AlEt-O})_n(\text{AlCl-O})_m$  species. However, the molecular weight was independent of the amount of water added to  $\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$ .

It was found that didymium versate (didymium refers to a rare earth mixture containing 72% Nd, 20% La, and 8% Pr)/ $\text{MgR}_2$  ( $\text{Mg}/\text{rare earth metal} = 1/0.1$  mol/mol) mixtures initiated the *trans*-1,4-polymerization of butadiene (97%) to produce polymers of  $M_n = 50\,000$ –8000 with  $M_w/M_n = 1.5$  [102]. As an extension of this study, the butadiene/styrene block copolymerization was successfully carried out using a didymium versate/ $\text{MgR}_2/\text{BuLi}$  at a ratio of 0.06:1:1.2 [102]. Furthermore, block copolymers of *cis/trans*-butadiene were synthesized by using an initiator system which was prepared in two steps, i.e., first a didymium versate was added to  $\text{MgBu}_2$  at a 0.1:1.0 ratio and then 1.5 mol equivalents of  $\text{Al}_2\text{Et}_3\text{Cl}_3$  were added to the mixture in hexane after 60 min. Julemont et al. [103] obtained stereoblock polymers containing *cis*- and *trans*-blocks using nickel trifluoroacetate initiators.

Polymer-supported lanthanide initiators have been used frequently in the polymerization of conjugated dienes. It is well known that the efficiency of the activity initiating center is influenced by the nature and valence state of the transition metal, i.e., the type of ligands attached to the transition metal and the type of organometallic compounds. Manipulating these parameters effectively led to successful developments of more highly active initiator systems. In contrast to low molecular weight metal initiator systems, the environment of the metal ions in the active centers of polymer-metal initiator systems is influenced by the polymer ligand. Typical systems are styrene-divinylbenzene and styrene-acrylic acid copolymers. Neodymium- and praseodymium-supported polystyrene showed high activity in the polymerization of butadiene and yielded *cis*-1,4-polybutadiene (97%) in the presence of  $\text{Al}(\text{Bu})_3$  and  $\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$  [104]. Their polymerization activity is higher than that of a typical homogeneous low

molecular weight initiator system,  $\text{Nd}(\text{acac})_3/\text{AlR}_3$ . The polymerization of butadiene using the Nd compound supported by poly(styrene/acrylic acid) (3:1) in the presence of  $\text{AlR}_3$  (R = Et, *i*Bu) (Al/Nd = 200 mol/mol) and alkyl chloride ( $\text{PhCH}_2\text{Cl}$ ) produced the *cis*-1,4-polymers with 98% selectivity at 82% conversion when the ratio of the additives was 1:200:3.5 [104]. The IR spectra of the reaction products of poly(styrene/acrylic acid) and poly(ethylene/acrylic acid) with  $\text{NdCl}_3$  showed new bands at 1550 and 1540  $\text{cm}^{-1}$  as well as 1426 and 1420  $\text{cm}^{-1}$ , respectively. These bands are assignable to antisymmetric and symmetric stretching vibrations of  $\text{COO}^-$  groups due to the formation of the complexes. Since the increase in the covalency of metal-oxygen bonds always accompanies an increase in  $\nu_s(\text{COO}^-)$  and a decrease in  $\nu_{\text{as}}(\text{COO}^-)$ , the polymer-supported neodymium complexes are considered to have a bidentate or tridentate carboxylate structure.

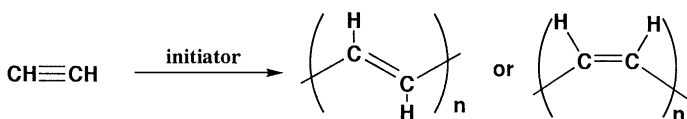
It was shown that the activity of poly(styrene/acrylic acid)-supported Nd/alkylaluminum halides/ $\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  depends largely on the kind of alkylaluminum halides and increases in the order  $\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl} > \text{AlEtCl}_2 > \text{AlEt}_2\text{Br}$  [105]. The effect of alkyl halides on the activity decreased in the order  $\text{Ph}_3\text{Cl} > \text{PhCH}_2\text{Cl} > \text{CH}_2 = \text{CHCH}_2\text{Cl} \gg \text{CCl}_4 \gg (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CHCl} > \text{C}(\text{CH}_3)_2\text{H}_2\text{CH}_2\text{Cl}$ . Thus, *cis*-1,4-polybutadiene with more than 98% selectivity was made available [106]. The poly(styrene/acrylic acid)-supported Nd complex also effectively initiated the polymerization of isoprene in the presence of  $\text{Ph}_3\text{Cl}$  and  $\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  at a ratio of 1:3.5:100 and yielded a polymer of high *cis*-1,4-content (96.4%) [106]. The polymerization efficiency of the poly[(styrene/(2-methylsulfinyl) ethyl-methacrylate)] (S = O content, 7.9–9.7%)-supported  $\text{NdCl}_3$  (Nd/S = O = 0.15–0.80(mol/mol) in the presence of  $\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$ (Al/Nd = 100–250) is two or three times higher than that of the  $\text{NdCl}_3(\text{DMSO})_4/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  system for the polymerization of butadiene. The *cis*-1,4-content reaches 98.1%. It is estimated for this reaction that 0.23 mol  $\text{NdCl}_3$ /mol of the functional group is bound as S = O– $\text{NdCl}_3$ . When the content of (2-methylsulfinyl) ethyl methacrylate reached 34% in the copolymer, the butadiene conversion decreased markedly [107]. Neodymium complexes attached to carboxylated polystyrene cross-linked with divinylbenzene are known to be active in the presence of  $\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$  (20:1 ratio) for the *cis*-1,4-polymerization (97%) of butadiene [108]. The contents of  $\text{Nd}(\text{O}_2\text{C-PS})_3$  and  $\text{Ce}(\text{O}_2\text{C-PS})_3$  units in the resin were 0.86 and 1.19 mmol of Nd and Ce per gram of polymer, respectively. After the completion of polymerization, dry benzene was added to dilute the polybutadiene and then EtOH was added to cleave the metal-polybutadiene bond. The recovered polymer support is recyclable and can be used four times. The *cis*-selectivity is maintained during these cycles without significant loss of activity. Neodymium derivatives of carboxylated polyethylene obtained from commercially available oxidized polyethylene also produced recyclable polymers when the ratio of  $\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}/\text{Nd}$  was fixed at 40:20:1 [108].

Butadiene-styrene copolymerization was attempted using the  $\text{L}_3\text{Ln-RX-}\text{AlR}_3$  system [109]. Especially,  $(\text{CF}_3\text{COO})_3\text{Nd}/\text{C}_5\text{H}_{11}\text{Br}/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$  (1:3:15) was found to be active in this type of copolymerization, with the *cis*-content of

butadiene amounting to 97.8% and the styrene content to ca. 32%. However, for the isoprene/styrene system, the *trans*-1,4-polyisoprene copolymer was produced exclusively.

#### 5.4 Stereospecific Polymerization of Acetylene and Its Derivatives

Polyacetylene (PA) is one of the simplest conjugated polymers, useful for manufacturing lightweight high-energy density plastics for storage batteries, solar energy cells, etc. Acetylene can be polymerized to produce high-*cis* PA film with  $\text{Ti}(\text{OiBu})_4/\text{AlEt}_3$  [110] or  $\text{Co}(\text{NO}_3)_2/\text{NaBH}_4$  [111] at temperatures lower than  $78^\circ\text{C}$ . Recently, it has been reported that  $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{AlR}_3/\text{Donor}$  (1:10:2–3) (Donor: acetone, ether, ethyl acetate) systems can also initiate stereoregular *cis*-polymerization of acetylene at  $30^\circ\text{C}$ , which leads to silvery metallic film (Scheme 25, Table 13) [112,113]. The polymer yield increased with increasing polymerization temperature ( $15$  to  $45^\circ\text{C}$ ). A *cis*-polyacetylene with 95% selectivity was obtained when the Al/Ln ratio was adjusted to ca. 5. The polymerization activity decreased in the order Y > Ce > Nd > Tb > Pr > La > Lu > Gd > Tm > Er > Ho > Yb > Eu > Sm > Dy. The *trans*-content of the film amounted to 100% when the temperature was raised to  $180^\circ\text{C}$ . The elements leading to PA film with a *cis*-content exceeding 95% are La, Pr, Nd, Sm, Gd, Tb, Dy, Ho, Er, Tm, and Y. The electrical conductivity of the film was  $294 \times 10^{-8} \text{ S cm}^{-1}$  for La,  $181 \times 10^{-8} \text{ S cm}^{-1}$  for Nd,  $194 \times 10^{-8} \text{ S cm}^{-1}$  for Gd,  $490 \times 10^{-8} \text{ S cm}^{-1}$  for Tb, and  $184 \times 10^{-8} \text{ S cm}^{-1}$  for Tm. Differential scanning calorimetry revealed



Scheme 25. Organolanthanide-initiated polymerization of acetylene

Table 13. Polymerization of acetylene derivatives

| Monomer   | Initiator  | Polymer   |
|---|--|---|
| HC≡CH   | $\text{Ln}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3/\text{Donor}$<br>(Ln: Nd, Gd, La) | <i>cis</i> -content, 96%  |
| HC≡CH   | $\text{Nd}(\text{OiPr})_3/\text{AlEt}_3$   |   |
| RC≡CH<br>(R: $\text{C}_5\text{H}_{11}$ , $\text{C}_4\text{H}_9$ ) | $\text{Nd}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$                                  | <i>cis</i> -content, 90%  |
| $\text{C}_6\text{H}_5\text{C}\equiv\text{CH}$                     | $\text{La}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$                                  | <i>cis</i> -content, 90%<br>( $M_n$ : $2 \times 10^5$ )               |
| $\text{C}_6\text{H}_5\text{C}\equiv\text{CH}$                     | $\text{Sc}(\text{naphthenate})_3/\text{Al}i\text{Bu}_3$                                  | <i>cis</i> -content, 90%<br>( $M_n$ : $0.8\text{--}3.2 \times 10^4$ ) |

two exothermic peaks at 200 and 380 °C and an endothermic peak at 460 °C. These peaks were attributed to *cis-trans* isomerization, hydrogen migration, and chain decomposition, respectively [113].

Sc(naphthenate)<sub>3</sub>/ROH/AIR<sub>3</sub> (1/2/7) has been found to exhibit an activity similar to the lanthanide series catalyst [114]. The *cis* PA film obtained with it showed an electrical conductivity of 14.4 S cm<sup>-1</sup> when the polymer was doped with I<sub>2</sub> at a ratio of (CHI<sub>0.04</sub>)<sub>n</sub>, and the TEM measurement suggested the formation of ca. 20–30 nm fibrils.

The (P<sub>204</sub>)<sub>3</sub>Ln/AIR<sub>3</sub> system also exhibited good activity in the polymerization of acetylene when the Al/Ln ratio was 5 [114]. The polymerization was carried out conventionally, and polymers with a silver metallic appearance were obtained. The addition of an oxygen-containing donor effectively enhanced the polymerization rate and the *cis*-content. The effects were especially marked for P<sub>204</sub> (PO/Nd 1.1). The activity decreased in the order Nd Tb Ce Pr Y La Er Ho S Eu Yb Lu Gd Tm Dy and the *cis*-content decreased in the order Pr (95%) Lu Tb Dy (92%) Er Y Sm Gd (87–89%). The polymerization activities of Nd(P<sub>507</sub>)<sub>3</sub>, Nd(P<sub>204</sub>)<sub>3</sub>, and Nd(P<sub>215</sub>) were compared and found to increase in this order; the result is consistent with the basicities of the ligands (P<sub>507</sub>H pKa 4.10, P<sub>204</sub>H pKa 3.32, P<sub>215</sub>H pKa 3.22). The M–C bond is assumed to weaken as the electron-donating ability of the ligand increases. The Nd(iPrO)<sub>3</sub>/AlEt<sub>3</sub> (Al/Nd 10) system [115] was also shown to be a good initiator for the polymerization of acetylene. The soluble fraction obtained was considered to be *trans*-polyacetylene, which was shown to have a molecular weight of 277–540. Its <sup>1</sup>H-NMR spectrum revealed methyl groups at δ 0.826 ppm and terminal vinyl groups at 4.95 ppm.

Phenylacetylene was polymerized to produce a polymer of high *cis*-configuration using the Ln(naphthenate)<sub>3</sub>/AlEt<sub>3</sub> system [116, 117]. The activity decreased in the order Gd Lu Nd Ce Ho Sm Dy Eu Er Pr La Y Tm Yb, and the *cis*-content exceeded 90%. It had *M<sub>n</sub>* and *M<sub>w</sub>* of 2 × 10<sup>5</sup> and 4 × 10<sup>5</sup>, respectively, and was crystalline according to XRD and SEM measurement. Its softening point was in the range 215–230 °C. Other terminal alkynes such as 1-hexyne, 1-pentyne, 3-methyl-1-pentyne, 4-methyl-1-pentyne, and 3-methyl-1-butyne, were found to polymerize quantitatively in *cis*-fashion with the Ln(naphthenate)<sub>3</sub>/AIR<sub>3</sub>/C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>5</sub>OH (Ln Sc, Nd) or Ln(P<sub>204</sub>)<sub>3</sub>/AIR<sub>3</sub>/C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>5</sub>OH (1:7:3) system. The highest molecular weight *M<sub>n</sub>* obtained was 16.8 × 10<sup>4</sup> for poly(1-pentyne). Trimethylsilylacetylene was oligomerized to H(Me<sub>3</sub>SiC(CH<sub>3</sub>)<sub>n</sub>)CH<sub>2</sub>CHMe<sub>2</sub> (*n* = 2–3) by using LnX<sub>3</sub>(Donor)/AliBu<sub>3</sub> (Ln Gd, Pr, Nd, Tb, Dy, Lu; X Cl, Br) [118, 119]. The catalytic dimerization of terminal alkynes using (C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>5</sub>)<sub>2</sub>LnCH(SiMe<sub>3</sub>)<sub>2</sub> (Ln Y, La, Ce) has been reported recently. Here, the dimer was a mixture of 2,4-disubstituted 1-buten-3-yne and 1,4-disubstituted 1-buten-3-yne for phenylacetylene and (trimethylsilyl) acetylene, but it was a 2,4-disubstituted dimer for alkylacetylene [120]. Selective formation of 2,4-disubstituted 1-buten-3-yne has already been achieved with the (C<sub>5</sub>Me<sub>5</sub>)<sub>2</sub>TiCl<sub>2</sub>/RMgX catalyst [121].

## 6 Block Copolymerization of Ethylene with Polar Monomers

Block copolymerization of ethylene or propylene with polar monomers has yet to be attained in polyolefin engineering. If succeeded, it should produce hydrophobic polymeric materials having remarkably high adhesive, dyeing, and moisture-adsorbing properties. The following is the first example of a well-controlled block copolymerization using the unique dual catalytic function of  $\text{LnR}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2$  ( $\text{Ln} = \text{Sm, Yb, Lu}$ ;  $\text{R} = \text{H, Me}$ ) complexes for both polar and nonpolar monomers [122]. Ethylene was copolymerized with MMA first by the homopolymerization of ethylene (17–20 mmol) with  $\text{SmMe}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2(\text{THF})$  or  $[\text{SmH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2(0.05 \text{ mmol})$  at  $20^\circ\text{C}$  in toluene under atmospheric pressure and then by sequential addition of MMA (10 mmol) (Table 14). The initial step proceeded very rapidly (completion in 2 min) and produced a polymer with  $M_n \approx 10\,100$  and  $M_w/M_n = 1.42\text{--}1.44$ . However, the second step was rather slow, with the reaction taking 2 h at  $20^\circ\text{C}$  (Scheme 26). The polymer obtained was soluble in 1,2-dichlorobenzene and 1,2,4-trichlorobenzene at  $100^\circ\text{C}$  but insoluble in THF and  $\text{CHCl}_3$ , indicating quantitative conversion to the desired linear block copolymer. Repeated fractionation in hot THF did not change the molar ratio of the polyethylene and poly(MMA) blocks, though poly(MMA) blended with polyethylene can be easily extracted with THF. With the copolymerization, the elution maximum in GPC shifted to a higher molecular weight region, with its initial unimodal pattern unchanged. The relative molar ratio of the polyethylene and poly(MMA) blocks was controllable at will in the range of 100:1 to 100:103 if the  $M_n$  of the initial polyethylene was fixed to ca. 10 300.  $^1\text{H}$ - and  $^{13}\text{C}$ -NMR spectra for the copolymers as well as their

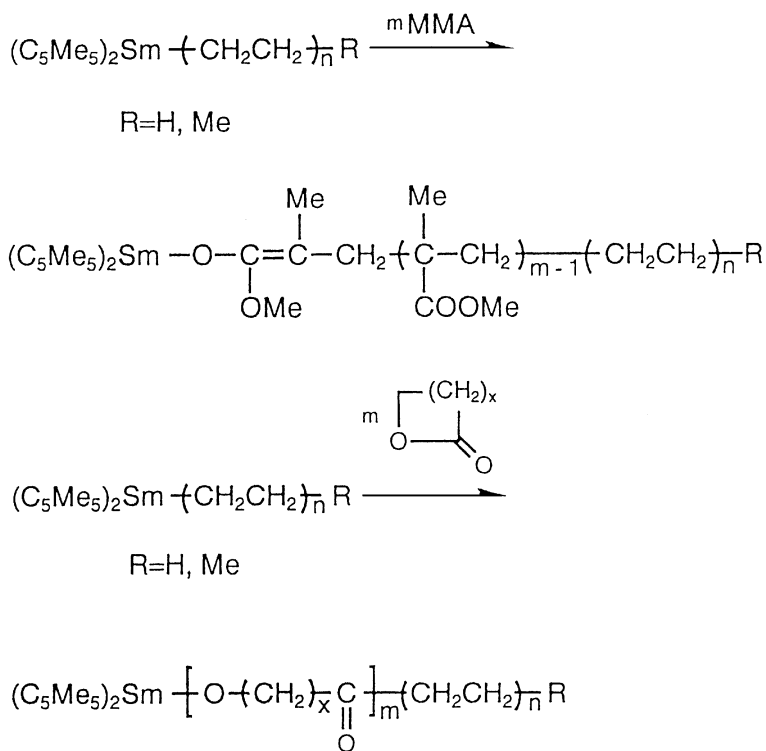
**Table 14.** Block copolymerization of ethylene with polar monomers

| Polar monomer | Polyethylene block <sup>a</sup> |           | Polar polymer block <sup>b</sup> |           | Unit ratio |
|---------------|---------------------------------|-----------|----------------------------------|-----------|------------|
|               | $M_n/10^3$                      | $M_w/M_n$ | $M_n/10^3$                       | $M_w/M_n$ |            |
| MMA           | 10.3                            | 1.42      | 24.2                             | 1.37      | 100:103    |
|               | 26.9                            | 1.39      | 12.8                             | 1.37      | 100:13     |
|               | 40.5                            | 1.40      | 18.2                             | 1.90      | 100:12     |
| MeA           | 6.6                             | 1.40      | 15.0                             | 1.36      | 100:71     |
|               | 24.5                            | 2.01      | 3.0                              | 1.66      | 100:4      |
| EtA           | 10.1                            | 1.44      | 30.8                             | 2.74      | 100:85     |
|               | 24.8                            | 1.97      | 18.2                             | 3.84      | 100:21     |
| VL            | 10.1                            | 1.44      | 7.4                              | 1.45      | 100:20     |
|               | 24.8                            | 1.97      | 4.7                              | 1.97      | 100:5      |
| CL            | 6.6                             | 1.40      | 23.9                             | 1.76      | 100:89     |
|               | 24.5                            | 2.01      | 6.9                              | 2.01      | 100:7      |

Polymerization was carried out at  $0^\circ\text{C}$

<sup>a</sup> Determined by GPC using standard polystyrene

<sup>b</sup> Determined by  $^1\text{H}$ -NMR



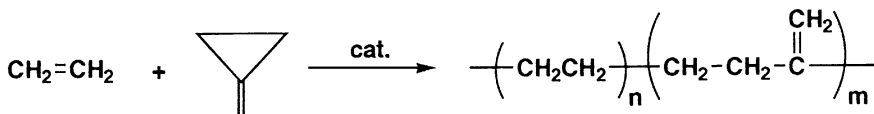
**Scheme 26.** Block copolymerization of ethylene with MMA

IR absorption spectra were superimposable onto those of the physical mixtures of the respective homopolymers. The molar ratio of the poly(MMA) and polyethylene blocks, however, decreased as the  $M_n$  of the prepolymer increased, especially when it exceeded ca. 12 000 at which polyethylene began precipitating as fine colorless particles. It is noteworthy that smooth block copolymerization of ethyl acrylate or methyl acrylate to the growing polyethylene chain ( $M_n$  6 600–24 800) can be realized by the sequential addition of the two monomers.

Yasuda et al. [122] extended the above work to the block copolymerization of ethylene with lactones.  $\delta$ -Valerolactone and  $\epsilon$ -caprolactone were combined with the growing polyethylene end at ambient temperature and the expected AB-type copolymers (100: 1 to 100: 89) were obtained at high yield. Reversed addition of the monomers (first MMA or lactones and then ethylene) induced no block copolymerization at all, even in the presence of excess ethylene, and only homo-poly(MMA) and homo-poly(lactone) were produced.

The treatment of the resulting block copoly(ethylene/MMA) (100:3,  $M_n$  35 000) and block copoly(ethylene/ $\epsilon$ -caprolactone) (100:11,  $M_n$  12 000)





**Scheme 27.** Block copolymerization of ethylene with methylenecyclopropane

with dispersed dyes (Dianix AC-E) produced three primary colors, though polyethylene itself was inert to the dyes. Hence, these copolymers can be said to have a very desirable chemical reactivity.

More recently, Yang et al. [123] have examined a new approach in which a reactive functional group was introduced into polyolefins using methylenecyclopropane (Scheme 27). Thus, ethylene (1.0 atm) was copolymerized with methylenecyclopropane (0.25–2.5 ml) using  $[\text{LnH}(\text{C}_5\text{Me}_5)_2]_2$  (Ln = Sm, Lu) in toluene at 25 °C. It was shown that 10–65 units of exo-methylenes were incorporated per 1000- $\text{CH}_2$ - units and the resulting polymer had an  $M_w$  of  $66\text{--}92 \times 10^3$ , yet its  $M_w/M_n$  was 4.

## 7 Conclusions

This article has reviewed recent developments in the rare earth metal-initiated polymerization of polar and nonpolar monomers. Most monomers, including alkyl methacrylates, alkyl acrylates, alkyl isocyanates, lactones, lactide, cyclic carbonates, ethylene, 1-olefin, conjugated diene, and acetylene derivatives, can be polymerized effectively with the help of the versatile function of rare earth metal initiators, except for such monomers as isobutene, vinyl ether, and vinyl pyridine. Their polymerization by a single-component initiator generally proceeds in living fashion and produces high molecular weight polymers ( $M_n$  400 000) with a very narrow molecular weight distribution ( $M_w/M_n$  1.05) at high conversion. Thus, the next problem to be solved is isotactic and syndiotactic polymerizations leading to polymers high enough in average molecular weight and narrow enough in molecular weight distribution. Stereospecific polymerization at high temperatures is especially important for alkyl (meth) acrylate, styrene, and 1-olefins from the industrial point of view. More sophisticated designs of ligands should be attempted. Although binary and ternary initiator systems are still in use for a variety of polymerizations, their replacement by single-component catalysts will be desirable in the near future.

*Acknowledgement.* The authors are grateful to Dr. Hiroshi Fujita, Emeritous Professor of Osaka University, for valuable discussion and comments.

## 8 References

1. Klein JW, Lamps JP, Gnaonou Y, Remp P (1991) *Polymer* 32: 2278.
2. (a) Webster OW, Hertler WR, Sogah DY, Farnham WB, RajanBabu TV (1983) *J Am Chem Soc* 105: 5706 (b) Sogah DY, Hertler WR, Webster OW, Cohen GM (1987) *Macromolecules* 20: 1473.
3. (a) Yasuda H, Yamamoto H, Yokota K, Miyake S, Nakamura A (1992) *J. Am. Chem. Soc* 114: 4908 (b) Yasuda H, Yamamoto H, Takemoto Y, Yamashita M, Yokota K, Miyake S, Nakamura A (1993) *Makromol Chem Macromol Symp* 67: 187 (c) Yasuda H, Yamamoto H, Yamashita, Yokota K, Nakamura A, Miyake S, Kai Y, Kanehisa N (1993) *Macromolecules* 22: 7134 (d) Yasuda H, Tamai H (1993) *Prog Polym Sci* 18: 1097 (e) Yasuda H, Ihara E (1996) *The Polymeric Materials Encyclopedia*, 10: 7359.
4. Ihara E, Morimoto M, Yasuda H (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 7886.
5. (a) Jacobs C, Hershney SK, Hautekeer R, Fayt R, Jerome R, Teyssie Ph (1990) *Macromolecules* 23: 4025 (b) Hershney SK, Jacobs C, Hautekeer JP, Bayard Ph, Jerome R, Fayt R, Teyssie Ph (1991) *Macromolecules* 24: 4997 (c) Janata M, Müller AHE, Lochman L (1990) *Makromol Chem* 191: 2253 (d) Janata M, Lochman L, Vlecek P, Dyal J, Müller AHE (1992) *Makromol Chem* 101: 193.
6. Boffa LS, Novak BM (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 6993.
7. Yu H, Choi W, Lim K, Choi S (1991) *Macromolecules* 24: 824.
8. Yamashita M, Takemoto Y, Ihara E, Yasuda H (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 1798.
9. Urakawa O, Adachi K, Kotaka T, Takemoto Y, Yasuda H (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 7410.
10. Stevels WM, Ankone MJK, Dijkstra PD, Feijin J (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 3332.
11. Tanaka K, Ihara E, Yasuda H (1996) unpublished results.
12. Marks TJ, Ernst RD (1982) In: Wilkinson G, Stone FGA (ed) *Comprehensive Organometallic Chemistry*. Pergamon, Vol. 3, chap. 21.
13. Evans WJ, Drumond DK (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 2772.
14. Evans WJ, Drumond DK, Chamberlain LR, Doedens RJ, Bott SG, Zhang H, Atwood JL (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 4983.
15. Hatada K, Ute K, Tanaka K, Okamoto Y, Kitayama T (1986) *Polym J* 18: 1037.
16. Kitayama T, Shiozaki T, Sakamoto T, Yamamoto M, Hatada K (1989) *Makromol Chem (suppl.)* 15: 167.
17. (a) Szwarc M (1983) *Adv Polym Sci* 49: 1 (b) Nakahama S, Hirao A (1990) *Prog Polym Sci* 13: 299 (c) Inoue S (1988) *Macromolecules* 21: 1195.
18. (a) Sawamoto M, Okamoto O, Higashimura T (1987) *Macromolecules* 20: 2693. (b) Kojima K, Sawamoto M, Higashimura T (1988) *Macromolecules* 21: 1552.
19. (a) Gillon LR, Grubbs RH (1986) *J Am Chem Soc* 108: 733 (b) Grubbs RH, Tumas W (1989) *Science* 243: 907 (c) Schrock RR, Feldman J, Canizzo LF, Grubbs RH (1989) *Macromolecules* 20: 1169.
20. (a) Evans WJ, Grate JW, Choi W, Bloom I, Hunter WE, Atwood JL (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 941 (b) Evans WJ, Chamberlain LR, Ulibarri TA, Ziller JW (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 6423 (c) Evans WJ, Bloom I, Hunter WE, Atwood JL (1983) *J Am Chem Soc* 105: 1401.
21. Cao ZK, Okamoto Y, Hatada K (1986) *Kobunshi Ronbunshu* 43: 857.
22. (a) Joh Y, Kotake Y (1976) *Macromolecules* 3: 337 (b) Hatada K, Nakanishi H, Ute K, Kitayama T (1986) *Polym J* 18: 581.
23. Abe H, Imai K, Matsumoto M (1968) *J Polym Sci C*23: 469.
24. Nakano N, Ute K, Okamoto Y, Matsuura Y, Hatada K (1989) *Polym J* 21: 935.
25. Bawn CEH, Ledwith A (1962) *Quarterly Rev* 16: 361.
26. Cram DJ, Kopecky KR (1959) *J Am Chem Soc* 81: 2748.
27. Yamamoto Y, Giardello MA, Brard L, Marks TJ (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 3726.
28. Tokimitu T, Ihara E, Yasuda H, unpublished result.
29. Nitto Y, Hayakawa T, Ihara E, Yasuda H, unpublished result.
30. (a) Kuroki M, Watanabe T, Aida T, Inoue S (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 5903. (b) Aida T, Inoue S (1996) *Acc Chem Res* 29: 39.
31. Sun J, Wang G, Shen Z (1993) *Yingyong Huaxue* 10: 1.
32. Collins S, Ward DG, Suddaby KH (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 7222.

33. Soga K, Deng H, Yano T, Shiono T (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 7938.
34. Hosokawa Y, Kuroki M, Aida T, Inoue S (1991) *Macromolecules* 24: 8243.
35. (a) Ihara E, Morimoto M, Yasuda H (1996) *Proc Japan Acad* 71: 126. (b) Ihara E, Morimoto M, Yasuda H (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 7886 (c) Suchoparek M, Spvacek J (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 102 (d) Madruga EL, Roman JS, Rodriguez MJ (1983) *J Polym Sci, Polym Chem Ed* 21: 2739.
36. Ren J, Hu J, Shen Q (1995) *Chinese J Appl Chem* 12: 105.
37. Hu J, Qi G, Shen Q (1995) *J Rare Earths* 13: 144.
38. Kamide K, Ono H, Hisatani K (1992) *Polymer J* 24: 917.
39. (a) Patten TE, Novak BM (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 5065 (b) Patten TE, Novak BM (1993) *Makromol Chem Macromol Symp* 67: 203.
40. Fukuwatari N, Sugimoto H, Inoue S (1996) *Macromol Rapid Commun* 17: 1.
41. Wang J, Nomura R, Endo T (1996) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem* 33: 869.
42. Wang J, Nomura R, Endo T (1995) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem* 33: 2901.
43. (a) Hofman A, Szymanski R, Skomkowski S, Penczek S (1980) *Makromol Chem* 185: 655 (b) Agostini DE, Lado JB, Sheeton JR (1971) *J Polym Sci A1*: 2775.
44. Cherdran H, Ohse H, Korte F (1962) *Makromol Chem* 56: 187.
45. Yamashita M, Ihara E, Yasuda H (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 1798.
46. Evans WJ, Katsumata H (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4011.
47. Shen Z, Chen X, Shen Y, Zheng Y (1994) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 32: 597.
48. Akatsuka M, Aida T, Inoue S (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 1320.
49. Shen Z, Sun J, Zhang Y (1994) *Chinese Sci Bull* 39: 1005.
50. Evans JE, Shreeve JL, Doedens RJ (1993) *Inorg Chem* 32: 245.
51. Shiomi M, Shirahama H, Yasuda H, unpublished result.
52. (a) Meerwein H, Kroning E (1987) *J Pract Chem* 147: 257 (b) Meerwein H (1947) *Angew Chem* 59: 168.
53. Li F, Jin Y, Pei F, Wang F (1993) *J Appl Polym Sci* 50: 2017.
54. Nomura N, Narita M, Endo T (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 86.
55. (a) Nomura R, Endo T (1995) *Polymer Bull* 35: 683 (b) Nomura R, Endo T (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 5372.
56. Zhang Y, Chen X, Shen Z (1989) *Inorg Chimica Acta* 155: 263.
57. Wu J, Shen Z (1990) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 28: 1995.
58. Itoh H, Shirahama H, Yasuda H (1996) unpublished results.
59. Shen Z, Wu J, Wang G (1990) *J Polym Sci Chem Ed* 28: 1965.
60. Wu J, Shen Z (1990) *Polymer J* 22: 326.
61. (a) Inoue S, Tsuruta T (1969) *J Polym Sci Polym Lett Ed* 7: 287 (b) Kobayashi M, Inoue S, Tsuruta T (1973) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 11: 2383.
62. (a) Shen X, Zhang Y, Shen Z (1994) *Chinese J Polym Sci* 12: 28 (b) Shen Z, Chen X, Zhang Y (1994) *Macromol Chem Phys* 195: 2003.
63. (a) Machoon JP, Sigwalt P (1965) *Compt Rend* 260: 549 (b) Belonovskaja GP (1979) *Europ Polym J* 15: 185.
64. Dumas P, Spassky N, Sigwalt P (1972) *Makromol Chem* 156: 65.
65. Guerin PB, Sigwalt P (1974) *Eur Polym J* 10: 13.
66. Shen Z, Zhang Y, Pebg J, Ling L (1990) *Sci China* 33: 553.
67. Shen Z, Zhang Y (1994) *Chinese Sci Bull* 39: 717.
68. Shen Z, Sun J, Wu Li, Wu L (1990) *Acta Chim Sin* 48: 686.
69. Yao Y, Shen Q, private communication.
70. Shen Y, Zhang F, Zhang Y, Shen Z (1995) *Acta Polymerica Sin* 222.
71. Takemoto Y, Yasuda H, unpublished result.
72. Shen Y, Shen Z, Zhang Y, Yao K, private communication.
73. Jeske G, Shock LE, Swepstone PN, Schumann H, Marks TJ (1985) *J Am Chem Soc* 107: 8103.
74. (a) Yasuda H, Ihara E (1993) *J Synth Org Chem Jpn* 51: 931 (b) Yasuda H, Ihara E, Yoshioka S, Nodono M, Morimoto M, Yamashita M (1994) *Catalyst Design for Tailor-made Polyolefins, Kodansha-Elsevier*, p 237 (c) Nodono M, Ihara E, Yasuda H (1996) unpublished result.
75. Fu P, Mark TB (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 10747.
76. Mogstad AN, Waymouth RM (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 2282.
77. Coughlin EB, Shapiro PJ, Bercaw JE (1992) *Polym Prep* 33: 1226.
78. Bryan E, Bercaw JE (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 7607.
79. Ihara E, Nodono M, Yasuda H, Kanehisa N, Kai Y (1996) *Macromol Chem Phys* 197: 1909.

80. Evans WJ, Ulibbari TA, Ziller JW (1988) *J Am Chem Soc* 110: 6877.
81. Evans WJ, Ulibbari TA, Ziller JW (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 219.
82. Yang M, Cha C, Shen Z (1990) *Polymer J* 22: 919.
83. Kobayashi E, Aida S, Aoshima S, Furukawa J (1994) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 32: 1195.
84. Hayakawa T, Ihara E, Yasuda H (1995) 69th National Meeting of Chem Soc Jpn, 2B530.
85. Cheng XC, Shen Q (1993) *Chinese Chem Lett* 4: 743.
86. Hu J, Shen Q (1993) *Cuihua Xuebao* 11: 16.
87. Ishihara N, Seimiya T, Kuramoto M, Uoi M (1986) *Macromolecules* 19 2464.
88. Ishihara N, Kuramoto M, Uoi M (1988) *Macromolecules* 21: 3356.
89. Yu G, Chen W, Wang Y (1981) *Kexue Tongbao* 29: 412.
90. Ji X, Png S, Li Y, Ouyang J (1986) *Scientia Sinica* 29: 8.
91. Jin S, Guan J, Liang H, Shen Q (1993) *J Catalysis (Cuihua Xuebao)* 159: 14.
92. Hu J, Liang H, Shen Q (1993) *J. Rare Earths* 11: 304.
93. (a) Jin Y, Li F, Pei F, Wang F, Sun Y (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4397 (b) Li F, Jin Y, Pei K, Wang F (1994) *J Macromol Sci Pure Appl Chem* A31: 273.
94. (a) Jin Y, Li X, Sun Y, Ouyang J (1982) *Kexue Tongbau* 27: 1189 (b) Jin Y, Li X, Lin Y, Jin S, Shi E, Wang M (1989) *Chin Sci Bull* 34: 390.
95. Ricc G, Boffa G, Porri L (1986) *Markomol Chem Lapid Commun* 7: 355.
96. (a) Natta G, Porri L (1964) *Polym Prepr* 5: 1163 (b) Natta G, Porri (1966) *Adv Chem Ser* 52: 24.
97. Wang F, Sha R, Jin Y, Wang Y, Zheng Y (1980) *Scientific Sinica* 23: 172.
98. Li X, Sun Y, Jin Y (1986) *Acta Chimica Sinica* 44: 1163.
99. Hu Y, Ze L, Shen Q (1993) *J Rare Earths* 11: 304.
100. Lee DH, Wang JK, Ahn TO (1987) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 25: 1407.
101. Lee DH, Ahn TO (1988) *Polymer* 29: 71.
102. Jenkins DK (1985) *Polymer* 26: 147.
103. Julemont M, Walckiers E, Wariam R, Teyssie P (1974) *Makromol Chem* 175: 1675.
104. Ji YL, Liu GD, Yu GQ (1989) *J Macrimol Sci Chem* A26: 405.
105. Yu G, Li Y, Qu Y, Liu X (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 6702.
106. Zhu Y, Liu Y, Yu G, Li X (1994) *China Synth Rubber Ind* 17: 280.
107. (a) Yin Z, Yu G, Li Y, Qu Y (1993) *Yinyong Huaxue* 10: 5. (b) Li Y, Shufen P, Dawei X, Ouyang J (1985) *Polym Commun* 2: 111.
108. Bergbreiter DE, Chen LB, Chandran R (1985) *Macromolecules* 18: 1055.
109. Wang P, Jin Y, Pei F, Jing F, Sun Y (1994) *Acta Polym Sin* 4: 392.
110. Ito T, Shirakawa H, Ikeda S (1974) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 12: 11.
111. Luttinger LB (1962) *J Org Chem* 27: 159.
112. Shen Z, Wang Z, Can Y (1985) *Inorg Chimica Acta* 110: 55.
113. Shen Z, Yang M, Shi M, Cai Y (1982) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 20: 411.
114. Shen Z, Yu L, Yang M (1985) *Inorg Chimica Acta* 109: 55.
115. Hu X, Wang F, Zhao X, Yan D (1987) *Chin J Polym sci* 5: 221.
116. Zhao J, Yang M, Yuan Y, Shen Z (1988) *Zhonggono Xitu Xuebao* 6: 17.
117. Shen Z, Farona MF (1984) *J Polym Sci Polym Chem Ed* 22: 1009.
118. Shen Z, Farona MF (1983) *Polym Bull* 10: 298.
119. Mullagaliev IR, Mudarisova RK (1988) *Izv Akad Nauk SSSR Ser Khim* 7: 1687.
120. Heers HJ, Teuben JH (1991) *Organometallics* 10: 1980.
121. Akita M, Yasuda H, Nakamura A (1984) *Bull Chem Soc Jpn* 57: 480.
122. Yasuda H, Furo M, Yamamoto H, Nakamura A, Miyake S, Kibino N (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 5115.
123. Yang Y, Seyam AM, Fuad PF, Marks TJ (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4625.

Editor: Professor Hiroshi Fujita  
Received December 1996.

# Polymerizations in Liquid and Supercritical Carbon Dioxide

Dorian A. Canelas<sup>1</sup> and Joseph M. DeSimone<sup>2</sup>

Department of Chemistry, CB #3290, Venable and Kenan Laboratories,  
University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, Chapel Hill, NC 27599, USA

<sup>1</sup>E-mail: [dcanelas@email.unc.edu](mailto:dcanelas@email.unc.edu)    <sup>2</sup>E-mail: [Desimone@email.unc.edu](mailto:Desimone@email.unc.edu)

In the past few years, remarkable progress has been made in defining the scope and limitations of carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) as an inert polymerization medium. It has appear that CO<sub>2</sub> represents a viable solvent choice for a variety of propagation mechanisms including both chain growth and step growth polymerizations. When the environmental advantages of CO<sub>2</sub> are combined with its ability to be used as a solvent/dispersing medium for a wide variety of chemical reactions, it becomes clear that CO<sub>2</sub> may be the solvent of the future for the polymer industry. In addition, the design and synthesis of micelle-forming surfactants for CO<sub>2</sub> opens the doors for use of surfactant-modified CO<sub>2</sub> as the medium for heterogeneous polymerizations. This review will focus on the use of CO<sub>2</sub> as an inert solvent for the synthesis and processing of polymers.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| <b>List of Symbols and Abbreviations</b> . . . . .       | 104 |
| <b>1 Introduction</b> . . . . .                          | 106 |
| <b>2 Homogeneous Solution Polymerizations</b> . . . . .  | 111 |
| 2.1 Fluoropolymers . . . . .                             | 111 |
| 2.1.1 Free Radical Chain Growth . . . . .                | 111 |
| 2.1.2 Cationic Chain Growth . . . . .                    | 114 |
| <b>3 Heterogeneous Polymerizations</b> . . . . .         | 115 |
| 3.1 Free Radical Precipitation Polymerizations . . . . . | 115 |
| 3.2 Dispersion and Emulsion Polymerizations . . . . .    | 118 |
| 3.2.1 Design and Synthesis of Stabilizers . . . . .      | 119 |
| 3.2.2 Polymerization of Lipophilic Monomers . . . . .    | 123 |
| 3.2.3 Polymerization of Hydrophilic Monomers . . . . .   | 127 |
| 3.2.4 Polymer Blends . . . . .                           | 129 |
| 3.3 Heterogeneous Cationic Polymerizations . . . . .     | 129 |
| 3.4 Metal Catalyzed Polymerizations . . . . .            | 133 |
| 3.4.1 Ring Opening Metathesis Polymerizations . . . . .  | 133 |
| 3.4.2 Oxidative Coupling Polymerizations . . . . .       | 134 |
| 3.5 Step Growth Polymerizations . . . . .                | 135 |
| 3.6 Hybrid Systems . . . . .                             | 136 |
| <b>4 Conclusions</b> . . . . .                           | 137 |
| <b>5 References</b> . . . . .                            | 137 |

## List of Symbols and Abbreviations

|                    |   |
|--------------------|---|
| AIBN               | – 2,2'-azobis(isobutyronitrile)   |
| ASB                | – anchor-soluble balance  |
| BEMO               | – 3,3'-bis(ethoxymethyl)oxetane   |
| CFCs               | – chlorofluorocarbons   |
| CO <sub>2</sub>    | – carbon dioxide  |
| D <sub>4</sub>     | – octamethylcyclotetrasiloxane  |
| FOA                | – 1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate  |
| FO <sub>x</sub> -7 | – 3-methyl-3'-[(1,1-dihydroheptafluorobutoxy)methyl]oxetane                                   |
| 5FSt               | – pentafluorostyrene  |
| LCST               | – lower critical solution temperature   |
| HDPE               | – high density polyethylene   |
| HFP                | – hexafluoropropylene   |
| HLB                | – hydrophilic-lipophilic balance  |
| IBVE               | – isobutyl vinyl ether  |
| MMA                | – methyl methacrylate   |
| M <sub>n</sub>     | – number average molecular weight   |
| M <sub>w</sub>     | – weight average molecular weight   |
| MWD                | – molecular weight distribution   |
| P <sub>c</sub>     | – critical pressure   |
| PAA                | – poly(acrylic acid)  |
| PAN                | – poly(acrylonitrile)   |
| PC                 | – poly(carbonate)   |
| PCTFE              | – poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene)   |
| PDI                | – polydispersity index of the molecular weight distribution (M <sub>w</sub> /M <sub>n</sub> ) |
| PDMS               | – poly(dimethylsiloxane)  |
| PEMA               | – poly(ethyl methacrylate)  |
| PEO                | – poly(ethylene oxide)  |
| PET                | – poly(ethylene terephthalate)  |
| PFOA               | – poly(1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate)  |
| PMA                | – poly(methyl acrylate)   |
| PMMA               | – poly(methyl methacrylate)   |
| PMP                | – poly(4-methyl-1-pentene)  |
| PPO                | – poly(2,6-dimethylphenylene oxide)   |
| PPVE               | – perfluoro(propyl vinyl ether)   |
| PS                 | – polystyrene   |
| PVAc               | – poly(vinyl acetate)   |
| PVC                | – poly(vinyl chloride)  |
| PVF <sub>2</sub>   | – poly(vinylidene fluoride)   |
| PTFE               | – poly(tetrafluoroethylene)   |
| STF                | – <i>p</i> -perfluoroethyleneoxymethylstyrene   |
| T <sub>c</sub>     | – critical temperature  |

- $T_g$  – glass transition temperature
- TEMPO – 2,2,6,6-tetramethyl-1-piperidinyloxy free radical
- TFE – tetrafluoroethylene
- TMPCl – 2-chloro-2,4,4-trimethylpentane
- VF<sub>2</sub> – vinylidene fluoride
- VOCs – volatile organic compounds

## 1 Introduction

Recently, the scientific community has developed considerable interest in using liquid and supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> as a continuous phase for polymerization reactions. The polymer industry, in particular, is under increasing scrutiny to reduce emission of volatile organic compounds (VOCs), to completely phase out the use of chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs), and to reduce the generation of aqueous waste streams. Hence, these environmental concerns provide the principle driving force which is motivating the development of CO<sub>2</sub>-based polymerization technologies. Unique properties such as tunable density and the ability to significantly plasticize glassy polymers make supercritical fluids interesting solvents which have been relatively unstudied. Since 1990, several groups have made a concerted effort to explore the scope and limitations of this fluid in polymer synthesis. This review will focus on the results of these recent efforts as well as the early work in this field which laid the groundwork for future investigations.

In general, the properties of supercritical fluids make them interesting media in which to conduct chemical reactions. A supercritical fluid can be defined as a substance or mixture at conditions which exceed the critical temperature ( $T_c$ ) and critical pressure ( $P_c$ ). One of the primary advantages of employing a supercritical fluid as the continuous phase lies in the ability to manipulate the solvent strength (dielectric constant) simply by varying the temperature and pressure of the system. Additionally, supercritical fluids have properties which are intermediate between those of a liquid and those of a gas. As an illustration, a supercritical fluid can have liquid-like density and simultaneously possess gas-like viscosity. For more information, the reader is referred to several books which have been published on supercritical fluid science and technology [1–4].

Savage and coworkers have recently published a review which summarizes many of the reactions which have been conducted at supercritical conditions in a variety of fluids [5]. In addition to reviewing some of the early work in polymerizations, their article gives a broad overview of the recent progress which has been made in both fundamental studies of the solvent properties of supercritical fluids as well as in applications ranging from electrochemistry to biomass utilization. In the arena of polymerizations, Scholsky reviewed polymerizations which occur at supercritical conditions, including those in which the system is above the critical conditions of the monomer, such as the high pressure process for the production of low density polyethylene [6]. Herein, on the other hand, we focus only on polymerizations which employ CO<sub>2</sub> as the inert continuous phase. This area is rapidly emerging as increasing evidence indicates that CO<sub>2</sub> constitutes the most logical solvent choice for a variety of polymerizations [7].

For numerous reasons, CO<sub>2</sub> represents an extremely attractive continuous phase in many applications. First of all, CO<sub>2</sub> is naturally occurring and readily



available. Sources of CO<sub>2</sub> include both abundant natural reservoirs and recycled CO<sub>2</sub> which is recovered from the exhaust streams of power plants and industrial plants which produce ethanol, ammonia, hydrogen, and ethylene oxide [8]. Additionally, CO<sub>2</sub> has an easily accessible critical point with a T<sub>c</sub> of 31.1 °C and a P<sub>c</sub> of 73.8 bar [9]. Fig. 1 depicts the one component phase diagram for pure CO<sub>2</sub> [9]. Other benefits of the employment of CO<sub>2</sub> as a solvent include that it is inexpensive, non-flammable, non-toxic, and easily recycled. Moreover, it eliminates the need for energy intensive drying processes; the products from a polymerization conducted in CO<sub>2</sub> are isolated completely dry upon venting to remove the CO<sub>2</sub>. Finally, liquid and supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> provide a relatively unexplored reaction medium which may give rise to new chemistry, especially in reactions which exhibit large solvent effects.

Because of its tunable density and low viscosity, synthetic organic chemists are beginning to utilize supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> as a medium for exploring reaction mechanisms and solvent cage effects [10, 11]. Asymmetric catalysis represents an area in which supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> may be useful as a solvent [12]. For polymerization reactions, in particular, the solvency of CO<sub>2</sub> as a medium and the plasticization effects of CO<sub>2</sub> on the resulting polymeric products represent the properties of central importance. These significant properties of CO<sub>2</sub> are explored in detail below. When all of these factors are combined with the fact that CO<sub>2</sub> may obviate the use of much more expensive and hazardous solvents,

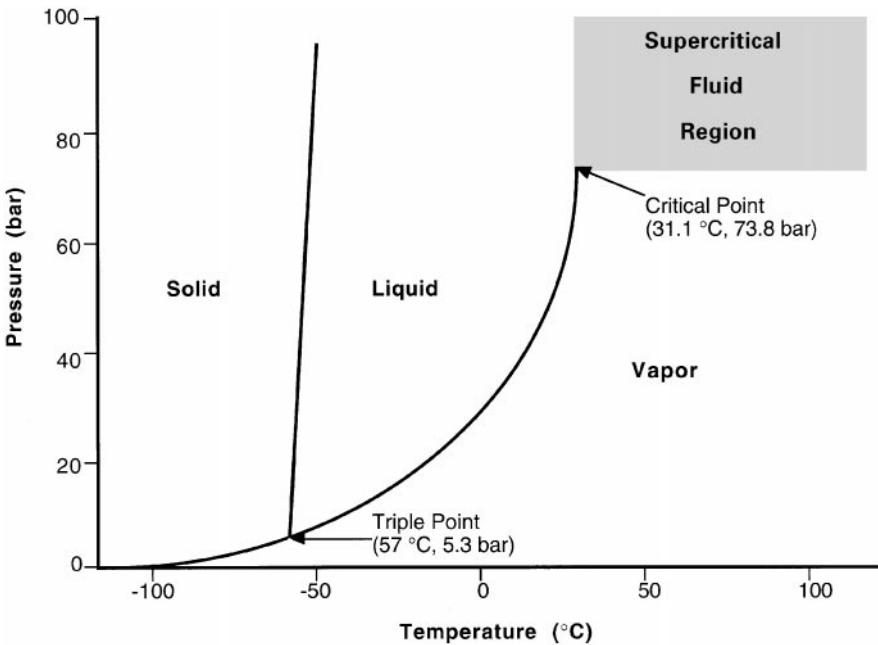


Fig. 1. One component phase diagram for pure CO<sub>2</sub>

one cannot deny the importance of investigating its use as a continuous phase for polymer synthesis and processing.

When  $\text{CO}_2$  is used as the continuous phase for a polymerization reaction, the solvency of the reagents and products is of primary importance. To begin with,  $\text{CO}_2$  has a low dielectric constant; by varying temperature and density, Keyes and Kirkwood reported values ranging from 1.01 to 1.45 for gaseous  $\text{CO}_2$  and 1.60–1.67 for liquid  $\text{CO}_2$  [13]. The solubility parameter for  $\text{CO}_2$ , which is strongly dependent on pressure, has been calculated by McFann and coworkers [14]. It has been noted that  $\text{CO}_2$  behaves very much like a hydrocarbon solvent with respect to its capability to dissolve small molecules, and thus many monomers exhibit high solubility in  $\text{CO}_2$  [15]. Even though it is a relatively low dielectric media,  $\text{CO}_2$  is a Lewis acid, and it has a strong quadrupole moment that allows it to dissolve some polar molecules such as methanol [16]. In contrast, other polar molecules such as amides, ureas, urethanes and azo dyes exhibit very poor solubility in  $\text{CO}_2$  [15]. More importantly, the solubility of water was initially investigated by Lowry and Erickson who determined that less than 0.05 weight percent of water dissolves in liquid  $\text{CO}_2$  over a range of temperatures [17]. King and coworkers have completed a more extensive study of the  $\text{CO}_2$ /water binary system at both liquid and supercritical conditions [18]. Bartle and coworkers have compiled a large table of the solubilities of compounds of low volatility in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  [19]. Indeed, the solubility characteristics of compressed  $\text{CO}_2$  with respect to small molecules has been extensively studied.

In contrast to its behavior with respect to small molecules,  $\text{CO}_2$  acts as an exceedingly poor solvent for most high molar mass polymers. As an illustration, at  $80^\circ\text{C}$  a pressure of over 2000 bar is required to obtain a homogeneous solution of poly(methyl acrylate) (PMA;  $\langle M_n \rangle = 10\,600$  g/mol) in  $\text{CO}_2$  [20]. In fact, the only classes of polymers which have been shown to demonstrate good solubility in carbon dioxide at mild conditions ( $T = 100^\circ\text{C}$ ,  $P = 350$  bar) are fluoropolymers and silicones [4, 21–25]. While the parameters which govern the solubility of polymeric materials in  $\text{CO}_2$  are not yet completely understood, numerous studies have explored the possible specific solute-solvent interactions between various polymers and  $\text{CO}_2$ . Early work in this area suggested that weak dipole–dipole interactions exist between  $\text{CO}_2$  and functional groups on polymer chains such as sulfones [26] and carbonyls [27]. Later, systematic studies of the interactions between  $\text{CO}_2$  and silicones indicated that specific interactions between  $\text{CO}_2$  and the silicone of the polymer backbone governs the high solubility of these types of polymers [28]. Other work by Stern's group revealed that the interactions between  $\text{CO}_2$  and poly(trifluoropropyl methyl siloxane) are anomalously high, and the authors attributed this finding to specific interactions between  $\text{CO}_2$  and the polar fluorine containing group [28, 29]. Finally, recent work which involves the use of Fourier transform infrared spectroscopy reveals that  $\text{CO}_2$  exhibits Lewis acid-base type interactions with electron donating functional groups of polymer chains such as the carbonyl group of poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA) [30]. Regardless of the

nature of these interactions, the poor solubility of most polymers in CO<sub>2</sub> demands that the polymerization of most industrially important hydrocarbon monomers at reasonably accessible temperatures and pressures be conducted via heterogeneous polymerization techniques.

In addition to the solubility considerations, the plasticization of the resulting polymers by CO<sub>2</sub> constitutes another important issue which must be taken into account when polymerizations are conducted in liquid or supercritical CO<sub>2</sub>. This plasticization of polymers plays a key role in both the diffusion of monomer into the polymer phase [31–33] as well as the incorporation of additives to a polymer matrix [34–37]. In 1982, Wang, Kramer, and Sachse studied the effects of high pressure CO<sub>2</sub> on the glass transition temperature and mechanical properties of polystyrene (PS) by measuring Young’s modulus and creep compliance [38]. This work demonstrated the severe plasticization of PS by CO<sub>2</sub> as shown in Fig. 2 which depicts the T<sub>g</sub> of PS as a function of CO<sub>2</sub> pressure [38]. In 1985, Chiou, Barlow, and Paul used differential scanning calorimetry to estimate the glass transition temperatures of polymers containing the dissolved gas [39]. In these experiments, the authors studied the plasticization of PMMA, PS, polycarbonate (PC), poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC), poly(ethylene terephthalate) (PET), and blends of PMMA and poly(vinylidene fluoride) (PVF<sub>2</sub>) by CO<sub>2</sub> at pressures up to 25 bar, and reductions in T<sub>g</sub> of up to 50 °C were observed. Wissinger and Paulaitis measured polymer swelling [40] and creep compliance as a function of time [41] to determine the T<sub>g</sub>s of PC, PMMA, and PS in CO<sub>2</sub> at elevated pressures. Goel and Beckman have examined the plasticization of PMMA by CO<sub>2</sub> as a function of pressure using dielectric measurements [42]. Condo, Paul, and Johnston have completed an in-depth study of the effect of

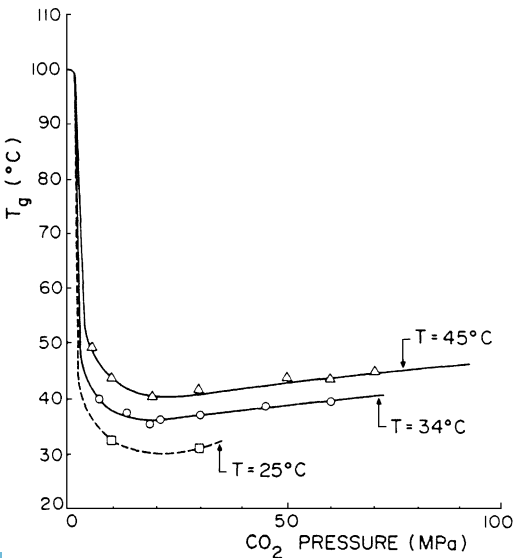


Fig. 2. T<sub>g</sub> of polystyrene as a function of CO<sub>2</sub> pressure at different temperatures [38]

CO<sub>2</sub> solubility on T<sub>g</sub> versus CO<sub>2</sub> partial pressure behavior for PMMA, PS, and a random copolymer of PMMA and PS [43]. Condo and Johnston have also used in situ measurements of creep compliance to determine the T<sub>g</sub> depression of PMMA and poly(ethyl methacrylate) (PEMA) in CO<sub>2</sub> [44]. Kamiya and coworkers have studied the sorption and dilation of PEMA, poly(vinyl benzoate), and poly(vinyl butyral) [45, 46]. Handa and coworkers have studied the depression of the glass transition temperature of poly(2,6-dimethyl phenylene oxide) (PPO) by CO<sub>2</sub> at supercritical conditions [47]. Briscoe and Kelly have explored the plasticization of polyurethanes in CO<sub>2</sub> by monitoring the hydrogen bonding of the N–H group via infrared spectroscopy [48]. Finally, Shieh and coworkers have explored the interactions of supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> with nine different semi-crystalline polymers and eleven different amorphous polymers [49, 50]. By systematically examining both thermal and mechanical properties of polymers over a wide range of conditions, they concluded that both the morphology and polarity of the polymer play key roles in determining the absorption of CO<sub>2</sub> and subsequent plasticization. Recently, various models have been developed to predict the depression of the T<sub>g</sub> of a polymer in the presence of compressed fluids. Johnston and coworkers developed their model using lattice fluid theory and the Gibbs–Di Marzio criterion [51]. In contrast, Kalospiros and Paulaitis took a molecular thermodynamic approach to develop their predictive model [52]. The predictions of T<sub>g</sub> by these models are in reasonable agreement with the experimental data. Without a doubt, the plasticization of polymers by compressed CO<sub>2</sub> plays an important role in many of the polymerization processes which are being developed.

Research which began in the 1980s focused on the many advantages that supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> offers in polymer processing. These well developed processing methods for polymers in supercritical fluids can be taken advantage of most efficiently when the polymer is actually synthesized in the supercritical medium. For example, supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> can be used to efficiently extract residual monomer, solvent, or catalyst from a solid polymer [4]. In addition, because of the density of a supercritical fluid can be changed dramatically by simply altering the pressure, a mixture of polymers of different molecular weights can be efficiently fractionated [22, 53–55]. Since supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> sorption by a polymer reduces its melt and solution viscosities [56–58], the morphology of the polymer can be controlled with supercritical drying [59] or foaming [60–62]. Other processing advantages afforded by supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> stem from its easily accessible critical conditions. Because its T<sub>c</sub> is very close to room temperature, supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> can be used in applications involving polymers and heat sensitive materials such as enzymes [63, 64], flavors [65], pharmaceuticals [66], and highly reactive monomers [67]. While the polymer industry is just beginning to harness this advantage in the area of polymer processing, the food industry has been taking advantage of supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> for years, proving that its use is not only feasible but also extremely attractive economically on a world wide scale. As an illustration, these advantages have been exploited by the coffee industry, which now uses supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> to decaffeinate coffee on

an industrial scale; in the past, dichloromethane was the solvent employed in this process [68, 69]. In fact, more than 90% of supercritical fluid separations performed today use  $\text{CO}_2$  as the eluent [70]. Without a doubt, the many polymer processing advantages provided by  $\text{CO}_2$  have just begun to be explored.

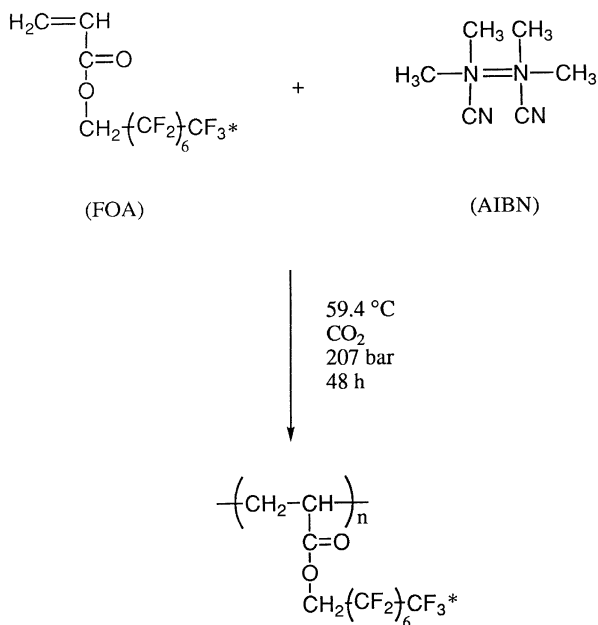
## 2 Homogeneous Solution Polymerizations

### 2.1 Fluoropolymers

Poor solubility in most common organic solvents represents an inherent problem in the synthesis and processing of many high molar mass fluoropolymers. In fact, CFCs and carbon dioxide are the best solvents for amorphous varieties of fluoropolymers. Due to the environmental problems associated with CFCs, the international community is seeking to replace them with more benign compounds such as hydrochlorofluorocarbons and hydrofluorocarbons. However, the environmental problems which will be created by the use of these replacement compounds such as the accumulation of trifluoroacetic acid in the atmosphere clouds this issue [71]. Carbon dioxide presents an ideal inert solvent to effect the polymerization of these types of highly fluorinated monomers and obviates the use of solvents that are being phased out because of environmental concerns.

#### 2.1.1 Free Radical Chain Growth

Using supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  as the solvent, we have used free radical initiators to effect the synthesis of high molar mass amorphous fluoropolymers [23, 72–74]. Due to the high solubility of these polymers in the  $\text{CO}_2$  continuous phase, the polymerizations remained homogeneous throughout the course of the reactions. Several fluorinated acrylate monomers have been polymerized using this methodology to give high yields of polymer. For example, the polymerization of 1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate (FOA) is shown in Scheme 1. Other fluorinated acrylate polymers which have been synthesized in this manner include poly[2-(*N*-ethylperfluorooctanesulfonamido)ethyl acrylate], poly[2-(*N*-ethylperfluoro-octanesulfonamido)ethyl methacrylate], and poly[2-(*N*-methylperfluorooctane-sulfonamido)ethyl acrylate] [75]. Styrenes with a perfluoroalkyl side chains in the *para* position, such as *p*-perfluoroethyleneoxymethylstyrene (STF), constitute a second type of monomer polymerized via homogeneous solution polymerization in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  [72]. The synthesis and subsequent polymerization of STF is shown in Scheme 2. The product obtained from this polymerization in  $\text{CO}_2$  was identical to the product of a solution

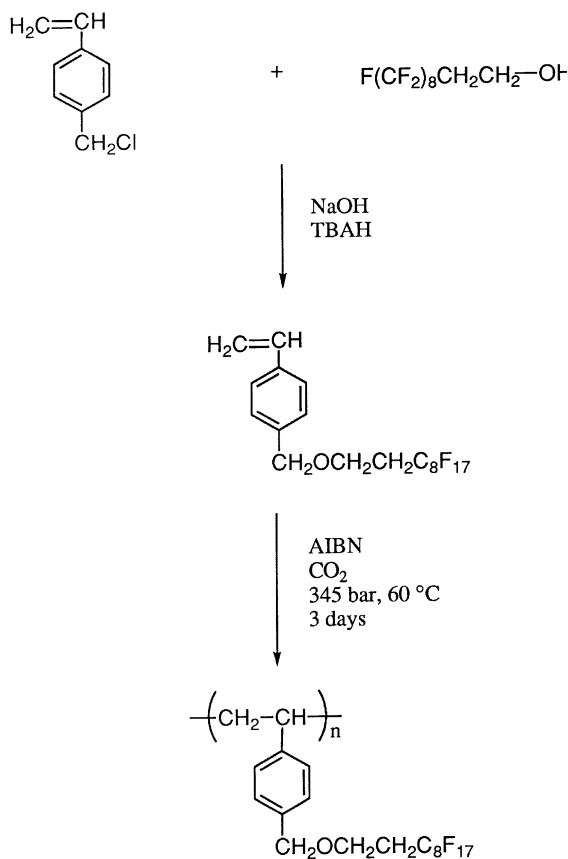


**Scheme 1.** Homopolymerization of FOA in  $\text{CO}_2$ . \* Contains ca. 25%  $-\text{CF}_3$  branches [23]

polymerization in 1,1,2-trichloro-1,2,2-trifluoroethane (Freon-113), indicating that  $\text{CO}_2$  does indeed represent an exceptionally good replacement solvent for this type of reaction in a CFC. Moreover, this technique has proven to be valuable in the synthesis of statistical copolymers of the appropriate fluorinated monomers and other hydrocarbon monomers such as methyl methacrylate (MMA), butyl acrylate, ethylene, and styrene (see Table 1). Homogeneous solution polymerization has also been employed to prepare  $\text{CO}_2$ -soluble polymeric amines by copolymerizing FOA with 2-(dimethylamino)ethylacrylate or 4-vinylpyridine [76].

We have also investigated the kinetics of free radical initiation using azobisisobutyronitrile (AIBN) as the initiator [24]. Using high pressure ultraviolet spectroscopy, it was shown that AIBN decomposes slower in  $\text{CO}_2$  than in a traditional hydrocarbon liquid solvent such as benzene, but with much greater efficiency due to the decreased solvent cage effect in the low viscosity supercritical medium. The conclusion of this work was that  $\text{CO}_2$  is inert to free radicals and therefore represents an excellent solvent for conducting free radical polymerizations.

The polymerization and oligomerization of fluorolefins in  $\text{CO}_2$  has particular advantages over other solvents due to the lack of chain transfer to  $\text{CO}_2$ . The radical derived from fluorolefin monomers such as TFE are highly electrophilic and will chain transfer to almost any hydrocarbon present. In addition, highly reactive monomers such as TFE may be handled more safely as a mixture with



**Scheme 2.** Synthesis and polymerization of STF [72]

**Table 1.** Statistical copolymers of FOA with vinyl monomers. Polymerizations were conducted at 59.4 ± 0.1 °C and 345 ± 0.5 bar for 48 hours in  $\text{CO}_2$ . Intrinsic viscosities were determined in 1,1,2-trifluoroethane (Freon-113) at 30 °C [23]

| Copolymer                      | Feed Ratio | Incorporated | Intrinsic Viscosity (dL/g) |
|--------------------------------|------------|--------------|----------------------------|
| poly(FOA- <i>co</i> -MMA)      | 0.47       | 0.57         | 0.10                       |
| poly(FOA- <i>co</i> -styrene)  | 0.48       | 0.58         | 0.15                       |
| poly(FOA- <i>co</i> -BA)       | 0.53       | 0.57         | 0.45                       |
| poly(FOA- <i>co</i> -ethylene) | 0.35       | –            | 0.14                       |

$\text{CO}_2$  [67]. Early work examining the free-radical telomerization of TFE in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  took advantage of the high solubility of the low molecular weight perfluoroalkyl iodides products to prepare these materials homogeneously [77]. In these reactions, we utilized perfluorobutyl iodide as the telogen

and reactions were run both in the presence and absence of the thermal initiator AIBN. In the presence of AIBN, the results were found to be inconsistent and irreproducible, presumably due to chain transfer to initiator. The results from the experiments conducted in the absence of initiator are shown in Table 2, and a general telomerization of TFE in CO<sub>2</sub> is shown in Scheme 3. As Table 2 illustrates, the perfluoroalkyl iodides prepared in this manner had both controlled molecular weights and narrow molecular weight distributions (MWD). One of the major advantages of this process lies in the fact that the monomer can be used directly without prior removal of the CO<sub>2</sub> which is required for the safe shipping and handling of TFE. In addition, the results from these experiments show that CO<sub>2</sub> acts as an inert solvent even in the presence of highly electrophilic fluorocarbon radicals.

### 2.1.2 Cationic Chain Growth

We have polymerized several fluorinated cyclic and vinyl ethers via homogeneous cationic polymerization in liquid and supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [78]. To begin with, two vinyl ethers bearing fluorinated side chains were polymerized at 40 °C in a supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase using adventitious water initiation with ethylaluminum dichloride as the Lewis acid coinitiator (see Scheme 4). The monomers and the coinitiator were soluble in CO<sub>2</sub>, and as expected the solutions remained homogeneous throughout the course of the polymerizations. Conversion of these reactions were typically around 40%, and the polymer bearing the fluorinated sulfonamide side chain had a number average molecular weight (M<sub>n</sub>) of 4.5 × 10<sup>3</sup> g/mol with a polydispersity index (PDI) of 1.6. In another experiment, a fluorinated oxetane, 3-methyl-3'-[(1,1-dihydroheptafluorobutoxy)methyl]oxetane (FOx-7), was polymerized homogeneously in liquid CO<sub>2</sub> at 0 °C and 289 bar for 4 h (See Scheme 5). In this reaction,

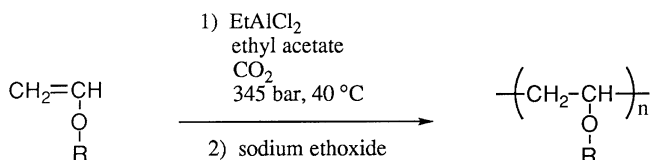
**Table 2.** Experimental results from the telomerizations of TFE in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub>. Perfluorobutyl iodide was employed as the telogen [77]

| [monomer]/[telogen] | yield (%) | M <sub>n</sub> (g/mol) | PDI  |
|---------------------|-----------|------------------------|------|
| 1.6                 | 88        | 570                    | 1.35 |
| 1.5                 | 87        | 590                    | 1.38 |
| 1.8                 | 86        | 630                    | 1.38 |
| 2.2                 | 78        | 650                    | 1.44 |



**Scheme 3.** Telomerization of TFE in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [77]

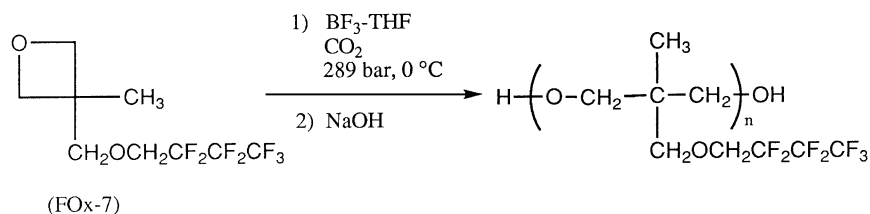




R =  $-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2(\text{CF}_2)_n\text{CF}_3$ ; n = 5-7

R =  $-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{NSO}_2\text{C}_8\text{F}_{17}$   
 $\quad \quad \quad |$   
 $\quad \quad \quad \text{C}_3\text{H}_7$

**Scheme 4.** Homogeneous polymerization of fluorinated vinyl ethers in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  [78]



**Scheme 5.** Homogeneous cationic polymerization of FOx-7 in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  [78]

trifluoroethanol was used as the initiator and boron trifluoride tetrahydrofuranate as the coinitiator. The polymerizations resulted in a 77% yield of polymer with a  $M_n$  of  $2.0 \times 10^4$  g/mol and a PDI of 2.0. This result for the oxetane polymerization in  $\text{CO}_2$  was comparable to a control experiment which was conducted in Freon-113, another indication that  $\text{CO}_2$  provides an excellent alternative to CFCs in solvent applications. These results also indicate that cationic chain growth can effectively be used in the homogeneous polymerization of fluorinated monomers in  $\text{CO}_2$ .

### 3 Heterogeneous Polymerizations

#### 3.1 Free Radical Precipitation Polymerizations

Precipitation polymerizations dominated the early work which aimed at preparing industrially important hydrocarbon polymers in  $\text{CO}_2$ . In 1968, Hagiwara and coworkers explored the polymerization of ethylene in  $\text{CO}_2$  using both gamma radiation and AIBN as free radical initiators [79]. Reactions were conducted at pressures of 440 bar and over the temperature range of 20–45 °C.

CO<sub>2</sub> was chosen to be studied as a solvent for these polymerizations because of its high stability to ionizing radiation. In these studies, the infrared spectra of the polymers revealed that the presence of the CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase had little effect on the polymer structure. These authors also studied the kinetics of initiation, propagation, and termination of the ethylene polymerizations in liquid CO<sub>2</sub> which were gamma radiation induced [80,81]. In these studies, the authors determined that the rate of initiation increased with increasing CO<sub>2</sub> concentration because of the effects of the electron density of the reaction mixture on the absorption of the gamma radiation energy. In addition, while the CO<sub>2</sub> was shown to be inert to the growing oligomeric radicals at low dose rates ( $9.0 \times 10^2$  rad/h), the oxygen which is produced at high dose rates ( $2.5 \times 10^4$  rad/h) causes termination and the formation of carbonyl groups in the polymer. To extend this work and further investigate electron density and the role of reactive additives, the authors also studied the effects of various alkyl halides on the radiation induced polymerization of ethylene in CO<sub>2</sub> [82]. Moreover, they obtained a patent for the continuous polymerization of ethylene in CO<sub>2</sub> by means of a tubular reactor [83]. They noted that while the ethylene monomer was initially soluble in the liquid CO<sub>2</sub>, the polyethylene produced existed in a powder form which could easily be removed from the reactor. Powder products typically result from precipitation polymerizations; the advantage of using CO<sub>2</sub> is the dryness of the resulting polymer.

In 1968, a French Patent issued to the Sumitomo Chemical Company disclosed the polymerization of several vinyl monomers in CO<sub>2</sub> [84]. The United States version of this patent was issued in 1970, when Fukui and coworkers demonstrated the precipitation polymerization of several hydrocarbon monomers in liquid and supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [85]. As examples of this methodology, they demonstrated the preparation of the homopolymers PVC, PS, poly(acrylonitrile) (PAN), poly(acrylic acid) (PAA), and poly(vinyl acetate) (PVAc). In addition, they prepared the random copolymers PS-*co*-PMMA and PVC-*co*-PVAc. In 1986, the BASF Corporation was issued a Canadian Patent for the preparation of polymer powders through the precipitation polymerization of monomers in carbon dioxide at superatmospheric pressures [86]. Monomers which were polymerized as examples in this patent included 2-hydroxyethylacrylate and *N*-vinylcarboxamides such as *N*-vinyl formamide and *N*-vinyl pyrrolidone.

In 1988, Terry and coworkers attempted to homopolymerize ethylene, 1-octene, and 1-decene in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [87]. The purpose of their work was to increase the viscosity of supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> for enhanced oil recovery applications. They utilized the free radical initiators benzoyl peroxide and *tert*-butylperoxoate and conducted polymerization for 24–48 h at 100–130 bar and 71 °C. In these experiments, the resulting polymers were not well studied, but solubility studies on the products confirmed that they were relatively insoluble in the continuous phase and thus were not effective as viscosity enhancing agents. In addition,  $\alpha$ -olefins are known not to yield high polymer using free radical methods due to extensive chain transfer to monomer.

The precipitation polymerization of acrylic acid has been well studied. An advantage of this process lies in the extremely fast propagation rate of this reaction which allows the synthesis of high molecular weight PAA even though it demonstrates poor solubility in the continuous phase. In 1986, BASF Corporation was issued a Canadian patent for this process which cited several different reaction conditions which all resulted in the successful preparation of PAA in a carbon dioxide continuous phase [88]. In 1989, a European patent application filed by B.F. Goodrich was published which described the preparation of acrylic acid type thickening agents in CO<sub>2</sub> [89]. We have explored the synthesis of PAA in supercritical carbon dioxide and have expanded this study to include effective molecular weight control through the use of ethyl mercaptan as a chain transfer agent [90]. Other work in this area by Dada and coworkers has shown that the molecular weight of the PAA product can be controlled by manipulation of the temperature and pressure [91].

We have recently reported the copolymerizations of tetrafluoroethylene (TFE) with perfluoro(propyl vinyl ether) (PPVE) and with hexafluoropropylene (HFP) in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [92,93]. In these precipitation polymerizations, bis(perfluoro-2-propoxy propionyl)peroxide was used as the free radical initiator and reactions were conducted at 35 °C and pressures below 133 bar. Good yields of high molar mass ( $\sim 10^6$  g/mol) copolymers resulted from these polymerizations. This CO<sub>2</sub>-based system offers three primary advantages over the conventional aqueous process. First of all, the highly electrophilic monomers derived from fluorolefin monomers do not chain transfer to the CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase. The second advantage lies in the fact that the aqueous process results in the production of materials with unstable and undesirable carboxylic acid and acid fluoride end-groups which can cause processing and performance problems. In the CO<sub>2</sub>-based polymerization process, these deleterious end groups do not form to a significant extent. The third advantage lies in the safety issues involved in the shipping and handling of TFE as a mixture with CO<sub>2</sub> [67]; conducting the polymerizations directly in a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase eliminates the need for its removal.

Finally, the use of stable free radical polymerization techniques in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> represents an exciting new topic of research. Work in this area by Odell and Hamer involves the use of reversibly terminating stable free radicals generated by systems such as benzoyl peroxide or AIBN and 2,2,6,6-tetramethyl-1-piperidinyloxy free radical (TEMPO) [94]. In these experiments, styrene was polymerized at a temperature of 125 °C and a pressure of 240–275 bar CO<sub>2</sub>. When the concentration of monomer was low (10% by volume) the low conversion of PS which was produced had a  $M_n$  of about 3000 g/mol and a narrow MWD (PDI  $\sim 1.3$ ). NMR analysis showed that the precipitated PS chains are primarily TEMPO capped, and the polymer could be isolated and then subsequently extended by the addition of more styrene under an inert argon blanket. The authors also demonstrated that the chains could be extended

by keeping the precipitated PS in the CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase and increasing the monomer concentration in the reactor to 30% by volume.

### 3.2 Dispersion and Emulsion Polymerizations

Because the terminology to describe heterogeneous polymerization processes has been used inconsistently in the literature, a brief treatment of this subject is necessary to avoid confusion. In a heterogeneous process, either the monomer or the resulting polymer is insoluble in the continuous phase. The four common heterogeneous processes of suspension, emulsion, dispersion, and precipitation polymerization can be clearly distinguished on the basis the initial state of the polymerization mixture, the kinetics of polymerization, the mechanism of particle formation, and the shape and size of the final polymer particles [95]. Precipitation polymerizations which have been conducted in CO<sub>2</sub> are reviewed in Sect. 3.1. Dispersion and emulsion polymerization constitute the other two heterogeneous polymerization methods which have been explored using CO<sub>2</sub>, and a brief discussion of the traditional definitions of these colloid forming processes follows.

In an emulsion polymerization, the reaction mixture is initially heterogeneous due to the poor solubility of the monomer in the continuous phase. In order for a reaction to take advantage of the desirable Smith–Ewart kinetics [96], the monomer and initiator must be segregated with the initiator preferentially dissolved in the continuous phase and not the monomer phase. Because of the kinetics of an emulsion polymerization, high molecular weight polymer can be produced at high rates. The polymer which results from an emulsion polymerization exists as spherical particles typically smaller than one μm in diameter. However, due to the high solubility of most vinyl monomers in CO<sub>2</sub>, emulsion polymerization in CO<sub>2</sub> probably will not be a very useful process for commercially important monomers.

In contrast, a dispersion polymerization begins homogeneously due to the solubility of both the monomer and the initiator in the continuous phase. Once the growing oligomeric radicals reach a critical molecular weight, phase separation occurs. At this point the polymer is stabilized as a colloid, and as a result the polymerization continues to higher degrees of polymerization than the analogous precipitation reaction in the absence of stabilizer. Since the initiator and monomer are not segregated or compartmentalized, dispersion polymerizations do not follow Smith–Ewart kinetics; however, enhanced rates of polymerization are often observed due to the Gel effect within a growing polymer particle. The product from a dispersion polymerization also exists as spherical polymer particles, but these typically range in size from 100 nm to 10 μm [95]. Due to the good solubility of many small organic molecules in CO<sub>2</sub>, dispersion polymerization constitutes the best method which has been developed thus far for producing high molecular weight, insoluble, industrially important hydrocarbon polymers.

### 3.2.1 Design and Synthesis of Stabilizers

The conventional methods used to prevent coagulation or flocculation of the polymer particles in a colloidal dispersion include electrostatic, electrosteric, and steric stabilization. Comprehensive reviews of these mechanisms can be found elsewhere in the literature [97–99]. Because of the latitude it allows in reaction conditions, steric stabilization offers several advantages over the other two mechanisms; a primary benefit lies in the effectiveness of polymeric stabilizers in solvents with low dielectric constants. For this reason, steric stabilization provides the stabilization mechanism of choice for CO<sub>2</sub> systems. When steric stabilization acts effectively in a heterogeneous system, the stabilizing molecule attaches to the surface of the polymer particle by either grafting or physical adsorption. Thus, the polymeric stabilizer is a macromolecule which preferentially exists at the polymer-solvent interface and prevents aggregation of particles by coating the surface of each particle and imparting long range repulsions between them. These long range repulsions must be great enough to compensate for the long range van der Waals attractions [98]. Peck and Johnston have developed a lattice fluid self-consistent field theory to describe a surfactant chain at an interface in a compressible fluid, allowing traditional colloidal stabilization theory [97] to be extended to supercritical fluid continuous phases [100, 101].

In traditional aqueous systems, it has long been recognized that the best polymeric stabilizers are those which are amphiphilic in nature. The term hydrophilic-lipophilic balance (HLB) has been used extensively in the literature to describe empirically the relative solubilities of the contrasting portions of the molecules in aqueous and organic media, respectively. For CO<sub>2</sub> systems, however, use of the term HLB would be inappropriate because of the unique solvation properties which it possesses. A more suitable term to describe the amphiphilic character of stabilizers for use in CO<sub>2</sub> is anchor-soluble balance (ASB). Qualitatively, ASB expresses the relative proportions of the soluble and insoluble components of the stabilizer [98]. A delicate balance exists between the soluble and insoluble segments; for the stabilizer to function effectively, it must possess an appropriate ASB. An amphiphilic polymer contains a segment which has high solubility in carbon dioxide, the “CO<sub>2</sub>-philic” [102, 103] segment, as well as an anchoring segment which is relatively insoluble in CO<sub>2</sub>, the “CO<sub>2</sub>-phobic” segment [104]. The CO<sub>2</sub>-phobic segment may be either hydrophilic or lipophilic, depending on the nature of the monomer being polymerized. A variety of compositions and architectures can be exploited when designing polymeric stabilizers for use in CO<sub>2</sub>, including homopolymers as well as statistical, block, and graft copolymers.

Most commercially available surfactants were designed for use in an aqueous continuous phase, and thus they are completely insoluble in CO<sub>2</sub> as demonstrated by Consani and Smith who have studied the solubility of over 130 surfactants in CO<sub>2</sub> at 50 °C and 100–500 bar [105]. They concluded that microemulsions of commercial surfactants form much more readily in other low

polarity supercritical fluids such as alkanes and xenon rather than in CO<sub>2</sub>. They also noted the apparent compatibility of fluorinated hydrocarbons and CO<sub>2</sub>, a fact which had been suggested by previous studies on perfluorinated polyethers by McHugh and Krukonis [4].

Several groups have designed and synthesized polymeric materials for the purpose of stabilizing the polymerization of water soluble monomers or dispersing large amounts of water into CO<sub>2</sub>. Two approaches to this problem have been explored: (1) the synthesis of block and graft copolymers containing a hydrophilic polymer as one of the segments and (2) the synthesis of polymeric materials containing an ionic endgroup.

The first approach involved the design and synthesis of CO<sub>2</sub>-philic/hydrophilic amphiphilic block and graft copolymers for use in the dispersion of hydrophilic molecules in CO<sub>2</sub>. In 1993, we reported the use of the macro-monomer technique to synthesize and characterize an amphiphilic graft copolymer with a CO<sub>2</sub>-philic poly(1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate) (PFOA) backbone and hydrophilic poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO) grafts [106]. In this study, solvatochromic characterization was employed to demonstrate that the PEO grafts enabled the solubility of the hydrophilic dye methyl orange in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub>. This graft copolymer was further characterized by small angle X-ray scattering and shown to form spherical micelles in the presence of water in a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase [107]. This discovery constituted an important step in the right direction, since amphiphilic molecules which are effective stabilizers in heterogeneous polymerizations often form micelles in solution. Moreover, this work represented the first direct confirmation that micelles can form in a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase. Indeed, this strategy for the use of surfactant modified CO<sub>2</sub> could allow many current industrial processes, ranging from polymerizations to precision cleaning, to be converted from organic and aqueous based solvent systems to more environmentally benign CO<sub>2</sub>.

In the second approach, investigators have taken advantage of the high solubility of fluorinated and siloxane based polymeric materials to transfer an ionic headgroup into CO<sub>2</sub>. Due to the very low dielectric constant and polarizability of CO<sub>2</sub>, it was anticipated that the ionic headgroups would associate in the presence of polar molecules such as water and charged metals and thus allow for polar materials to be uniformly dispersed in the non-polar continuous phase. For this purpose, Beckman and coworkers have studied the phase behavior of both silicone-based and fluoroether-functional amphiphiles in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [25, 108]. In these studies, the effect of the polarity of the hydrophilic headgroup on the resulting phase behavior of the surfactants was explored. In addition, the fluoroether-functional amphiphile was shown to permit the extraction of thymol blue from aqueous solution into CO<sub>2</sub>. Another advance in this area was made when Johnston and coworkers demonstrated the formation of a one-phase microemulsion consisting of the hybrid fluorocarbon/hydrocarbon surfactant C<sub>7</sub>F<sub>15</sub>CH(OSO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>Na<sup>+</sup>)C<sub>7</sub>H<sub>15</sub> and water in CO<sub>2</sub> [109]. In this work, the water-to-surfactant ratio in a single phase microemulsion was as high as 32 at 25 °C and 231 bar. It was shown that the use of this type of surfactant increased the

amount of water dissolved in the CO<sub>2</sub> by an order of magnitude. In more recent work, Johnston and coworkers have demonstrated the formation of aqueous microemulsion droplets in a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase using an ammonium carboxylate perfluoropolyether surfactant [110]. Several spectroscopic techniques were employed to investigate the properties of these aqueous microemulsions. This type of approach to the formation of microemulsions in non-polar supercritical fluids has been the focus of two recent reviews [111, 112].

Macromolecules have also been specifically designed and synthesized for use as emulsifiers for lipophilic materials and as stabilizers in the colloidal dispersion of lipophilic, hydrocarbon polymers in CO<sub>2</sub>. We have demonstrated the amphiphilicity of fluorinated acrylate homopolymers, such as PFOA, which contain a lipophilic, acrylate like backbone and CO<sub>2</sub>-philic, fluorinated side chains (see Fig. 3) [103]. It has been demonstrated that a homopolymer which physically adsorbs to the surface of a polymer colloid prevents agglomeration by the presence of loops and tails (see Fig. 4) [113]. The synthesis of this type of

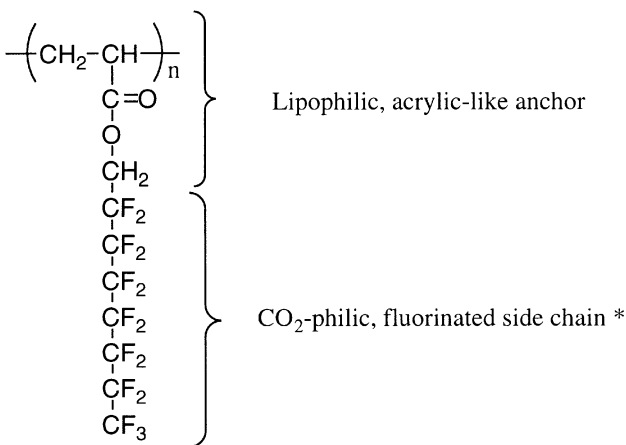


Fig. 3. Structure of amphiphilic polymeric stabilizer, PFOA. \* Contains ca. 25% -CF<sub>3</sub> branches [103]

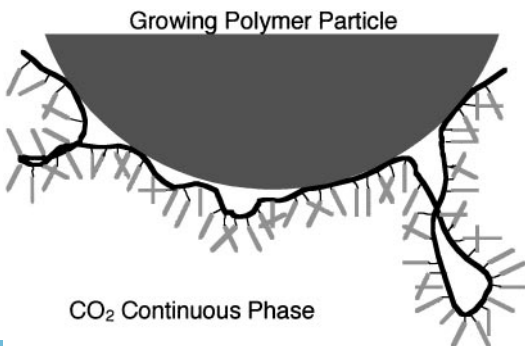


Fig. 4. Schematic of polymer colloidal particles stabilized by PFOA homopolymer [103]

fluorinated acrylate polymer via homogeneous solution polymerization in  $\text{CO}_2$  was discussed in Sect. 2.1.1. The phase behavior [33] and solution properties [114, 115] of PFOA in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  have been thoroughly investigated. In addition, we have shown that the lipophilic nature of the backbone of these polymers can be increased by incorporation of other monomers to make random copolymers [23].

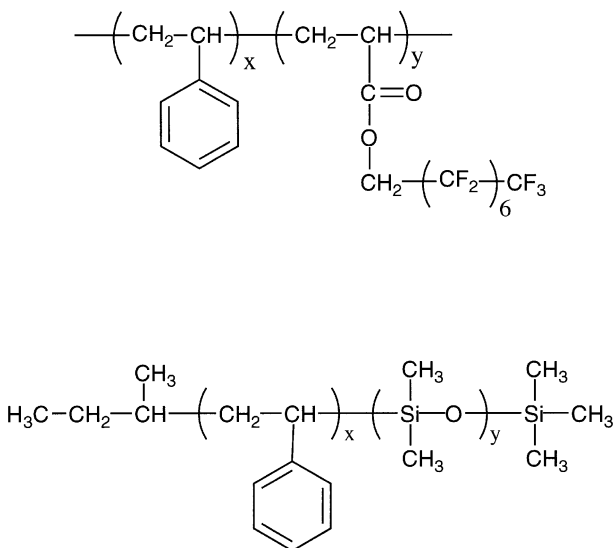
Another approach to the stabilization of  $\text{CO}_2$ -phobic polymer colloids is the use of copolymerizable stabilizers. Rather than adsorbing to the surface of the growing polymer particle because of favorable enthalpic interactions, this type of lyophilic stabilizer actually chemically grafts to the surface of the particle. Examples of copolymerizable stabilizers include macroinitiators, macro-chain transfer agents, and macromonomers, all of which must contain a long  $\text{CO}_2$ -philic tail to be effective. The ability to use very small amounts of stabilizer constitutes one advantage of this type of approach [116]. With this technique, a block or graft copolymer which acts as a stabilizing moiety is generated in situ.

Finally, we have designed and synthesized a series of block copolymer surfactants for  $\text{CO}_2$  applications. It was anticipated that these materials would self-assemble in a  $\text{CO}_2$  continuous phase to form micelles with a  $\text{CO}_2$ -phobic core and a  $\text{CO}_2$ -philic corona. For example, fluorocarbon-hydrocarbon block copolymers of PFOA and PS were synthesized utilizing controlled free radical methods [104]. Small angle neutron scattering studies have demonstrated that block copolymers of this type do indeed self-assemble in solution to form multimolecular micelles [117]. Figure 5 depicts a schematic representation of the micelles formed by these amphiphilic diblock copolymers in  $\text{CO}_2$ . Another block copolymer which has proven useful in the stabilization of colloidal particles is the siloxane based stabilizer PS-*b*-PDMS [118, 119]. Chemical



Fig. 5. Schematic of micelle formed by amphiphilic diblock copolymer





**Fig. 6.** Chemical structures of amphiphilic diblock copolymeric stabilizers PS-*b*-PFOA (*top*) and PS-*b*-PDMS (*bottom*) [118]

structures of these amphiphilic diblock copolymers are shown in Fig. 6. These types of surfactants which contain lipophilic segments that form the cores of the micelles in  $CO_2$  may find use in a variety of applications ranging from polymer processing to precision cleaning and separations.

### 3.2.2 Polymerization of Lipophilic Monomers

In 1994, we reported the dispersion polymerization of MMA in supercritical  $CO_2$  [103]. This work represents the first successful dispersion polymerization of a lipophilic monomer in a supercritical fluid continuous phase. In these experiments, we took advantage of the amphiphilic nature of the homopolymer PFOA to effect the polymerization of MMA to high conversions (90%) and high degrees of polymerization (3000) in supercritical  $CO_2$ . These polymerizations were conducted in  $CO_2$  at  $65^\circ C$  and 207 bar, and AIBN or a fluorinated derivative of AIBN were employed as the initiators. The results from the AIBN initiated polymerizations are shown in Table 3. The spherical polymer particles which resulted from these dispersion polymerizations were isolated by simply venting the  $CO_2$  from the reaction mixture. Scanning electron microscopy showed that the product consisted of spheres in the  $\mu m$  size range with a narrow particle size distribution (see Fig. 7). In contrast, reactions which were performed in the absence of PFOA resulted in relatively low conversion and molar masses. Moreover, the polymer which resulted from these precipitation

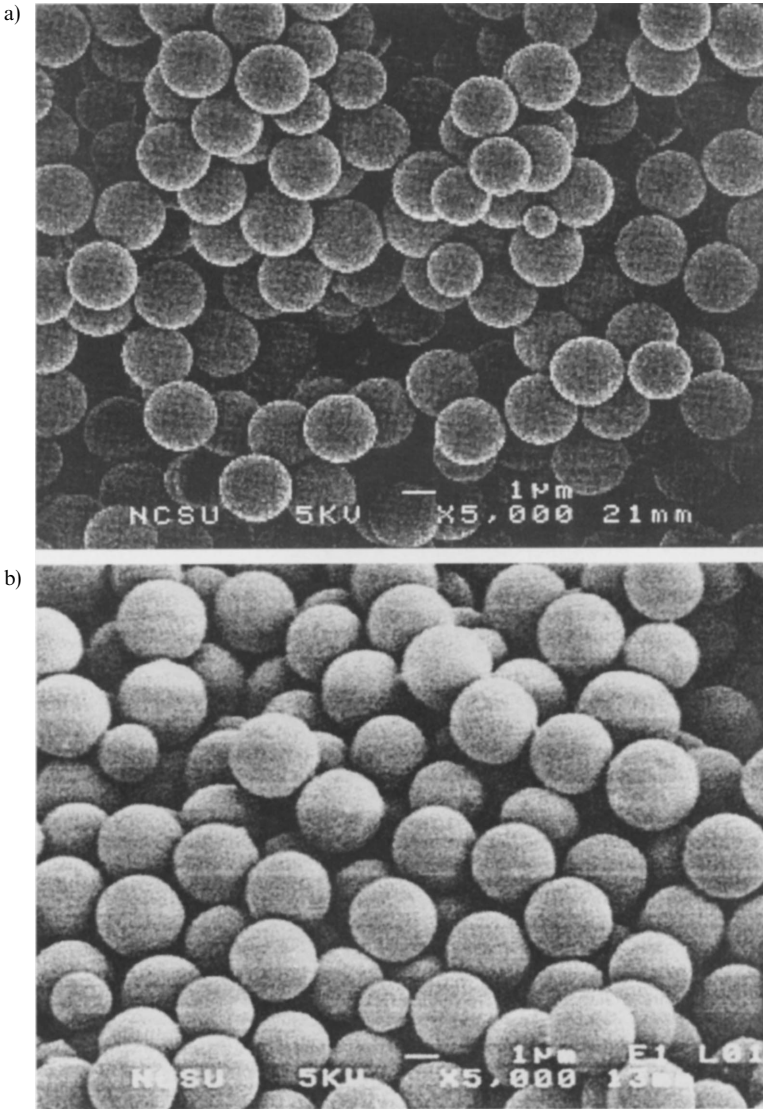
**Table 3.** Results of MMA polymerization with AIBN as the initiator in CO<sub>2</sub> at 204 bar and 65 °C; stabilizer is either low molecular weight (LMW) or high molecular weight (HMW) PFOA [103]

| Stabilizer (w/v %) | Yield (%) | $\langle M_n \rangle$ ( $\times 10^{-3}$ g/mol) | PDI | Particle Size ( $\mu\text{m}$ ) |
|--------------------|-----------|---|-----|---------------------------------|
| 0%                 | 39        | 149   | 2.8 | –                               |
| 2% LMW             | 85        | 308   | 2.3 | 1.2 ( 0.3)                      |
| 4% LMW             | 92        | 220   | 2.6 | 1.3 ( 0.4)                      |
| 2% HMW             | 92        | 315   | 2.1 | 2.7 ( 0.1)                      |
| 4% HMW             | 95        | 321   | 2.2 | 2.5 ( 0.2)                      |

polymerizations had a random morphology which contrasted sharply to the spherical polymer particles which were produced in the dispersion polymerizations. Without a doubt, the amphiphilic macromolecule employed played a vital role in the stabilization of the growing PMMA colloidal particles.

Our recent work in this area has determined that very low amounts (0.24 wt %) of PFOA are needed to prepare a stable dispersion of PMMA latex particles [33,120]. This work demonstrated that the stabilizer could be subsequently removed from the PMMA product by extraction with CO<sub>2</sub>. Because of the relatively high cost of the stabilizer and the possible effects that residual stabilizer may have on product performance, the ability to remove and recycle the PFOA constitutes an important aspect of this system. In addition, the effect of the reaction time and pressure on the resulting conversion, molar masses, and particle size of the polymer product was investigated. The results from this work indicate that a gel effect occurs within the PMMA particles between one and two hours of reaction time. This result parallels the gel effect within the polymer particles which is normally observed between 20–80% conversion in a typical dispersion polymerization in liquid organic media [98]. More importantly, the ability of CO<sub>2</sub> to plasticize PMMA [4,39–43] facilitates the diffusion of monomer into the growing polymer particles and causes autoacceleration which allows the reaction to proceed to high conversion. To complement the use of fluorinated acrylates as stabilizers, the phase behavior of PFOA in CO<sub>2</sub> was thoroughly investigated [33]. These cloud point experiments indicated lower critical solution temperature (LCST) phase behavior and confirmed the much higher solubility of fluorinated acrylate polymers in comparison to hydrocarbon polymers in CO<sub>2</sub>.

The use of a copolymerizable macromonomer constitutes another approach to the dispersion polymerization of MMA. We have recently demonstrated the utility of this approach in CO<sub>2</sub> by employing a PDMS monomethacrylate as the stabilizer (see Fig. 8) [121]. Although several groups have studied the behavior of polysiloxanes in CO<sub>2</sub> [54,55,57], this work represents the first successful use of PDMS based polymeric stabilizers in CO<sub>2</sub>. The reactions were conducted in either liquid CO<sub>2</sub> at 30 °C and 75 bar or supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> at 65 °C and 340 bar.



**Fig. 7.** Scanning electron micrographs of PMMA particles produced by dispersion polymerization in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$ . Stabilized by PFOA homopolymer (top) [103]; stabilized by PDMS macro-monomer (bottom) [121]

Reactions were run at 20% (v/v) solids and azo initiators, which do not chain transfer to the PDMS backbone, were employed. Control reactions which were run in the absence of stabilizer or with PDMS homopolymer (which does not contain a polymerizable group) resulted in lower conversions and molecular

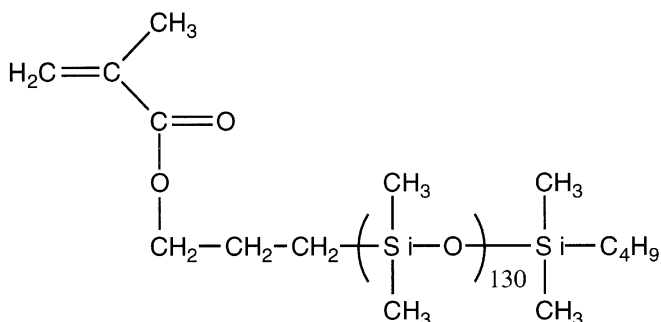


Fig. 8. Structure of PDMS macromonomer used as a copolymerizable stabilizer [121]

weights than the reactions which contained a small amount of the methacrylate-terminated PDMS macromonomer. Moreover, the polymerizations which were stabilized by the macromonomer resulted in spherical PMMA particles (see Fig. 7). While the PDMS macromonomer was able to copolymerize with the MMA to stabilize the growing polymer colloid, it was demonstrated that only a small amount of the PDMS macromonomer reacted with the MMA and that the unreacted macromonomer could be removed from the final polymer product by washing or extracting with either hexanes or  $\text{CO}_2$ .

In addition to our work with the PMMA system, we have recently extended the use of amphiphilic molecules as stabilizers in  $\text{CO}_2$  to synthesize PS in high conversions (95%) and high degrees of polymerization (800) [122]. In these polymerizations, the first successful use of a block copolymer as a stabilizer in  $\text{CO}_2$  was demonstrated. Initially, the stabilizers employed were diblock copolymers of PS (the anchoring block) and PFOA (the soluble block) [104]. Attempts to use PFOA homopolymer as the stabilizing moiety gave mediocre results, indicating that the  $\text{CO}_2$ -phobic nature of the PS block provides a large driving force for these copolymers to exist at the polymer-solvent interface. The results from these polymerizations are summarized in Table 4. The PS obtained from these dispersion polymerization was isolated as a dry, white, free-flowing

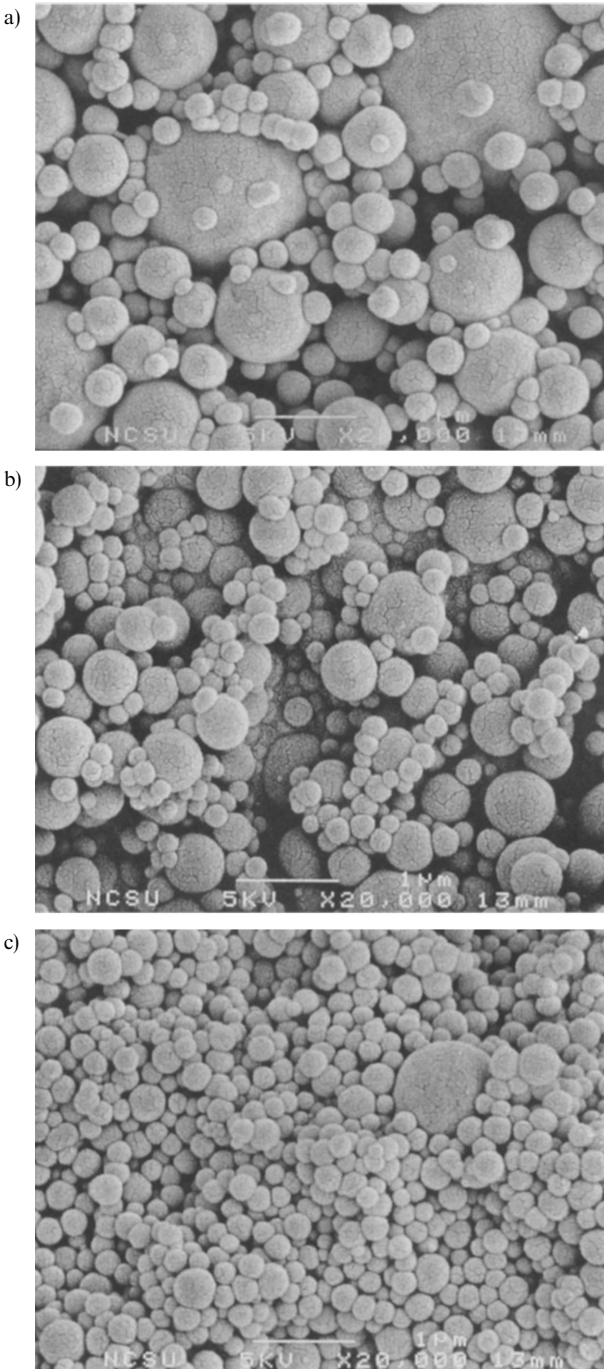
Table 4. Results of styrene polymerization with AIBN as the initiator in  $\text{CO}_2$  at 204 bar and 65 °C; stabilizer is either PFOA homopolymer or PS-*b*-PFOA copolymer [122]

| Stabilizer   | Yield (%) | $\langle M_n \rangle$ ( $\times 10^3$ g/mole) | PDI | Particle Diameter ( $\mu\text{m}$ ) | Particle Size Distribution |
|--------------|-----------|---|-----|-------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| none         | 22.1      | 3.8   | 2.3 | none                                | none                       |
| poly(FOA)    | 43.5      | 12.8  | 2.8 | none                                | none                       |
| (3.7 K/16 K) | 72.1      | 19.2  | 3.6 | 0.40                                | 8.3                        |
| (4.5 K/25 K) | 97.7      | 22.5  | 3.1 | 0.24                                | 1.3                        |
| (6.6 K/35 K) | 93.6      | 23.4  | 3.0 | 0.24                                | 1.1                        |

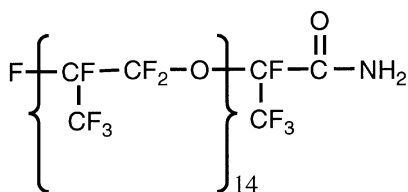
powder directly from the reaction vessel. Scanning electron microscopy demonstrated that the product existed as submicron sized particles (see Fig. 9). In this work, we showed that the diameters and size distributions of the resulting PS particles could be controlled by variations in the ASB of the block copolymeric stabilizer. Further studies focusing on the use of amphiphilic block copolymers in a stabilizing capacity have employed the silicone based diblock copolymer PS-*b*-PDMS [119]. This stabilizing system offers several advantages over the fluorinated stabilizers, such as ease of synthesis and characterization, relatively low cost, and narrow MWD of the block segments which results from the living anionic techniques which are used to prepare these copolymers. This type of silicone based block copolymer proved to be effective for the stabilization of both styrene and MMA polymerizations in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> at 65 °C and 345 bar using AIBN initiation. These experiments resulted in high yields ( ~ 90%) of fine, dry white polymer powders. The PS particles which resulted from these reactions possessed a  $M_n$  of  $6.5 \times 10^4$  g/mol and an average particle diameter of 0.22  $\mu\text{m}$ ; the PMMA particles had a  $M_n$  of  $1.8 \times 10^5$  g/mol and an average particle diameter of 0.23  $\mu\text{m}$ . It should be noted that the PMMA particles which are produced when the PS-*b*-PDMS is employed as the stabilizer are about ten times smaller than those which are produced when PFOA homopolymer is used [33]. In contrast, the analogous PDMS homopolymer was not effective as a stabilizer in these systems, again indicating that the presence of the PS anchoring group is vital to the interfacial activity of these stabilizers.

### 3.2.3 Polymerization of Hydrophilic Monomers

Adamsky and Beckman have explored the possibility of carrying out an inverse emulsion polymerization of acrylamide in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [123, 124]. In these reactions, acrylamide was polymerized in the presence of water, a cosolvent for the monomer, in a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase at 345 bar and 60 °C; AIBN was used as the initiator. Reactions were conducted both with and without the stabilizer. The structure of the amide endcapped poly(hexafluoropropylene oxide) surfactant which was employed in these polymerizations is shown in Fig. 10. The results from these polymerizations are shown in Table 5. In the absence of the stabilizer, the precipitation polymerization of acrylamide resulted in a high conversion of high molecular weight polymer which formed a single solid mass in the bottom of the reaction vessel. In the presence of stabilizer, the reaction solution had a milky white appearance which was indicative of latex formation. No kinetic evidence or electron micrographs of colloidal particles were included in this article to support the authors' hypothesis that the surfactant used was indeed effective in stabilizing the polymer particles in an inverse emulsion polymerization. In fact, there was no significant increase in the rate of the polymerization with added surfactant.



**Fig. 9.** Scanning electron micrographs of PS particles synthesized by dispersion polymerization utilizing **a** 3.6 K/16 K, **b** 4.5 K/25 K, and **c** 6.6 K/36 K PS-*b*-PFOA stabilizer (Mn PS segment/Mn PFOA segment) [122]



**Fig. 10.** Amide end-capped poly(hexafluoropropylene oxide) used for the inverse emulsion polymerization of acrylamide in CO<sub>2</sub> [123]

**Table 5.** Results of acrylamide polymerization in CO<sub>2</sub> at 60 °C [124]

| Polymer Property           | Concentration of fluorinated polyether |       |       |
|----------------------------|--|-------|-------|
|                            | 0%                                     | 1%    | 2%    |
| intrinsic viscosity (dL/g) | 11.60                                  | 12.28 | 9.15  |
| $M_v \times 10^{-6}$       | 6.61                                   | 7.09  | 4.92  |
| Huggins constant           | 0.310                                  | 0.505 | 0.479 |
| percent yield (wt %)       | 91.4                                   | 99.8  | 99.8  |

### 3.2.4 Polymer Blends

Watson and McCarthy have extended the idea of polymerization being facilitated by plasticization of the polymer phase to develop a new route to polymer blends [31, 32, 125]. In their system, a supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> swollen solid polymer substrate is infused with styrene monomer which is subsequently polymerized in situ (see Fig. 11). In these experiments, the solid polymer matrices explored include poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene) (PCTFE), poly(4-methyl-1-pentene) (PMP), high density polyethylene (HDPE), nylon-6,6-poly(oxymethylene), and bisphenol A polycarbonate. In these experiments, either AIBN or *tert*-butyl perbenzoate were used as the initiator for the polymerization of the styrene within the supercritical fluid swollen matrix polymer. The authors employed transmission electron microscopy and energy dispersive X-ray analysis to demonstrate that the polystyrene exists as discrete phase-segregated regions throughout the matrix polymer (PCTFE in this case). They also used thermal analysis to show that radical grafting reactions are not significant. Indeed, exploitation of the enhanced diffusion of small molecules into polymeric phases which are plasticized by CO<sub>2</sub> opens up an entirely new region of research.

### 3.3 Heterogeneous Cationic Polymerizations

Cationic polymerization represents another area in which CO<sub>2</sub> has proven to be a viable continuous phase. In this area, both the liquid and supercritical phases

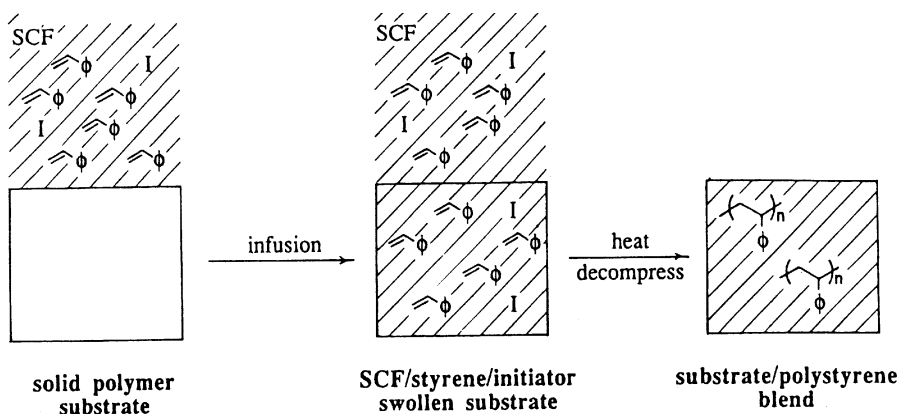


Fig. 11. Schematic of new route to composite polymer materials [31, 32]

have been investigated. One of the interesting aspects of using the supercritical phase in particular may lie in the ability to change the dielectric constant of the solvent by simply varying the temperature or pressure and hence change the intimacy of the ion pair in the propagating species. This type of work could have tremendous implications in controlling the “livingness” of these cationic systems, which are often plagued by chain transfer to monomer. Preliminary work which has been conducted in the area of heterogeneous cationic polymerizations in  $\text{CO}_2$  has focused on monomers such as isobutylene, formaldehyde, vinyl ethers, and oxetanes.

The most industrially significant polymerizations involving the cationic chain growth mechanism are the various polymerizations and copolymerizations of isobutylene. In fact, about 500 million pounds of butyl rubber, a copolymer of isobutylene with small amounts of isoprene, are produced annually in the United States via cationic polymerization [126]. The necessity of using toxic chlorinated hydrocarbon solvents such as dichloromethane or methyl chloride as well as the need to conduct these polymerizations at very low temperatures constitute two major drawbacks to the current industrial method for polymerizing isobutylene which may be solved through the use of  $\text{CO}_2$  as the continuous phase.

In 1960, Biddulph and Plesch reported the first example of synthesis of polyisobutylene in liquid  $\text{CO}_2$  at  $50^\circ\text{C}$  using titanium tetrachloride or aluminum bromide as the catalyst [127]. Recently, Pernecker and Kennedy have been exploring the polymerization of isobutylene in  $\text{CO}_2$  at supercritical conditions with added cosolvents [128–132]. In this work, the authors demonstrated that polyisobutylene could be synthesized in  $\text{CO}_2$  with methyl chloride at  $32.5^\circ\text{C}$  and approximately 120 bar using 2-chloro-2,4,4-trimethylpentane (TMPCl)/ $\text{SnCl}_2$  and TMPCl/ $\text{TiCl}_4$  initiating systems. These reactions typically gave conversions ranging from 7–35% of polymer products with  $M_n$ s in the range 1000–2000 g/mol and PDIs from 1.5 to 3.4 [128]. In this work, the authors note



that this represents the highest temperature at which isobutylene has even been polymerized to achieve a reasonably high molecular weight polymer. They attributed this ability to form a polymer at high temperatures to the nature of the supercritical solvent, and point out that this process would save considerable expense in industry where cationic polymerization systems must presently be cooled to reaction temperatures in the 20 °C to 100 °C range to minimize the chain transfer reactions inherent to cationic systems which limit the molecular weights of the resulting polymers [131]. Other exploratory work by these authors include the synthesis of *tert*-Cl terminated polyisobutylene by mixed Friedel-Crafts acid initiating systems [129], the determination of the ceiling temperature of isobutylene polymerization in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> [130], and the synthesis of poly(isobutylene-*co*-styrene) [131].

In the late 1960s, the cationic polymerization of formaldehyde in liquid carbon dioxide was investigated by Fukui and coworkers [133–137]. In this work, polymerizations were conducted in liquid CO<sub>2</sub> at temperatures ranging from 0–50 °C and pressures ranging from 15 to 34 bar. The reactions resulted in white polymer products which had yields as high as 70% and degrees of polymerization as high as 2200. Even without the addition of any catalyst, the acidic impurities in the monomer were sufficient to initiate the reaction to give polymers of high degrees of polymerizations. Addition of an acidic catalyst such as a carboxylic acid increased both the yield and molecular weight of the resulting polymer. Furthermore, the authors discovered that the chain transfer to impurities was suppressed in these reactions, so that even relatively impure monomer could be polymerized to give a high molecular weight product. The motivation of this work was that in conventional polymerizations the liquid formaldehyde must be rigorously purified to remove even trace amounts of impurities which can act as chain transfer agents and destroy the reproducibility of the results. The authors were following up on their discovery that small amounts of CO<sub>2</sub> noticeably depress the polymerization [138] and they were able to use a CO<sub>2</sub> continuous phase to control the reaction and obtain reproducible results [133]. They conducted a kinetic study and determined that the overall rate of the reaction was first order with respect to the monomer [134]. They also investigated the role of various monomer preparation methods [135] and developed detailed mechanisms for the elementary processes in the polymerization [136]. In 1969 the authors received a United States patent [137] for this process.

Vinyl ethers constitute a third class of monomers which have been cationically polymerized in CO<sub>2</sub>. While fluorinated vinyl ether monomers such as those described in Sect. 2.1.2 can be polymerized homogeneously in CO<sub>2</sub> because of the high solubility of the resulting amorphous fluoropolymers, the polymerization of hydrocarbon vinyl ethers in CO<sub>2</sub> results in the formation of CO<sub>2</sub>-insoluble polymers which precipitate from the reaction medium. The work in this area reported to date in the literature includes precipitation polymerizations and does not yet include the use of stabilizing moieties such as those described in the earlier sections on dispersion and emulsion polymerizations (Sect. 3).

In 1970, a patent by Fukui and coworkers cited the cationic polymerization of ethyl vinyl ether in liquid CO<sub>2</sub> [85]. In these reactions, SnCl<sub>4</sub> or ethyl etherate of boron trifluoride were employed as the catalysts and the polymerizations were conducted for 20 hours at room temperature to conversion of greater than 90% polymer. No molecular weight data or spectra for these polymers were reported in this work.

Recently, we have investigated the polymerization of isobutyl vinyl ether (IBVE) in supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> at 30–60 °C and 345 bar using a known initiating system consisting of the adduct of acetic acid and IBVE as the initiator, the Lewis acid ethyl aluminum dichloride as the coinitiator, and ethyl acetate as the Lewis base deactivator [78,139]. This initiating system was previously developed by Higashimura for the living cationic polymerization of vinyl ethers at higher temperatures in traditional liquid solvents [140]. Although the polymerizations became heterogeneous as the insoluble hydrocarbon polymer precipitated from the CO<sub>2</sub> solution, high molecular weights and high conversions were obtained. Control experiments performed in cyclohexane gave comparable conversion and M<sub>n</sub> results but had lower molecular weight distributions.

Because a review of previous work revealed that CO<sub>2</sub> could act as a monomer in some polymerizations catalyzed by Lewis acids [141], for our systems it was important to demonstrate that the supercritical CO<sub>2</sub> being employed as the continuous phase was not being incorporated into the backbone of the polymer chain. Spectral analysis consisting of <sup>1</sup>H and <sup>13</sup>C NMR as well as infrared spectroscopy demonstrated that no differences existed in the structure of the polymers prepared in hexane and those prepared in CO<sub>2</sub>, proving that the CO<sub>2</sub> was acting as an inert solvent in these polymerizations and was not acting as a monomer [139].

Strained cyclic ethers such as epoxides and oxetanes constitute an additional class of monomers which have been polymerized via heterogeneous cationic techniques in CO<sub>2</sub>. Early work in this area by the Sumitomo Chemical Company and Seitso Kagaku Company focused on the ring opening polymerization of epoxides such as ethylene oxide, propylene oxide, and styrene oxide [142]. These polymerizations employed catalyst systems such as triethyl aluminum, aluminum bromide, diethyltin/water, and titanium tetrachloride and were conducted at 60 °C. In general, the reported reactions resulted in powdery polymer products which were recovered in yields ranging from 32% to 93%. The reduced viscosities of the polymers formed were between 0.6 and 2.7. The authors pointed out both the ease of recovering the product, such as PEO, which was isolated dry after venting to remove the CO<sub>2</sub> and the ability to use supercritical fluid extraction methods to remove residual monomer. In more current work, we have explored the polymerization of cyclic ethers (oxetanes) in liquid CO<sub>2</sub> [78]. In contrast to the homogeneous polymerization of the fluorinated oxetane FOx-7 (see Sect. 2.1.2), the polymerization of 3,3'-bis(ethoxymethyl)oxetane (BEMO) in CO<sub>2</sub> at 10 °C and 290 bar for four hours using BF<sub>3</sub> as the initiator results in the precipitation of the polymer product as it forms. It was demonstrated that control solution polymerizations

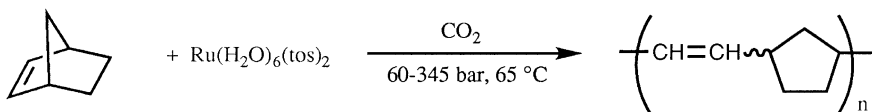
of BEMO which were conducted in dichloromethane resulted in yields (70%) and molar masses ( $M_n = 10^4$  g/mol) which were similar to those resulting from the heterogeneous polymerizations conducted in  $\text{CO}_2$ . Again, structural determination of the polymer products from the reactions conducted in  $\text{CO}_2$  showed that the  $\text{CO}_2$  was not incorporated into the backbone of the polymer chain.

Finally, researchers at Rhone-Poulenc Specialty Chemicals filed a European patent application for the preparation of polydiorganosiloxanes in supercritical fluids in 1986 [143]. Several example reactions cited in this work illustrate the polymerization of octamethylcyclotetrasiloxane ( $\text{D}_4$ ) in  $\text{CO}_2$ . In these reactions, trifluoromethane sulfonic acid was used as the initiator; the authors noted that with an acidic fluid such as  $\text{CO}_2$  one cannot use a basic catalyst. These polymerizations were conducted in a 100 mL high pressure reactor with initial concentrations of  $2.0 \text{ mol L}^{-1}$  of  $\text{D}_4$  and  $6.0 \times 10^{-3} \text{ mol L}^{-1}$  of initiator in three different physical states of carbon dioxide: gas, liquid, and supercritical fluid. The polymerizations conducted in the gaseous  $\text{CO}_2$  resulted in the highest yields and molecular weights of poly(dimethylsiloxane) (PDMS). This result is not surprising, since these reactions were simply bulk reactions under an atmosphere of  $\text{CO}_2$ . A series of reactions were conducted in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  at pressures ranging from 8–190 bar and temperatures ranging from 52–82 °C with reaction times of up to one hour. The resulting gravimetric yields from these reactions were from 5–98% with  $M_n$  ranging from  $8.3 \times 10^4$  g/mol to  $2.2 \times 10^5$  g/mol. Again, this type of polymerization illustrates the viability of performing cationic polymerizations in a  $\text{CO}_2$  medium.

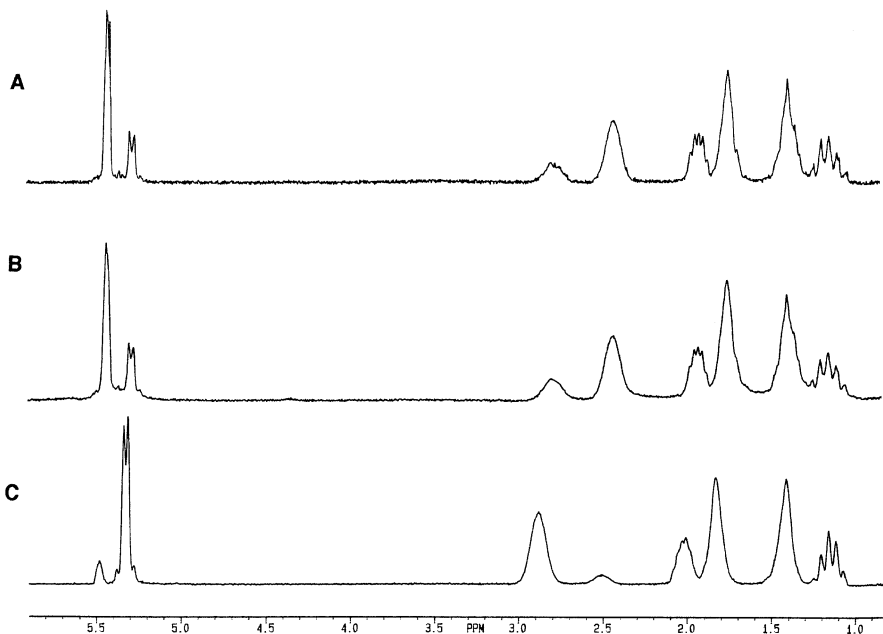
### 3.4 Metal Catalyzed Polymerizations

#### 3.4.1 Ring Opening Metathesis Polymerizations

We have reported the first example of a ring-opening metathesis polymerization in  $\text{CO}_2$  [144, 145]. In this work, bicyclo[2.2.1]hept-2-ene (norbornene) was polymerized in  $\text{CO}_2$  and  $\text{CO}_2$ /methanol mixtures using a  $\text{Ru}(\text{H}_2\text{O})_6(\text{tos})_2$  initiator (see Scheme 6). These reactions were carried out at 65 °C and pressure was varied from 60 to 345 bar; they resulted in poly(norbornene) with similar conversions and molecular weights as those obtained in other solvent systems.  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectroscopy of the poly(norbornene) showed that the product from a polymerization in pure methanol had the same structure as the product from the polymerization in pure  $\text{CO}_2$ . More interestingly, it was shown that the *cis/trans* ratio of the polymer microstructure can be controlled by the addition of a methanol cosolvent to the polymerization medium (see Fig. 12). The poly(norbornene) prepared in pure methanol or in methanol/ $\text{CO}_2$  mixtures had a very high *trans*-vinylene content, while the polymer prepared in pure  $\text{CO}_2$  had very high *cis*-vinylene content. These results can be explained by the solvent effects on relative populations of the two different possible metal



**Scheme 6.** Ring-opening metathesis polymerization of norbornene in  $\text{CO}_2$  [144, 145]

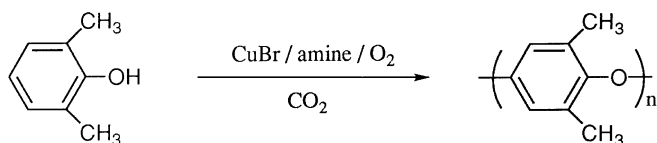


**Fig. 12.** The  $^1\text{H}$  NMR of poly(norbornene) prepared in **A** methanol **B** methanol/ $\text{CO}_2$  and **C**  $\text{CO}_2$  [144]

carbene propagating species which give rise to the different microstructures. Investigations involving the use of other organometallic initiating systems and other cyclic olefin monomers are underway. Indeed, the expansion of polymer synthesis in  $\text{CO}_2$  to include metal catalyzed reaction mechanisms represents an important step in the use of  $\text{CO}_2$  as a universal solvent for polymerizations.

### 3.4.2 Oxidative Coupling Polymerizations

We have recently demonstrated the synthesis of poly(2,6-dimethylphenylene oxide) (PPO) via oxidative coupling in a  $\text{CO}_2$  continuous phase (see Scheme 7) [76]. These reactions proceeded at 345 bar and either room temperature or



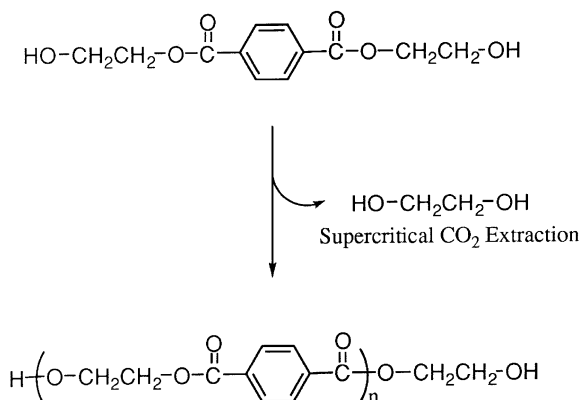
**Scheme 7.** Oxidative coupling polymerization of 2,6-dimethylphenol in  $\text{CO}_2$  [76]

40 °C for 20 hours. A catalyst system based on copper bromide, an amine, and oxygen was employed in these polymerizations, resulting in PPO yields as high as 83% and  $M_n$ s as high as  $1.7 \times 10^4$  g/mol.

Parameters which were varied in the system include the structure of the amine and the addition of polymeric stabilizers. To begin with, the effectiveness of both traditional small molecule amines (pyridine and dimethylethylamine) and polymeric,  $\text{CO}_2$ -soluble amines (random copolymers of FOA and either 4-vinylpyridine or 2-((dimethylamino)ethylacrylate) was examined. While the results from this study indicated that pyridine is the most effective amine, the polymerizations conducted in the presence of the polymeric amines resulted in a milky white solution characteristic of a latex, indicating that these polymeric amines also served to stabilize the PPO as a polymer colloid. A second variable which played a key role in these oxidative coupling polymerizations was the addition of a stabilizing moiety. To this end, the homopolymer PFOA, the block copolymer PS-*b*-PFOA, and the random copolymer PS-*co*-PFOA were assessed in their ability to improve the resulting yield and molecular weight of PPO. Because  $\text{CO}_2$  plasticizes PPO [47] and facilitates the transport of monomer into the polymer phase, stabilizing the PPO as a colloidal dispersion should simultaneously lead to an increase in both of these properties. The block copolymer was shown to be the most effective stabilizer, and the stabilized reaction did indeed result in both higher yields and molecular weights than the precipitation polymerization in the absence of stabilizer.

### 3.5 Step Growth Polymerizations

Many of examples cited in this text and elsewhere [7] illustrate that chain growth polymerization mechanisms have been widely studied in compressible fluids such as  $\text{CO}_2$ . Step growth polymerizations, on the other hand, constitute an emerging area of study in these types of fluids. We have begun investigating this type of polymerizations through the synthesis of aromatic polyesters such as PET in supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  [146]. The strategy underlying our approach to this challenge involves removal of the small molecule byproduct of transesterification by supercritical fluid extraction. In this approach, the removal of the condensate molecule, ethylene glycol, is facilitated by the ability of  $\text{CO}_2$  to act as a plasticizing agent for the polymer phase (see Scheme 8). This method



**Scheme 8.** Synthesis of PET by supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  extraction method [146]

provides an alternative to the current industrial process which requires very high temperatures and vacuum to allow the removal of the condensate molecule from the polymer melt. The enhanced removal of the ethylene glycol in the  $\text{CO}_2$ -based process may result in increased rates of polymerization at lower temperatures than those required for the conventional methods in the absence of  $\text{CO}_2$ . Additionally, when combined with the recent advances in surfactant design, this technique for the removal of the small molecule condensate by supercritical  $\text{CO}_2$  extraction may allow for the extension of this general strategy to the synthesis of other industrially important classes of polymers which are made by a step growth mechanism.

### 3.6 Hybrid Systems

We have developed a hybrid polymerization methodology based on two phase mixtures of  $\text{CO}_2$  and water for the synthesis of high molar mass polymers such as PTFE [147, 148]. This allows for the compartmentalization of monomer, polymer, and initiator based on their solubility characteristics. Another advantage of this system is that highly exothermic polymerizations can be somewhat controlled by the high heat capacity of the water phase. In the newly developed hybrid system, water soluble persulfate initiators were used at  $75^\circ\text{C}$  and sodium perfluorooctanoate was used as the surfactant. Using this process, reasonably high molar mass ( $M_n \ 1 \times 10^6 \text{ g/mol}$ ) PTFE was produced in good yields (80–90%). Other experiments at ambient temperature which employed a redox initiator (sodium sulfite and iron (II) salt were added as reducing agents) gave similar results. Indeed, the combination of the solvent properties of water and  $\text{CO}_2$  may prove to be advantageous in a variety of systems, including the synthesis of structured latex composite particles due to the plasticization of the growing polymer particles by added  $\text{CO}_2$ .

## 4 Conclusions

Recent progress has demonstrated that CO<sub>2</sub> represents a viable and attractive polymerization medium. For free radical reactions, numerous studies have shown that CO<sub>2</sub> may prove to be the solvent of choice for many applications. In addition, other chain growth mechanisms for polymer propagation such as cationic and ring opening metathesis polymerizations in CO<sub>2</sub> have been explored and advantages of this solvent have been demonstrated. Moreover, the most recent work has shown that it also represents a good solvent in which to conduct step-growth polymerizations. Specially designed stabilizers for use in CO<sub>2</sub> constitutes another area which will allow the extension of the use of CO<sub>2</sub> as a continuous phase. The ability to tailor the surfactant molecule for a particular CO<sub>2</sub>-based application may prove to be the enabling technology for the reduction of the use of hazardous VOCs and CFCs. When the environmental advantages of CO<sub>2</sub> are combined with its ability to be used as a solvent for a wide variety of chemical reactions, one can make compelling arguments that CO<sub>2</sub> may be the solvent of the future for the polymer industry.

*Acknowledgements.* We gratefully acknowledge financial support from the National Science Foundation through a Presidential Faculty Fellowship (JMD: 1993–1997), the Environmentally Benign Chemical Synthesis and Processing Program sponsored by NSF and the Environmental Protection Agency, and the *Consortium for Polymeric Materials Synthesis and Processing in Carbon Dioxide* sponsored by DuPont, Air Products and Chemicals, Hoechst-Celanese, Eastman Chemical, B.F. Goodrich, Xerox, Bayer, and General Electric.

## 5 References

1. Johnston KP, Penninger JML (1989) Supercritical fluid science and technology. In: Comstock MJ (ed) ACS Symposium Series, vol 406. ACS, Washington
2. Bruno TJ, Ely JF (1991) Supercritical fluid technology: Reviews in Modern Theory and Applications. CRC Press, Boston
3. Kiran E, Brennecke JF (1993) Supercritical fluid engineering science: Fundamentals and applications. In: Comstock MJ (ed) ACS Symposium Series, vol 514, ACS, Washington
4. McHugh MA, Krukonis VJ (1993) Supercritical fluids extraction: Principles and practice. Butterworth-Heinemann, Stoneham
5. Savage PE, Gopalan S, Mizan TI, Martino CJ, Brock EE (1995) *AIChE J* 41: 1723
6. Scholsky KM (1993) *J Supercrit Fluids* 6: 103
7. Shaffer KA, DeSimone JM (1995) *Trends Polym Sci* 3: 146
8. Barer SJ, Stern KM (1988) Sources and economics of carbon dioxide. In: Ayers WM (ed) Catalytic activation of carbon dioxide. American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C. p 1
9. Quinn EL, Jones CL (1936) Carbon Dioxide. Reinhold, New York
10. Kaupp G (1994) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 33: 1452
11. Jessop PG, Ikariya T, Noyori R (1995) *Organometallics* 14: 1510
12. Burk MJ, Feng S, Gross MF, Tumas W (1995) *J Am Chem Soc* 117: 8277
13. Keyes FG, Kirkwood JG (1930) *Phys Rev* 36: 754
14. McFann GJ, Johnston KP, Howdle SM (1994) *AIChE J* 40: 543

15. Hyatt JA (1984) *J Org Chem* 49: 5097
16. O'Shea KE, Kirmse KM, Fox MA, Johnston KP (1991) *J Phys Chem* 95: 7863
17. Lowry HH, Erickson WR (1927) *J Am Chem Soc* 49: 2729
18. King MB, Mubarak A, Kim JD, Bott TR (1992) *J Supercrit Fluids* 5: 296
19. Bartle KD, Clifford AA, Jafar SA, Shilstone GF (1991) *J Phys Chem Ref Data* 20: 728
20. Rindfleisch F, DiNoia T, McHugh MA (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 178
21. Yilgor I, McGrath JE, Krukoni VJ (1984) *Polym Bull* 12: 499
22. Krukoni V (1985) *Polymer News* 11: 7
23. DeSimone JM, Guan Z, Elsbernd CS (1992) *Science* 257: 945
24. Guan Z, Combes JR, Menciloglu YZ, DeSimone JM (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 2663
25. Hoefling TA, Newman DA, Enick RM, Beckman EJ (1993) *J Supercrit Fluids* 6: 165
26. Pilato LA, Litz LM, Hargitay B, Osborne RC, Farnham AG, Kawakami JH, Fritze PE, McGrath JE (1975) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 16: 41
27. Fried JR, Li W (1990) *J Appl Polym Sci* 41: 1123
28. Shah VM, Hardy BJ, Stern SA (1993) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 31: 313
29. Shah VM, Hardy BJ, Stern SA (1986) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 24: 2033
30. Kazarian SG, Vincent MF, Bright FV, Liotta CL, Eckert CA (1996) *J Am Chem Soc* 118: 1729
31. Watkins JJ, McCarthy TJ (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4845
32. Watkins JJ, McCarthy TJ (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 4067
33. Hsiao Y-L, Maury EE, DeSimone JM, Mawson SM, Johnston KP (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 8159
34. Sand ML (1986) U.S. Pat 4,598,006
35. Berens AR, Huvad GS, Kormsmeier RW (1989) U.S. Pat 4,820,752
36. Berens AR, Huvad GS, Kormsmeier RW, Kunig FW (1992) *J Appl Polym Sci* 46: 231
37. Watkins JJ, McCarthy TJ (1995) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 73: 158
38. Wang W-CV, Kramer EJ, Sachse WH (1982) *J Polym Sci: Polym Phys Ed* 20: 1371
39. Chiou JS, Barlow JW, Paul DR (1985) *J Appl Polym Sci* 30: 2633
40. Wissinger RG, Paulaitis (1987) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 25: 2497
41. Wissinger RG, Paulaitis ME (1991) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 29: 631
42. Goel SK, Beckman EJ (1993) *Polymer* 34: 1410
43. Condo PD, Paul DR, Johnston KP (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 365
44. Condo PD, Johnston KP (1994) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 32: 523
45. Kamiya Y, Hirose T, Mizoguchi K, Terada K (1988) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 26: 1409
46. Kamiya Y, Mizoguchi K, Hirose T, Naito Y (1989) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 27: 879
47. Handa YP, Lampron S, O'Neill ML (1994) *J Polym Sci, Part B: Polym Phys* 32: 2549
48. Briscoe BJ, Kelly CT (1995) *Polymer* 36: 3099
49. Shieh Y-T, Su J-H, Manivannan G, Lee PHC, Sawan SP, Spall WD (1996) *J Appl Polym Sci* 59: 695
50. Shieh Y-T, Su J-H, Manivannan G, Lee PHC, Sawan SP, Spall WD (1996) *J Appl Polym Sci* 59: 707
51. Condo PD, Sanchez IC, Panayiotou CG, Johnston KP (1992) *Macromolecules* 25: 6119
52. Kalospiros NS, Paulaitis ME (1994) *Chem Eng Sci* 49: 659
53. McHugh MA, Krukoni VJ, Pratt JA (1994) *Trends Polym Sci* 2: 301
54. Elsbernd CS, DeSimone JM, Hellstern AM, Smith SD, Gallagher PM, Krukoni VJ, McGrath JE (1990) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 31: 673
55. Zhao X, Watkins R, Barton SW (1995) *J Appl Polym Sci* 55: 773
56. Garg A, Gulari E, Manke CW (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 5643
57. Mertsch R, Wolf BA (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 3289
58. Kwag C, Gerhardt LJ, Khan V, Gulari E, Manke CW (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 183
59. Elliott J, Jarrell R, Srinivasan G, Dhanuka M, Akhaury R (1992) U.S. Pat 5,128,382
60. Srinivasan G, Elliott J, Richard J (1992) *Ind Eng Chem Res* 31: 1414
61. Wessling M, Borneman Z, Van Den Boomgaard T, Smolders CA (1994) *J Appl Polym Sci* 53: 1497
62. Goel SK, Beckman EJ (1995) *AIChe J* 41: 357
63. Randolph TW, Clark DS, Blanch HW, Prausnitz JM (1988) *Science* 238: 387
64. Ikushima Y, Saito N, Arai M, Blanch HW (1995) *J Phys Chem* 99: 8941
65. Makin EC (1984) U.S. Pat 4,474,994
66. Hybertson BM, Repine JE, Beehler CJ, Rutledge KS, Lagalante AF, Sievers RE (1993) *J Aerosol Med* 6: 275



67. Van Bramer DJ, Shiflett MB, Yokozeki A (1994) U.S. Pat 5,345,013
68. Zosel K (1974) U.S. Pat 3,806,619
69. Prasad R, Gottesman M, Scarella RA (1982) U.S. Pat 4,341,804
70. Leyendecker D (1988) Selection of conditions for an SFC separation. In: Smith RM (ed) *Supercritical fluid chromatography*. Royal Society of Chemists, London p 53
71. Schwarzbach SE (1995) *Nature* 376: 297
72. Guan Z, Combes JR, Elsbernd CS, DeSimone JM (1993) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 34: 446
73. Ehrlich P (1993) *Chemtracts: Org Chem* 6: 92
74. DeSimone JM (1993) *Int Pat Appl PCT/US93/01626*
75. Guan Z, Elsbernd CS, DeSimone JM (1992) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 34: 329
76. Kapellen KK, Mistele CD, DeSimone JM (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 256
77. Romack TJ, Combes JR, DeSimone JM (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 1724
78. Clark MR, DeSimone JM (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 3002
79. Hagiwara M, Mitsui H, Machi S, Kagiya T (1968) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 6: 603
80. Hagiwara M, Mitsui H, Machi S, Kagiya T (1968) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 6: 609
81. Hagiwara M, Mitsui H, Machi S, Kagiya T (1968) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 6: 721
82. Hagiwara M, Okamoto H, Kagiya T (1970) *Bull Chem Soc Jap* 43: 172
83. Kagiya T, Machi S, Hagiwara M, Kise S (1969) U.S. Pat 3,471,463
84. Sumitomo (1968) *French Pat* 1,524,533
85. Fukui K, Kagiya T, Yokota H, Toriuchi Y, Kuniyoshi F (1970) U.S. Pat 3,522,228
86. Hartmann H, Denzinger W (1986) *Canadian Pat* 1,262,995
87. Terry RE, Zaid A, Angelos C, Whitman DL (1988) *Energy Prog* 8: 48
88. Sertage WG, Jr., Davis P, Schenck HU, Denzinger W, Hartmann H (1986) *Canadian Pat* 1,274,942
89. Herbert MW, Huvad GS (1989) *Eur Pat Appl* 0,301,532
90. Romack TJ, Maury EE, DeSimone JM (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 912
91. Dada E, Lau W, Merritt RF, H. PY, Swift G (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 427
92. Romack TJ, DeSimone JM, Treat TA (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 8429
93. Romack TJ, DeSimone JM (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 428
94. Odell PG, Hamer GK (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 404
95. Arshady R (1992) *Colloid Polym Sci* 270: 717
96. Smith WV, Ewart RH (1948) *J Chem Phys* 16: 592
97. Napper DH (1983) *Polymeric stabilization of colloidal dispersions*. Academic Press, New York
98. Barrett KEJ (1975) *Dispersion polymerization in organic media*. John Wiley, New York
99. Piirma I (1992) *Polymeric Surfactants*. Dekker, New York
100. Peck DG, Johnston KP (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 1537
101. Peck DG, Johnston KP (1993) *J Phys Chem* 97: 5661
102. DeSimone JM, Maury EE, Combes JR, Menciloglu YZ (1993) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 68: 41
103. DeSimone JM, Maury EE, Menciloglu YZ, McClain JB, Romack TR, Combes JR (1994) *Science* 265: 356
104. Guan Z, DeSimone JM (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 5527
105. Consani KA, Smith RD (1990) *J Supercrit Fluids* 3: 51
106. Maury EE, Batten HJ, Killian SK, Menciloglu YZ, Combes JR, DeSimone JM (1993) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 34: 664
107. Fulton JL, Pfund DM, McClain JB, Romack TR, Maury EE, Combes JR, Samulski ET, DeSimone JM, Capel M (1995) *Langmuir* 11: 4241
108. Newman DA, Hoeffling TA, Beitle RR, Beckman EJ, Enick RM (1993) *J Supercrit Fluids* 6: 205
109. Harrison K, Goveas J, Johnston KP, O'Rear IEA (1994) *Langmuir* 10: 3536
110. Johnston KP, Harrison KL, Clarke MJ, Howdle SM, Heitz MP, Bright FV, Carlier C, Randolph TW (1996) *Science* 271: 624
111. Bartscherer KA, Minier M, Renon H (1995) *Fluid Phase Equilibria* 107: 93
112. McFann GJ, Johnston KP (1996) *Supercritical Microemulsions*. In: Kumar P, Mittal KL (eds) *Microemulsions: Fundamentals and Applied Aspects*, in press
113. Cohen-Stuart MA, Waajen FHWH, Cosgrove T, Vincent B, Crowley TL (1984) *Macromolecules* 17: 1825
114. McClain JB, Londono D, Combes JR, Romack TJ, Canelas DA, Betts DE, Wignall GD, Samulski ET, DeSimone JM (1996) *J Am Chem Soc* 118: 917

115. McClain JB, Betts DE, Canelas DA, Samulski ET, DeSimone JM, Londono JD, Wignall GD (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 234
116. Kobayashi S, Uyama H, Lee SW, Matsumoto Y (1993) *J Polym Sci, Part A: Polym Chem* 31: 3133
117. Chillura-Martino D, Triolo R, McClain JB, Combes JR, Betts DE, Canelas DA, Samulski ET, DeSimone JM, Cochran HD, Londono JD, Wignall GD (1996) *J Molec Struct: in press*
118. DeSimone JM, Maury EE, Combes JR, Menciloglu YZ (1995) U.S. Pat 5,382,623
119. Canelas DA, Betts DE, DeSimone JM (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 400
120. Hsiao Y-L, Maury EE, DeSimone JM (1995) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 36: 190
121. Shaffer KA, Jones TA, Canelas DA, DeSimone JM, Wilkinson SP (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 2704
122. Canelas DA, Betts DE, DeSimone JM (1996) *Macromolecules* 29: 2818
123. Adamsky FA, Beckman EJ (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 312
124. Adamsky FA, Beckman EJ (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 5238
125. Watkins JJ, McCarthy TJ (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 402
126. Odian G (1991) *Principles of polymerization*. Wiley, New York
127. Biddulph R, Plesch P (1960) *J Chem Soc* 3913
128. Pernecker T, Kennedy JP (1994) *Polym Bull (Berlin)* 32: 537
129. Pernecker T, Kennedy JP (1994) *Polym Bull (Berlin)* 33: 13
130. Deak G, Pernecker T, Kennedy JP (1994) *Polym Bull (Berlin)* 33: 259
131. Kennedy JP, Pernecker T (1994) U.S. Pat 5,376,744
132. Pernecker T, Deak G, Kennedy JP (1995) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 36: 243
133. Yokota H, Kondo M, Kagiya T, Fukui K (1968) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 6: 425
134. Yokota H, Kondo M, Kagiya T, Fukui K (1968) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 6: 435
135. Kagiya T, Kondo M, Narita K, Fukui K (1969) *Bull Chem Soc Jap* 42: 1688
136. Yokota H, Kondo M, Kagiya T, Fukui K (1969) *Bull Chem Soc Jap* 42: 1412
137. Fukui K, Kagiya T, Yokota H, Toriuchi Y, Matsumi S (1969) U.S. Pat 3,446,776
138. Yokota H, Kondo M, Kagiya T, Fukui K (1967) *J Polym Sci: Part A-1* 5: 3129
139. Clark MR, DeSimone JM (1994) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 35: 482
140. Higashimura T, Aoshima S (1989) *Macromolecules* 22: 1009
141. Rokicki A, Kuran W (1981) *J Macromol Sci, Rev Macromol Chem C21*: 135
142. Sumitomo Chemical Co. L, Seitsetso Kagaku Co. L (1968) *British Pat* 1,135,671
143. Lebrun J-J, Sagi F, Soria M (1986) *Eur Pat Appl* 0221824A1
144. Mistele CD, Thorp HH, DeSimone JM (1995) *Polym Prepr (Am Chem Soc, Div Polym Chem)* 36: 507
145. Mistele CD, Thorp HH, DeSimone JM (1996) *J Macromol Sci A33*: 953
146. Burke ALC, Maier G, DeSimone JM (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 248
147. Romack TJ, Kipp BE, DeSimone JM (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 8432
148. Kipp BE, Romack TJ, DeSimone JM (1996) *Polym Mater Sci Eng* 74: 264

Editor: Prof. Salamone

Received April 1996

# Design and Construction of Supramolecular Architectures Consisting of Cyclodextrins and Polymers

Akira Harada

Department of Macromolecular Science, Faculty of Science, Osaka University, Toyonaka, Osaka, 560 Japan. E-mail: harada@chem.sci.osaka-u.ac.jp

*Cyclodextrins* (CDs) interact with various polymers of high specificity to give crystalline inclusion complexes in which CD molecules are threaded by a polymer chain. For example,  $\alpha$ -CD forms such complexes with poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG) when the PEG molecular weight is higher than 200, but  $\beta$ -CD does not. On the other hand, for poly(propylene glycol) (PPG), the reverse is the case. Although both  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ -CD fail,  $\gamma$ -CD complexes with poly(methyl vinyl ether) (PMVE). In addition,  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ -CD complex with oligo(ethylene) (OE) and poly(isobutylene) (PIB), respectively. Three quarters of the present paper describe the synthesis, structure, and properties of these CD-polymer inclusion complexes. The remaining part is concerned with rotaxanes including polyrotaxanes and also catenanes. A particularly detailed description is made concerning the work of the author and his coworkers which led to the synthesis of polyrotaxanes consisting of  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG and the making of molecular tubes from them. It is expected that such tubes may find many useful applications in chemistry and biology.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| <b>1 Introduction</b> . . . . .  | 142 |
| <b>2 Complex Formation of Cyclodextrins with Hydrophilic Polymers</b> . . . .                  | 144 |
| 2.1 Complex Formation of CD with PEG . . . . .   | 145 |
| 2.1.1 Rates of Complex Formation . . . . .   | 146 |
| 2.1.2 Molecular Weight Effects on the Yields of Complexes . . . .                              | 146 |
| 2.1.3 Stoichiometries of Complex Formation . . . . .   | 147 |
| 2.1.4 Properties of the Complexes . . . . .  | 149 |
| 2.1.5 Inclusion Modes . . . . .  | 150 |
| 2.1.6 Complex Formation of $\alpha$ -CD with Monodisperse<br>Oligo(ethylene glycols) . . . . . | 150 |
| 2.1.7 Complex Formation between $\alpha$ -CD and PEG Derivatives . . . .                       | 153 |
| 2.1.8 Double-chain Inclusion Complexes of $\gamma$ -CD with PEG . . . .                        | 155 |
| 2.1.9 Gel Formation between $\alpha$ -CD and High Molecular Weight<br>PEG . . . . .            | 158 |
| 2.2 Complex Formation of $\beta$ - and $\gamma$ -CD with PPG . . . . .                         | 158 |
| 2.3 Complex Formation of $\gamma$ -CD with Poly(methyl vinyl ether) . . . .                    | 160 |
| 2.4 Complex Formation of CDs with Poly(oxytrimethylene) . . . . .                              | 160 |
| 2.5 Complex Formation of CDs with Poly(tetrahydrofuran) . . . . .                              | 161 |
| <b>3 Complex Formation between CDs and Hydrophobic Polymers</b> . . . . .                      | 162 |
| 3.1 Complex Formation between oligoethylene (OE) and $\alpha$ -CD . . . .                      | 163 |
| 3.2 Complex Formation of Polyisobutylene with CDs . . . . .                                    | 166 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| <b>4 Rotaxanes and Catenanes</b> . . . . .                            | 167 |
| 4.1 Rotaxanes . . . . .   | 168 |
| 4.1.1 Preparation of Rotaxanes . . . . .                              | 168 |
| 4.1.2 Molecular Shuttles . . . . .                                    | 171 |
| 4.1.3 [2]Rotaxanes Containing CDs . . . . .                           | 173 |
| 4.2 Catenanes . . . . .   | 175 |
| 4.2.1 Preparation of Catenanes . . . . .                              | 175 |
| 4.2.2 Molecular Train . . . . .                                       | 177 |
| 4.2.3 Catenanes Containing Metal Complexes . . . . .                  | 177 |
| 4.2.4 Catenanes Containing CDs . . . . .                              | 178 |
| 4.2.5 Other Catenanes . . . . .                                       | 179 |
| <b>5 Molecular Necklaces (Polyrotaxanes)</b> . . . . .                | 180 |
| 5.1 Polyrotaxanes Containing Polydisperse Poly(ethylene glycol) . . . | 180 |
| 5.2 Polyrotaxane Containing Monodisperse Oligo(ethylene glycol) . .   | 183 |
| <b>6 Molecular Tube</b> . . . . .                                     | 185 |
| <b>7 Conclusions</b> . . . . .  | 188 |
| <b>8 References</b> . . . . .   | 188 |

## 1 Introduction

In recent years, much attention has been focused on molecular recognition of low molecular weight compounds [1]. Molecular recognition is defined by the energy and the information involved in the binding and selection of substrates by a given receptor molecule. Typical hosts are crown ethers [2], cryptands [3], cyclophanes [4], and calixarenes [5]. However, the guests recognized by these hosts have been limited to small molecules and simple ions. Therefore, it has been inviting to find host molecules which can recognize and respond sensitively to larger and more complicated compounds including polymers. In biological systems, such as enzyme-substrate complexes, antigen-antibody complexes, DNA, RNA, and cell adhesion systems, macromolecular recognition, which means the recognition of a macromolecule by a macromolecule, plays a role in constructing supramolecular structures, achieving their specific functions, and maintaining their lives [6]. Yet, no approach to it with artificial host-guest systems has been foreseen.

Recently, it has become clear to the author that cyclodextrin is one of the promising hosts for macromolecular recognition, with the finding that the cylindrical channel formed when it is stacked in a linear row is able to accommodate one or more long-chain guests. Thus, he and his coworkers launched a series of experiments to explore the formation of inclusion complexes between

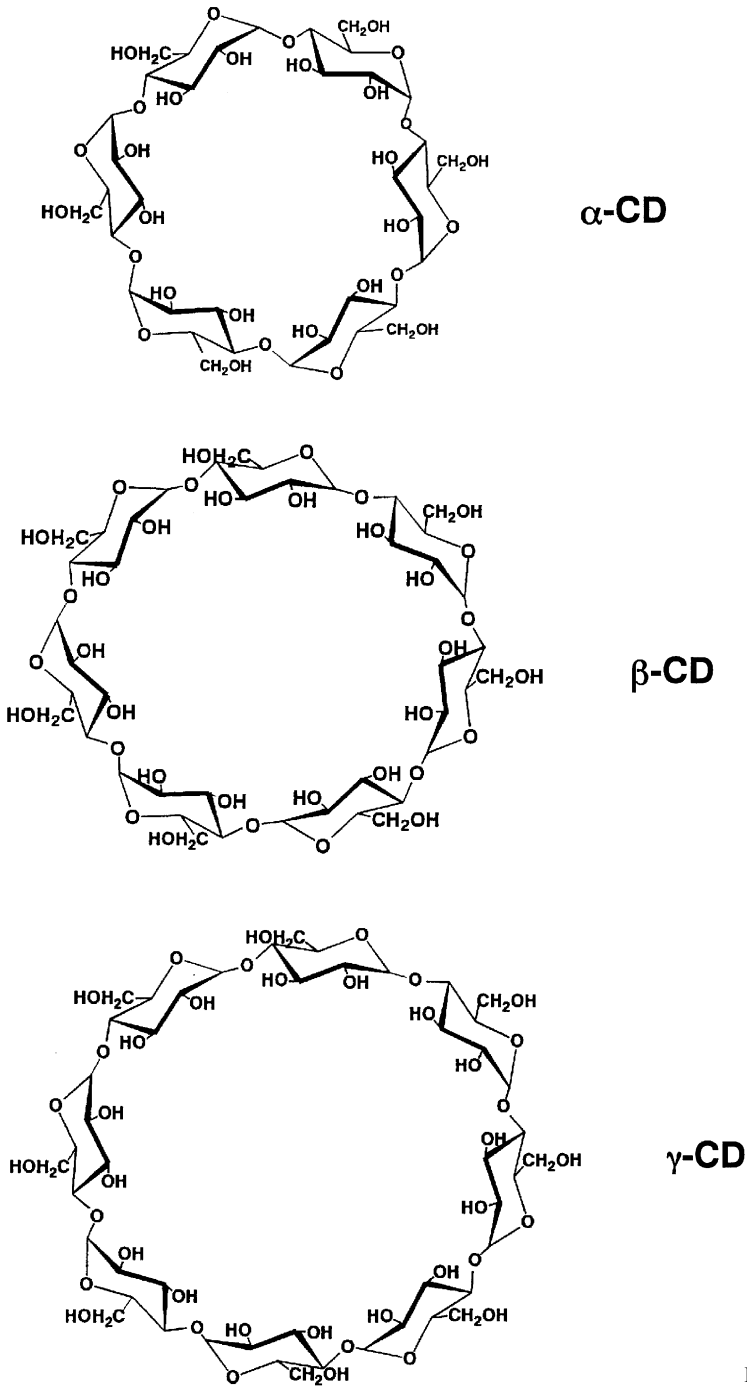


Figure 1.

CDs and polymers, and have accumulated a lot of information that they believe is basically significant and interesting for the elucidation of macromolecular recognition. This paper summarizes the main findings and conclusions from their efforts, along with the related important contributions from other authors.

Cyclodextrin (abbreviated CD in what follows) is the name for three cyclic oligosaccharides, each containing 6 or 7 or 8 glucose units linked through  $\alpha$ -1,4-glycosidic linkages. Fig. 1 illustrates their chemical structures. As indicated in the figure, these three compounds are called  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ , and  $\gamma$ -CD, depending on the numbers 6, 7 and 8 of glucose units. They have been the subjects of extensive investigation, with the number of published papers now exceeding 10000. One of the most notable features is that they form inclusion complexes with a wide variety of low molecular weight compounds ranging from nonpolar hydrocarbons to polar carboxylic acids and amines [7–9]. Recently, it has become clear that they also give inclusion complexes with organometallic compounds as ferrocenes [10–17], arene complexes [18, 19],  $\pi$ -allyl complexes [20, 21], and olefin complexes [22–29] as well as metal complexes [30–32]. Moreover, Stoddart et al. [33] found the complexation of CDs with olefin metal complexes. We prepared CD polymers [34–38] and dimers [39] to see if they can cooperatively bind long molecules. However, in the early 1980s when Harada et al. began their studies, no publication reporting the complex formation of CDs with polymers was available, although it had been known that a monomer polymerizes in situ within a CD complex. For example, Ogata et al. [40] succeeded in obtaining polyamides by condensation of acid chlorides and inclusion of hexamethylene diamine complexes of  $\beta$ -CD, and Maciejewski et al. [41] reported the polymerization and copolymerization of vinylidene chlorides forming adducts with  $\beta$ -CD. Some other papers had suggested interactions of CD with polymers in aqueous solutions. Thus, Kitano et al. [42] found CD to have effect on the critical micelle concentrations of some surfactants, and Iijima et al. [43] noted CD-polymer interactions in a study of diffusion of CD in water containing poly(styrenesulfonate).

As Harada et al. went on, it became clear that CDs selectively react with various kinds of polymers to give crystalline complexes at high yields and that those complexes have the characteristic structure as predicted initially [44–47]. Three quarters of the present paper tells the story of this research development, and the remaining part is devoted to a description of the work on polyrotaxanes entrapping many CD rings, tubular polymers prepared from them, together with rotaxanes and catenanes containing other ring components.

## 2 Complex Formation of Cyclodextrins with Hydrophilic Polymers [51–58]

As mentioned above, CDs had been known to form complexes when aqueous solutions of water-soluble low molecular weight compounds were added to their

saturated aqueous solutions at room temperature. Harada and coworkers started examining whether the same happens between CDs and water-soluble nonionic polymers. First of all they found that CDs failed to complex with poly(vinyl alcohol) (PVA) and polyacrylamide (PAAm), but  $\alpha$ -CD formed a complex with poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG) at as high a yield as shown in Table 1. Note that PEG has a smaller cross-section than PVA and PAAm. This table also shows that poly(propylene glycol) (PPG), which has a larger cross-section than PEG, can complex with  $\beta$ -CD and  $\gamma$ -CD at comparable high yields, but cannot do so with  $\alpha$ -CD. The geometry worth noting here is that the cavity diameters of  $\beta$  and  $\gamma$ -CD, which are 7.0 and 8.5 Å, respectively, are bigger than 4.7 Å for the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity. Another indication of Table 1 is that poly(methyl vinyl ether), which is the same in composition as PPG but has a methoxy group as the side chain, can complex with  $\gamma$ -CD, though not with the other two CDs. Thus, it was apparent that the size of the CD's cavity relative to the polymer's cross-sectional area plays an important role in their complex formation.

## 2.1 Complex Formation of CD with PEG [45, 47]

Addition of an aqueous solution of PEG to a saturated aqueous solution of  $\alpha$ -CD at room temperature did not lead to complex formation unless the average molecular weight of PEG exceeded 200 [46]. Moreover, carbohydrate polymers such as dextran and pullulan failed to precipitate complexes with PEG, and the same was true for amylose, glucose, methyl glucose, maltose, maltotriose, cyclodextrin derivatives, such as glucosyl- $\alpha$ -CD and maltosyl- $\alpha$ -CD, and water-soluble polymers of  $\alpha$ -CD crosslinked by epichlorohydrin. These facts suggested to Harada et al. the direction for further research.

**Table 1.** Comparison of hydrophilic polymers with various chain cross-sectional areas in formation of crystalline complexes with cyclodextrins

| Polymer         | Structure                                  | Yield (%)                 |                          |                           |
|-----------------|--|---------------------------|--------------------------|---------------------------|
|                 |  | $\alpha$ -CD <sup>a</sup> | $\beta$ -CD <sup>b</sup> | $\gamma$ -CD <sup>c</sup> |
| PEG (MW 1000)   | $-(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O})_n-$     | 92                        | 0                        | trace                     |
| PPG (MW 1000)   | $-(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CH}_3))_n-$  | 0                         | 96                       | 80                        |
| PMVE (MW 20000) | $-(\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{OCH}_3))_n-$ | 0                         | 0                        | 67                        |

<sup>a</sup>  $\alpha$ -CD saturated aqueous solution, 1.5 mL; polymers, 15 mg.

<sup>b</sup>  $\beta$ -CD saturated aqueous solution, 7 mL; polymers, 15 mg.

<sup>c</sup>  $\gamma$ -CD saturated aqueous solution, 2 mL; polymers, 15 mg.

### 2.1.1 Rates of Complex Formation

Because of the above finding Harada et al. noted it important to examine the rate of complex formation between  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG as a function of PEG molecular weight, and results obtained are illustrated in Fig. 2, where the rate of turbidity development after mixing fixed amounts of  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG is plotted against PEG molecular weight. It is seen that the rate attains a maximum at a PEG molecular weight near 1000. The maximum may be attributed to the competition of two effects: the increased chance for the CD to find polymer chains in its neighbor and the decrease in the number of chain ends with the increase in chain length. Aqueous mixtures of PEG and  $\beta$ -CD exhibited no turbidity change at any PEG molecular weights.

### 2.1.2 Molecular Weight Effects on the Yield of Complexes

With the  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes isolated by filtration or centrifugation, the yields of complexes were determined as a function of PEG molecular weight, assuming that two ethylene glycol units are bound to one  $\alpha$ -CD, i.e., the stoichiometric ratio is 2:1, and the results shown in Fig. 3 were obtained. It is

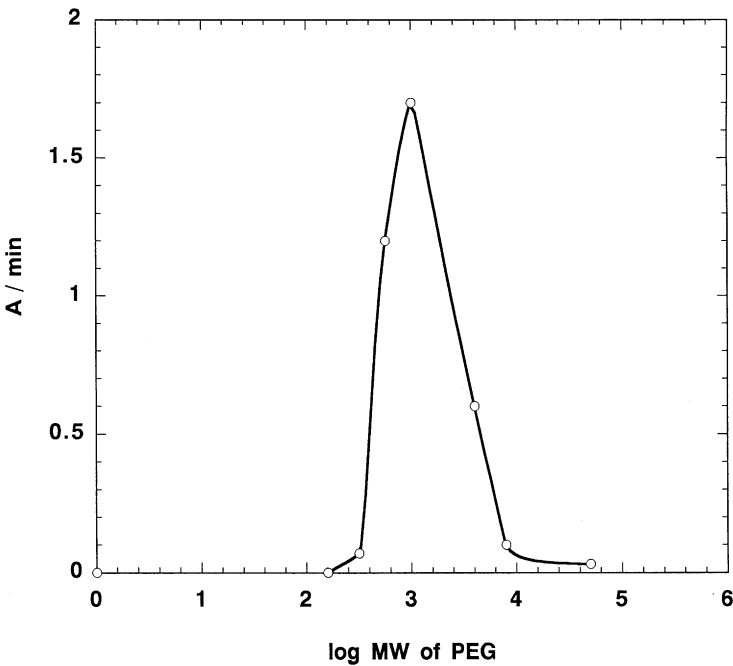


Figure 2.



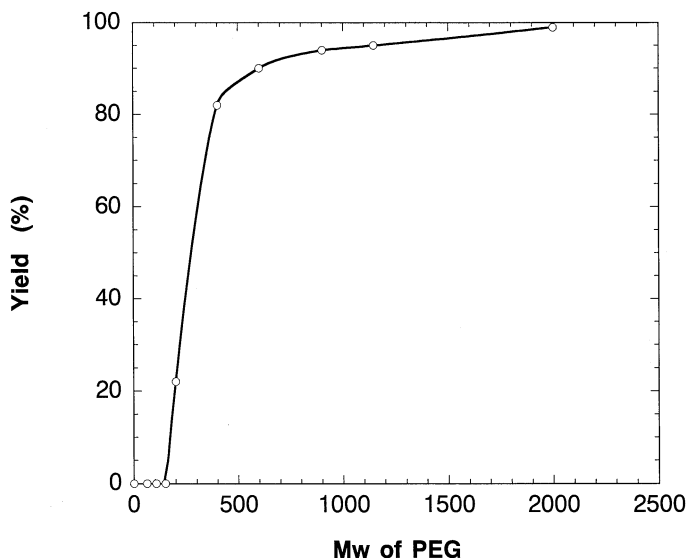


Figure 3.

seen that no complex formation occurs until the PEG molecular weight reaches about 200, but once complexation starts, the yield sharply increases with increasing the molecular weight, and becomes almost quantitative at the molecular weights above 1000. The complex formation was initially slow when the molecular weight was higher than 1000, but equilibrium was attained after the solution had been left standing for several hours.

The above finding led to another interesting conclusion that a minimum chain length is essential for PEG to form a stable complex with  $\alpha$ -CD. The chain length selectivity implies that some cooperative action is involved in this complex formation as is well known in the complex formation of PEG with hydrogen-donor polymers such as poly(acrylic acid).

### 2.1.3 Stoichiometries of Complex Formation

Next, with a PEG sample having as an average molecular weight of 600, the yields of complexes with  $\alpha$ -CD were measured as a function of the amount of PEG in the solution, and the results presented in Fig. 4 were obtained. It is seen that the yield initially increases linearly with the polymer amount and begins to level off at a molar ratio of about 2:1 (ethylene glycol: $\alpha$ -CD). The saturation corresponds to the consumption of  $\alpha$ -CD of more than 90%. Fig. 5 delineates the data obtained by varying the amount of  $\alpha$ -CD and keeping that of PEG fixed. It also proves that the complex formation obeys the 2:1 stoichiometric ratio. Further support to this fact can be seen from the  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectra shown in

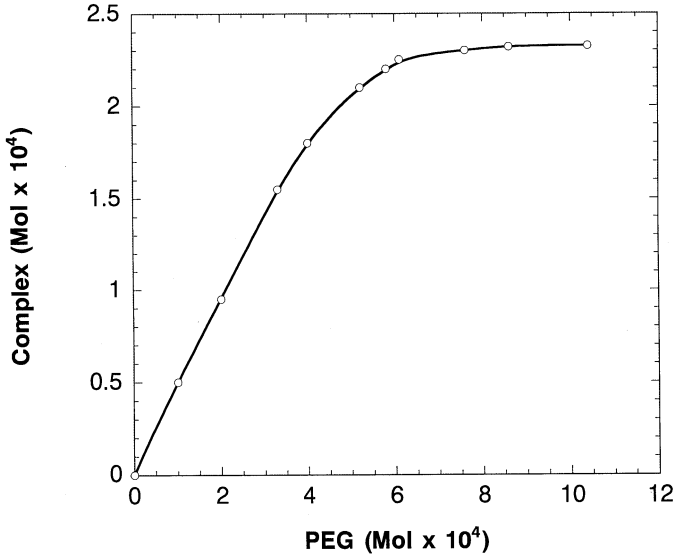


Figure 4.

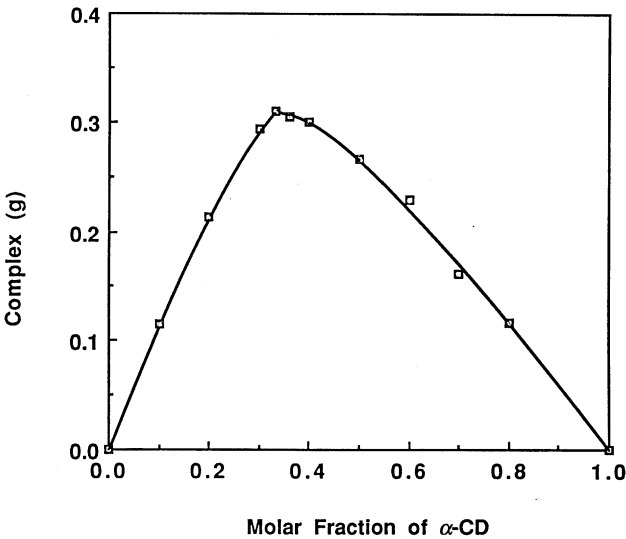


Figure 5.

Fig. 6. Thus, the conclusion is that the 2 : 1 stoichiometry governs the complex formation of  $\alpha$ -CD with PEG, regardless of the mixing ratio of the two components. In this connection, the geometry, namely that the length of two ethylene glycol units (6.6 Å) is essentially equal to the depth of the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity (6.7 Å), is worth mentioning.

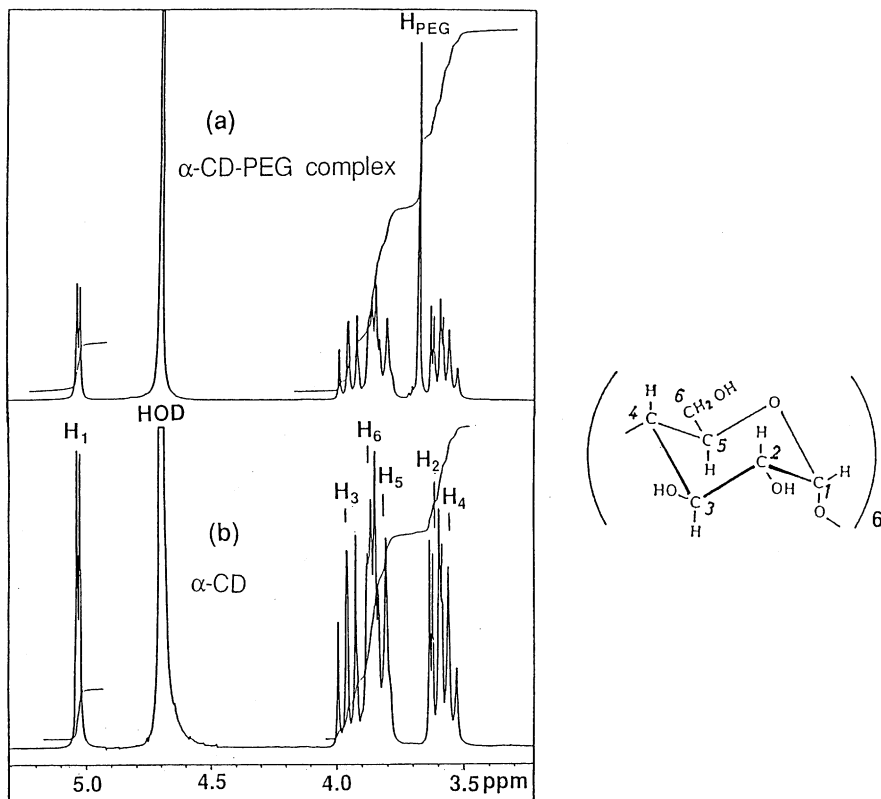


Figure 6.

### 2.1.4 Properties of the Complexes

The  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes are crystalline solids if the PEG molecular weight is lower than 2000. They are water-soluble for the molecular weights below 1000, but heating is needed to make those of higher molecular weight dissolve in water. Addition of an excess of a low molecular weight compound, such as benzoic acid, propionic acid, and propanol, stabilizes the suspension if the PEG molecular weight is as low as 1000. The complex formation occurs reversibly, and the equilibrium is not affected by the addition of salts such as NaCl and KCl. Thus no ionic interaction appears to be involved in the complex formation between  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG. However, since the addition of urea, a known hydrogen-bond breaker, solubilizes the complexes, it is certain that hydrogen bonding plays a role in this complex formation.

The decomposition temperatures of the complexes were a little higher than that for a  $\alpha$ -CD itself. For example, when PEG had a molecular weight of 1000 the decomposition occurred above 300 °C, while pure  $\alpha$ -CD melted and

decomposed below it. This fact shows that  $\alpha$ -CD is stabilized by complexation with PEG.

### 2.1.5 Inclusion Modes

Figure 7 shows X-ray powder patterns for the complexes of  $\alpha$ -CD with PEG and some low molecular weight analogs. According to Saenger et al. [9], the structures of the inclusion complexes of CDs with low molecular weight compounds are classified into two types called “cage” and “channel”. X-ray analysis showed that  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes are crystalline and their patterns are very similar to that of  $\alpha$ -CD complexed with valeric acid or octanol which has an extended channel structure, but quite different from those of the complexes with acetic acid, propionic acid, and propanol, which have a cage structure. Based on these observations, Harada et al. concluded that  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes are isomorphous and have the channel-type structure.

Molecular models indicate that the PEG chain can penetrate the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity, whereas this is not the case with the PPG chain (see Fig. 8), consistent with the experimental finding that  $\alpha$ -CD forms complexes with PEG but not with PPG. The failure of  $\beta$ -CD to complex with PEG cannot be explained in terms of molecular models, but the geometry that the cavity is too wide for the PEG chain seems responsible for it.

Figure 9 shows the  $^{13}\text{C}$  CP/MAS NMR spectra for  $\alpha$ -CD and its complex with PEG. We see that  $\alpha$ -CD including no guest in its cavity assumes a less symmetrical conformation in the crystalline state, with its spectrum displaying resolved C-1 and C-4 resonances associated with the six  $\alpha$ -1,4-linked glucose residues. Note that the peaks at 80 and 89 ppm, corresponding respectively to the C-1 and C-4 adjacent to the conformally strained glucose linkage, disappear in the spectrum of the complex, in which each carbon of glucose appears as a single peak. Thus, it appears that, in the complex with PEG,  $\alpha$ -CD assumes a symmetrical conformation and all of its glucose units find themselves in a similar environment.

### 2.1.6 Complex Formation of $\alpha$ -CD with Monodisperse Oligo(ethylene glycol)s [59]

The initial experiments of Harada and coworkers were done using commercially available PEG, so that the complexes obtained were undoubtedly polydisperse and heterogeneous. In order to see if the early finding that  $\alpha$ -CD made no complex with such low molecular members of PEG as ethylene glycol and bis(ethylene glycol) was due to a sample's polydispersity, they went one step further by preparing a series of monodisperse oligo(ethylene glycols) (OEG), i.e.,  $\text{HO}(-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O})_n\text{OH}$  (for  $n = 8, 12, 18, 20, 28, 36, 44$ ), using the Bomer method [60] followed by repeated purification by preparative size-exclusion

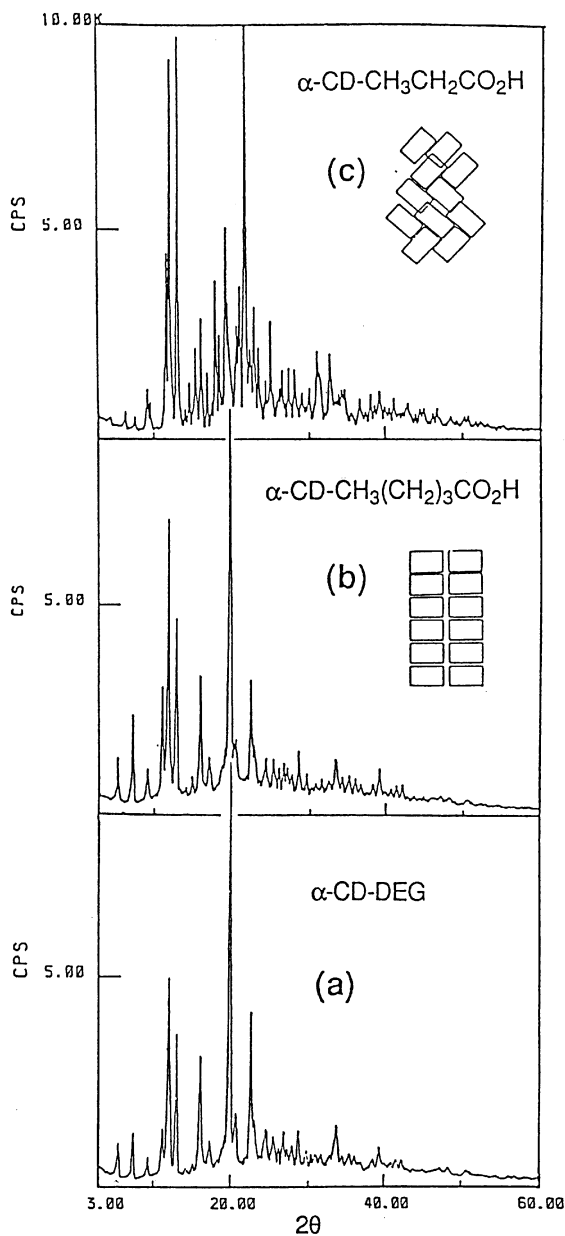


Figure 7.

chromatography. The yields of complexes of  $\alpha$ -CD with these OEG appear plotted against the polymerization degree of OEG in Fig. 10; their values were calculated assuming the 2:1 stoichiometry that has been established in a previous section. This graph convinces us that complex formation with  $\alpha$ -CD does

## PEG(Polyethylene glycol)

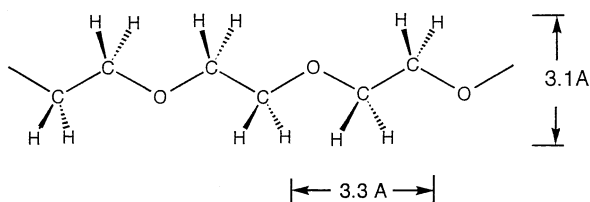
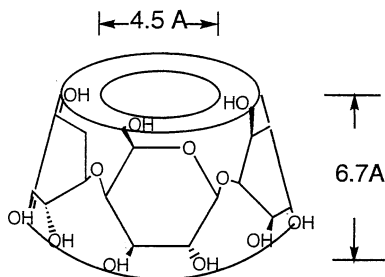
 $\alpha$ -CD

Figure 8.

not take place for ethylene glycol, bis(ethylene glycol), and tris(ethylene glycol) but becomes detectable for tetrakis(ethylene glycol). The yield sharply increases in the range of polymerization degree from 5 to 12 and becomes almost quantitative for OEG larger than eicosakis(ethylene glycol). Thus a more definite conclusion is that: complex formation between  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG begins to obey the 2:1 stoichiometry when the polymerization degree exceeds 6.

Table 2 compares the complex formations of  $\alpha$ -CD with cyclic OEG (crown ethers) and linear OEG. Interestingly, the yield for cyclic OEG is lowered as the guest gets larger, while the opposite is the case for linear OEG. No complex formation occurs for 15-crown-5 and higher cyclic OEG. This is probably because these crown ethers are too bulky to fit in the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity. Evidently, having no chain ends, the  $\alpha$ -CD molecules cannot intercross with cyclic OEG chains. Dioxane gave a one-to-one complex and 12-crown-4 formed a two-to-one complex with  $\alpha$ -CD. These facts imply that effective end groups are needed for allowing linear OEG chains to be recognized by  $\alpha$ -CD. So Harada and coworkers proceeded to investigating PEG modified at its chain ends.

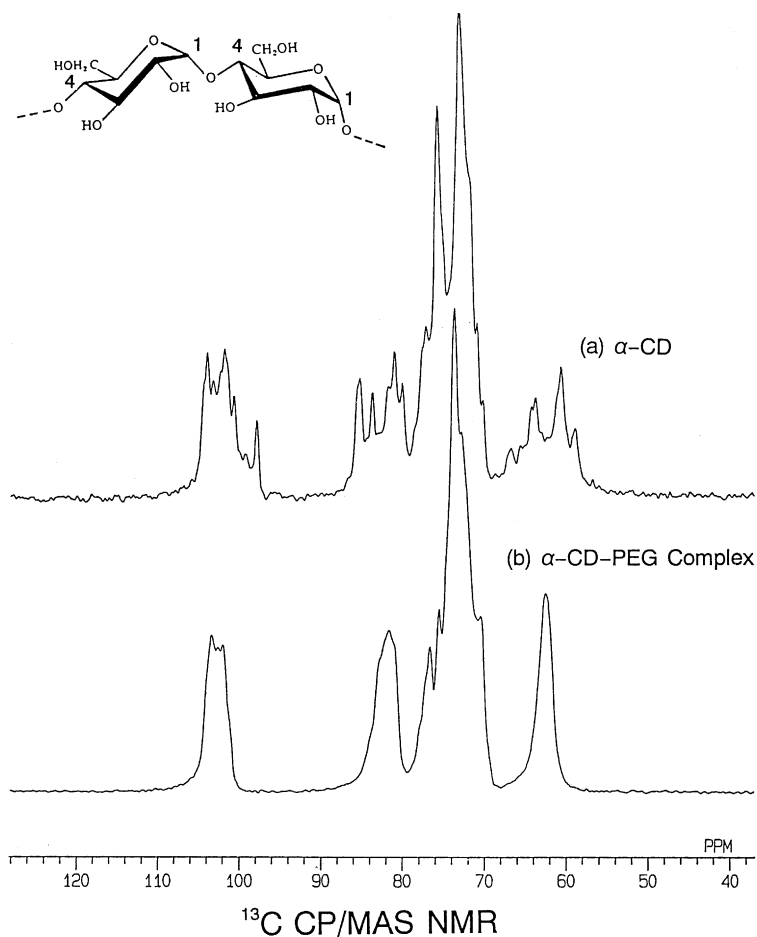


Figure 9.

### 2.1.7 Complex Formation between $\alpha$ -CD and PEG Derivatives

Table 3 shows the experimental results obtained with the PEG. First, PEG carrying small end groups, such as methyl, dimethyl, and amino, can give complexes at higher yields than for unmodified PEG. This implies that hydrogen bonding between the OH groups of PEG and  $\alpha$ -CD plays no essential role in the complex formation. Next, PEG carrying bulky end groups, such as 3,5-dinitrobenzoyl and 2,4-dinitrophenyl, fail to complex with  $\alpha$ -CD, probably because these substituents are too large to allow the chain to enter the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity.

Figure 11 proposes a structure for the PEG- $\alpha$ -CD complex on the basis of the conclusions derived so far. In that, a single PEG chain penetrates through

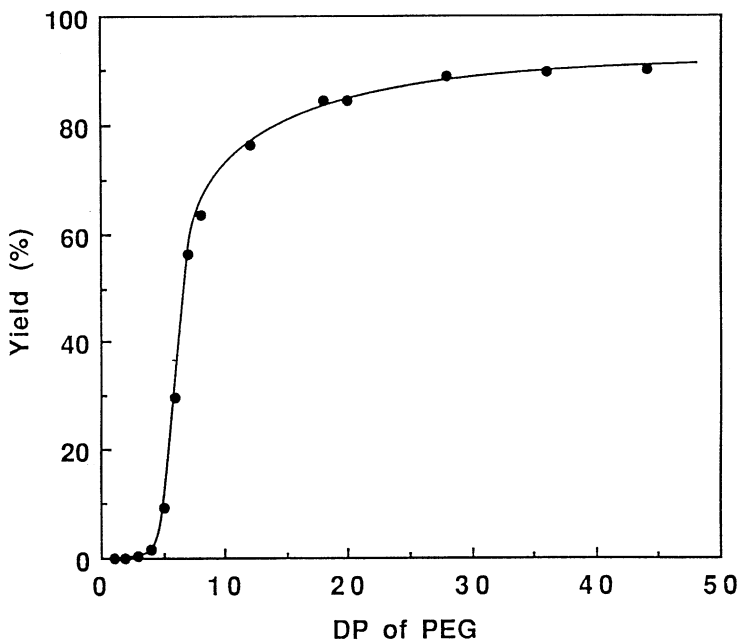
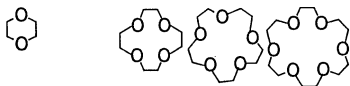


Figure 10.

**Table 2.** Yields for the complex formation between oligo(ethylene glycol) and  $\alpha$ -CD

|            | Number of $-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O}-$ |   |   |   |    |    |    |    |
|------------|--|---|---|---|----|----|----|----|
|            | 2  | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6  | 7  | 8  | 12 |
| Linear (%) | 0  | 0 | 2 | 9 | 30 | 56 | 64 | 76 |
| Cyclic (%) | 21   | – | 9 | 0 | 0  | –  | –  | –  |

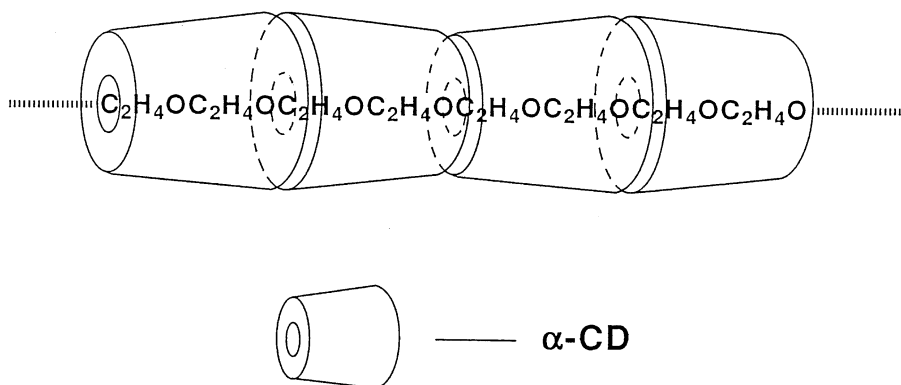


the channel formed by the cavities of  $\alpha$ -CD molecules bound together by hydrogen bonds in the head-to-head and tail-to-tail fashion, with the secondary hydroxy group side as the “head” and the primary hydroxy group side as the “tail”. Including PEG in the  $\alpha$ -CD channel is entropically not favourable, but hydrogen bond formation between adjacent cyclodextrins promotes it since a lowering of enthalpy results. Thus, the structure as in Fig. 11 should be highly probable when the latter effect is overwhelming.



**Table 3.** Complex formation between CD and PEG with various end groups

| R(CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> O) <sub>n</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> CH <sub>2</sub> R' |                   |      | Yield (%) |      |
|--|-------------------|------|-----------|------|
| R  | R'                | MW   | α-CD      | β-CD |
| -OH  | -OH               | 1000 | 90        | 0    |
| -NH <sub>2</sub>   | -NH <sub>2</sub>  | 1450 | 90        | 0    |
| -OCH <sub>3</sub>  | -OCH <sub>3</sub> | 1000 | 93        | 0    |
|  |                   | 900  | 0         | 0    |
|  | -OCH <sub>3</sub> | 900  | 77        | 10   |
|  |                   | 3700 | 0         | 0    |

**Figure 11.**

### 2.1.8 Double-chain Inclusion Complexes of $\gamma$ -CD with PEG [61]

Though  $\gamma$ -CD was found to form complexes also with PEG, the yields were too small for their characterization. Thus, Harada et al. turned to two PEG derivatives-bis(3,5-dinitrobenzoyl)-PEG (PEG-DNB2) and bis(2,4-dinitrophenylamino)-PEG (PEG-DNP2)-, which were found to complex with this CD at high yields. Using a fluorescent probe technique the resulting complexes were shown to include four ethylene glycol units in one  $\gamma$ -CD cavity. However, these PEG derivatives formed no complex with  $\alpha$ -CD. This is attributable to the fact that their chains are too thick to enter the slim  $\alpha$ -CD cavity.

To obtain additional information PEG-DNB2 was allowed to complex with  $\gamma$ -CD first by adding it to an aqueous solution of  $\gamma$ -CD at the 2:1 stoichiometric ratio and then further adding the same amount of it to the mixture; in total, 90% of the CD was consumed for complexation. The area of the  $^1\text{H}$  NMR peak for CD relative to that for PEG in the isolated complex was consistent with the above finding. It is interesting to compare this result with the complexation of  $\alpha$ -CD with PEG, by the fluorescent probe technique.

In order to work out in more detail Harada and coworkers took a step further by preparing fluorescence-labeled bis(1-naphthylacetyl)-PEG (PEG-1N2) and bis(2-naphthylacetyl)-PEG (PEG-2N2). The complexes of these compounds with  $\gamma$ -CD were isolated by standard methods and subjected to NMR measurement. The results also conformed to the conclusion that four ethylene glycol units are included in one  $\gamma$ -CD.

The emission spectrum of the PEG-2N2 complex consisted of a large contribution from a collective excitation due to the interaction of two neighboring naphthyls and a small contribution from isolated (monomeric) naphthyls (see Fig. 12). This differs from the emission spectrum for the  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG-2N2,

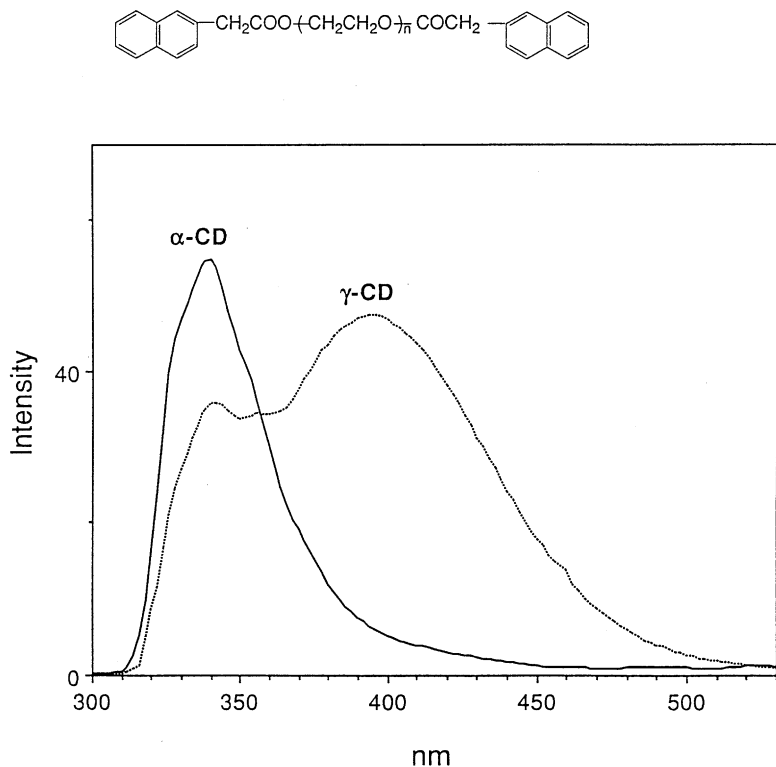


Figure 12.

which exhibits only the emission from isolated naphthyls. These results may also be taken to prove that the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity is threaded by a single PEG chain and the  $\gamma$ -CD cavity by two. Spectral data on the complexes of PEG-1N2 with CDs confirmed this conclusion. In the absence of CD, only a small monomer emission contributed by excimers was observed. Addition of  $\beta$  or  $\alpha$ -CD caused the monomer emission to increase and the excimer emission to decrease. When  $\gamma$ -CD was present, the emission was primarily from excimers, which indicates that two naphthyl groups were involved in the  $\gamma$ -CD cavity.

We may envisage the two modes of chain inclusion as sketched in Fig. 13: in one, a linear stack of CDs is threaded by two separate chains, and in the other it is threaded by one folded chain. To see which is more likely to occur, Harada and coworkers prepared monosubstituted naphthyl derivatives of PEG (PEG-2N) and found that the emission spectra for their complexes with  $\gamma$ -CD were

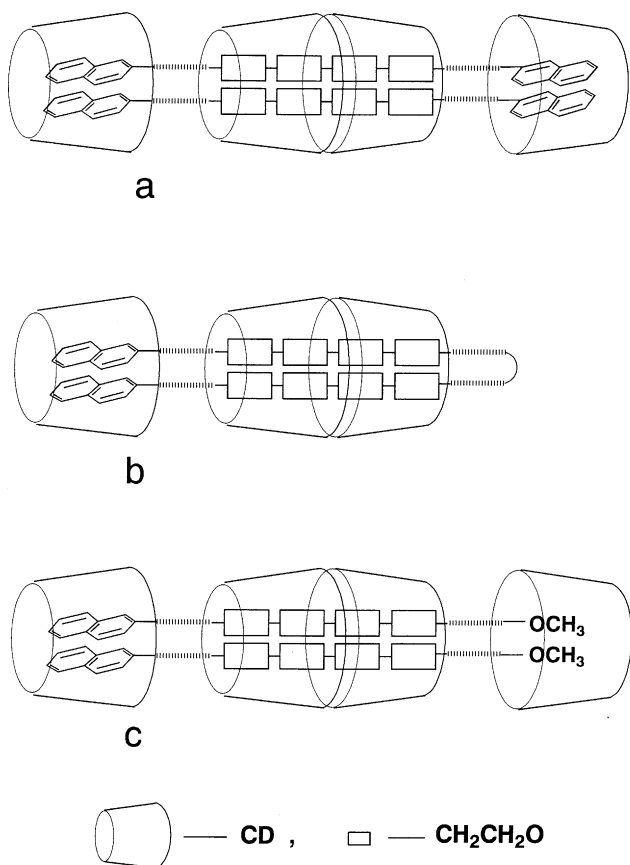


Figure 13.

similar to those for the disubstituted forms. This convinced them that the two separate chain inclusion is more probable.

In passing, we again touch upon some geometrical facts. The diameter of the  $\gamma$ -CD is 8.5–9 Å, which is about twice as large as that of the  $\alpha$ -CD. The cavity depth is 7 Å for all  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  and  $\gamma$ -CD, and almost equals the length of two ethylene glycol units. Molecular models show that the  $\gamma$ -CD cavity is wide enough to accommodate two PEG chains, but the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity is too narrow to make this possible.

### 2.1.9 Gel Formation between $\alpha$ -CD and High Molecular Weight PEG [62]

Gels covering a wide range of concentration were formed when high molecular weight PEG and  $\alpha$ -CD were mixed at different ratios in water. The gelation was enhanced by increasing the concentrations of the two components, and also by an increase in the molecular weight of the PEG. These facts suggest that gelation takes place with the result that the domains of CDs trapping polymer chains act as crosslinks of the chains. X-ray powder patterns showed the presence of both complexed and uncomplexed CD in gels, which means that the same polymer chains in the solution are left untrapped by CDs. The gel-melting temperature got higher as the PEG molecular weight and the CD concentration were increased, but it was lowered as the concentration of PEG was increased. These facts reflect the variation in number and size of the crosslink domains under the experimental conditions used.

### 2.2 Complex Formation of $\beta$ and $\gamma$ -CD with PPG [63, 64]

Though  $\beta$ -CD forms no complex with PEG of any molecular weight, it does with PPG to give crystalline compounds. The yields of complexes of  $\beta$ -CD with PPG are shown as a function of the PPG molecular weight in Fig. 14. We see that complex formation starts at a molecular weight of 400, becomes almost quantitative at a molecular weight of 1000, and then is suppressed with further increases in molecular weight. This behavior differs from that of the complexation between  $\alpha$ -CD and PEG, in which the yield increases monotonically with increasing molecular weight towards a saturation point. The difference may be attributed to the fact that PPG is more hydrophobic than PEG owing to the methyl group on its main chain.  $\gamma$ -CD also forms complexes with PPG at high yields when the molecular weight is as low as 400–725, as seen in Fig. 15. The point revealed by these two graphs is that for either  $\beta$ - or  $\gamma$ -CD there is a minimum chain length of PPG needed for the complexation with it. As has already been shown, the chain length selectivity is also characteristic of the complex formation of  $\alpha$ -CD with PEG. Thus, some cooperative action should be involved in the complexation of CDs with hydrophilic polymers. For example, it is likely that the hydrogen bonding of CD rings is aided by neighboring polymer

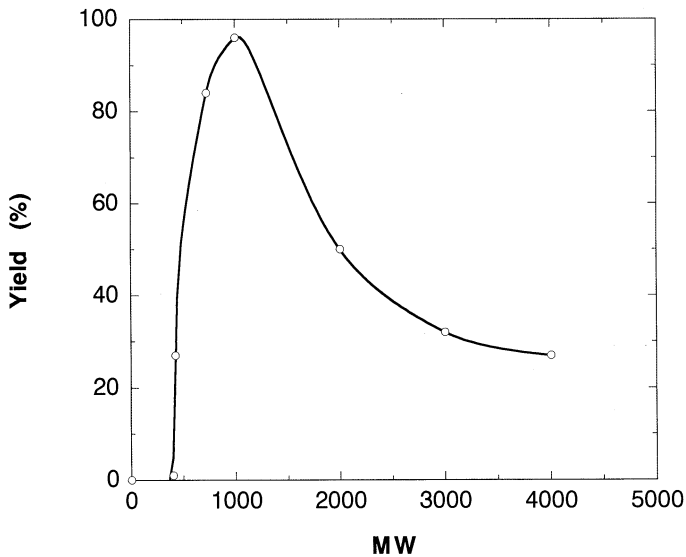


Figure 14.

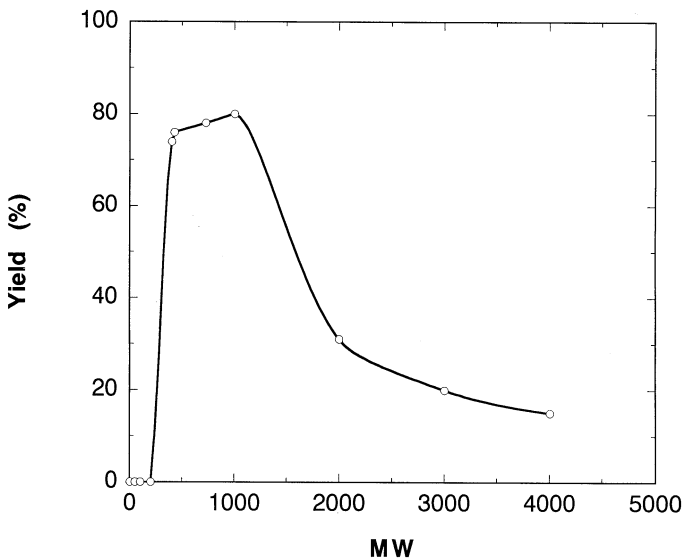


Figure 15.

chains, which carry many sites interacting with them. This view is consistent with the fact that PPG failed to complex with 2,6-di-*O*-methyl- $\beta$ -CD, 2,3,6-tri-*O*-methyl- $\beta$ -CD, and a water-soluble polymer of  $\beta$ -CD, all of which carry no hydroxyl group and hence cannot form hydrogen bonding with PPG.

Molecular model studies confirm the possibility of the PPG chain to penetrate the  $\beta$ -CD cavity, but not the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity owing to the steric hindrance of the methyl groups on the chain. They also indicate that the  $\beta$ -CD cavity can accommodate two propylene glycol units.

$^1\text{H}$  NMR data showed that the methyl peak of PPG is broadened in the presence of  $\beta$ -CD, which suggests an interaction between  $\beta$ -CD and the PPG's methyl group. We also remark that a PEG-PPG-PEG block copolymer complexed with  $\beta$ -CD obeying the 2:1 stoichiometry.

The complexes of  $\beta$ -CD with relatively low molecular weight PPG (400–700), isolated as crystalline compounds, dissolved in a large quantity of water, whereas those with higher molecular weight PPG were only sparingly soluble in water. This behavior is in contrast to that of  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes, which can be dissolved in water by heating even if the molecular weight of the polymer is high. The higher hydrophobicity of PPG compared to PEG is supposed to be responsible for the difference. The complexes of  $\beta$ -CD with PPG were soluble in dimethyl sulfoxide and dimethylformamide, and they were crystalline according to X-ray analysis. Furthermore, their X-ray patterns were similar to that of the complex of  $\beta$ -CD with *p*-nitroacetanilide, which was shown to have a channel-type structure from a single crystal X-ray study.

### 2.3 Complex Formation of $\gamma$ -CD with Poly(methyl vinyl ether) [65]

Poly(methyl vinyl ether) (PMVE), which has the same composition as PPG except for its methoxy side chains, formed no complex with either  $\alpha$ -CD or  $\beta$ -CD, but complexed with  $\gamma$ -CD at three monomer units to one CD. In other words, in this complex, six main chain atoms are included in one  $\gamma$ -CD, differing from the complexation of PEG with  $\alpha$ -CD.

### 2.4 Complex Formation of CDs with Poly(oxytrimethylene) [66, 67]

Harada et al. found that  $\alpha$ -CD interacted with poly(oxytrimethylene) (POx) to give a crystalline complex at a high yield, though it fails to complex with PPG and PMVE. Note that these latter two polymers have the same composition as, but differ from, POx in having the methyl groups in PPG and the methoxy groups in PMVE as the side chains. It is likely that the POx chain is slim enough to penetrate the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity, whereas the PPG and PMVE chains are too thick to do that. Fig. 16, delineating the yields of complexes of POx with  $\alpha$ -CD as a function of polymer molecular weight, reveals a maximum yield to occur at about 1000 in molecular weight. The difference from the already-mentioned behavior of  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes is probably a reflection of a higher hydrophobicity of POx compared to PEG.  $\beta$ -CD was also found to form crystalline inclusion complexes with POx, but not with PEG. The reason for the difference would be not only the more hydrophobic nature of POx compared to PEG but

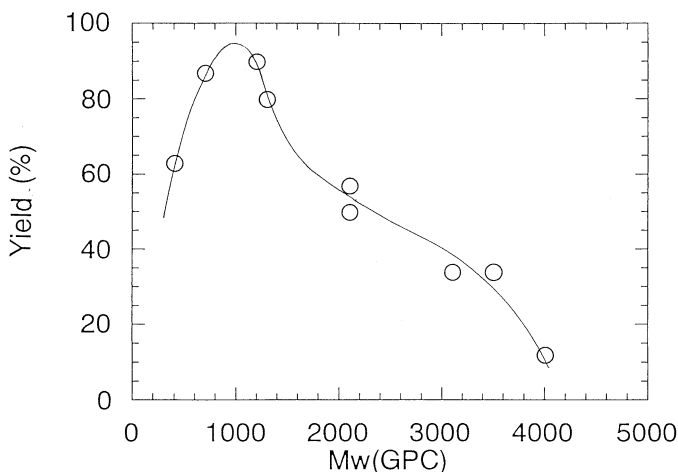


Figure 16.

also the fact that the POx chain can take conformations other than planar zigzag, which allow the chain to accommodate in a wider cavity of  $\beta$ -CD. Another notable feature of Fig. 16 is that the yields of complexation with POx are definitely larger for  $\alpha$ -CD than for  $\beta$ -CD over the entire molecular weight range examined. This implies that the POx chain is more nicely included in the cavity of  $\alpha$ -CD than in that of  $\beta$ -CD.

The inability of  $\gamma$ -CD to complex with POx under the same conditions as for  $\beta$ -CD indicates the failure of POx to meet the prerequisite for inclusion complex formation: that the polymer chain fits well into the CD cavity and is hydrophobic enough to stabilize the complex.

According to conformational energy calculations, the POx chain can assume conformations other than planar zigzag, such as  $T_3G$  and  $T_2G_2$ , and, according X-ray and IR studies, these two conformations are stable. The POx assuming them is thicker than the planar zigzag one, so that it may be included in  $\beta$ -CD as well as  $\alpha$ -CD.

The complex formation of  $\alpha$ -CD with POx was found to obey the same stoichiometry as that for PEG. In fact, the X-ray powder pattern of the complex does not differ from that of the  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complex. Fig. 17(a) illustrates the POx chain in the complex with  $\alpha$ -CD when its conformation is planar zigzag, and Fig. 17(b) sketches the POx chain in the  $\beta$ -CD cavity where it favors the  $T_3G$  conformation thanks to the wider cavity of this CD.

## 2.5 Complex Formation of CDs with Poly(tetrahydrofuran) [68]

CDs were found to form inclusion complexes also with poly(tetrahydrofuran) (PTHF) of different molecular weights. In particular,  $\gamma$ -CD gave the complexes

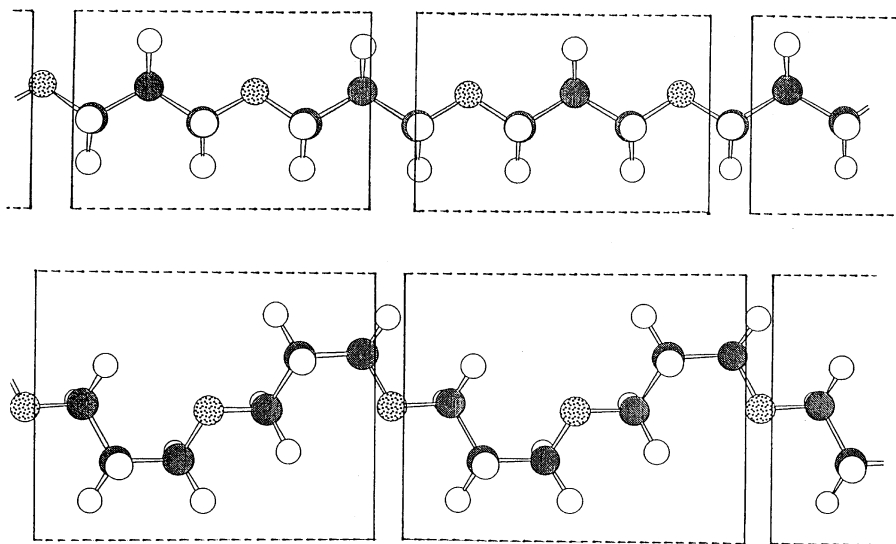


Figure 17.

at high yields. However, it failed to complex with poly(oxytrimethylene), despite the fact that the monomer unit of this polymer differs from that of PTHF only by one methylene group. The yields of complexes of PTHF with  $\alpha$ -CD decreased with increasing polymer molecular weight, but with  $\gamma$ -CD they first increased, reached a maximum at a molecular weight around 1000, and then decreased with increasing polymer molecular weight. The stoichiometric ratio was found to be 1:1.5, and the length of PTHF included in a single  $\alpha$ -CD cavity did not differ from that of PEG in the same CD. Furthermore, X-ray and solid state NMR studies showed the complexes of PTHF with  $\alpha$ - and  $\gamma$ -CD to have the channel-type structure.

According to Steiner et al. [69], who studied the complex of  $\beta$ -CD with 1,4-butanediol, a monomer model of PTHF, the crystal packing in this complex is the cage type and isomorphous to that of the  $\beta$ -CD hydrate, and the methylene chain vibrates in the cavity. However, in the  $\beta$ -CD-PTHF complex, the polymer chain lays fixed inside a column formed by linearly bonded CD molecules. In agreement with this picture, CP/MAS NMR spectra showed the PTHF chain in the complex to be much less flexible than that in its mixture with the CD.

### 3 Complex Formation between CDs and Hydrophobic Polymers [70]

Harada et al. found that hydrophobic polymers, such as oligoethylene and polyisobutylene, also form complexes with CDs, as illustrated in Table 4. Here we observe the following.



**Table 4.** Formation of solid-state complexes between cyclodextrins and hydrophobic polymers/oligomers with various chain sectional area

| Polymer/oligomer | structure   | molecular weight | Yield (%)    |             |              |
|------------------|---|------------------|--------------|-------------|--------------|
|                  |   |                  | $\alpha$ -CD | $\beta$ -CD | $\gamma$ -CD |
| OE (20)          | $-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2-$                                  | 563              | 63           | 0           | 0            |
| squalane         | $-\text{CH}_2\text{CH}(\text{CH}_3)\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2-$ | 423              | 0            | 62          | 24           |
| PIB              | $-\text{CH}_2\text{C}(\text{CH}_3)_2-$                      | 800              | 0            | 8           | 90           |

$\alpha$ -CD gives a crystalline complex at a high yield with oligoethylene (OE), which has the smallest cross-sectional area among the three compounds in the table. Neither  $\beta$  nor  $\gamma$ -CD complexes with OE under the same experimental conditions. However, the former complexes with squalane, which has one methyl side chain per monomer unit, whereas the latter does so with polyisobutylene (PIB), which has a larger cross section than squalane. These results point out the important role that the relative sizes of polymer cross section and the CD cavity play in the complex formation of hydrophobic polymers or oligomers with CDs as well as in the case of hydrophilic polymers.

### 3.1 Complex Formation Between OE and $\alpha$ -CD [71]

When an aqueous mixture of  $\alpha$ -CD and OE was heated to above the melting temperature of OE and then sonicated, it turned turbid and precipitated a crystalline complex which was found to include OE in the CD cavity. The same occurred when dimethylformamide (DMF) replaced water. In Fig. 18, the yields of  $\alpha$ -CD-OE complexes in these two liquids are shown as a function of  $n$ , the polymerization degree of OE, calculated assuming the 3:1 stoichiometry. The yields in water are independent of  $n$  and higher than those in DMF; the latter varies with  $n$  in such a way that the yield becomes detectable at values of  $n$  larger than 6, attains a maximum, and decreases with increasing  $n$ . The declining behavior is due to the lowering in solubility and the enhanced difficulty in diffusing into the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity of higher molecular weight OE chains in DMF. Another point to note is that, in water, no minimum chain length appears for the complexation of OE with  $\alpha$ -CD. This lack of chain length selectivity is in contrast to the complexation of hydrophilic PEG with the same CD. A considerable solubility difference between the complexes of OE and PEG with  $\alpha$ -CD may be responsible for it. Thus, the OE complexes cannot be dissolved in water even with

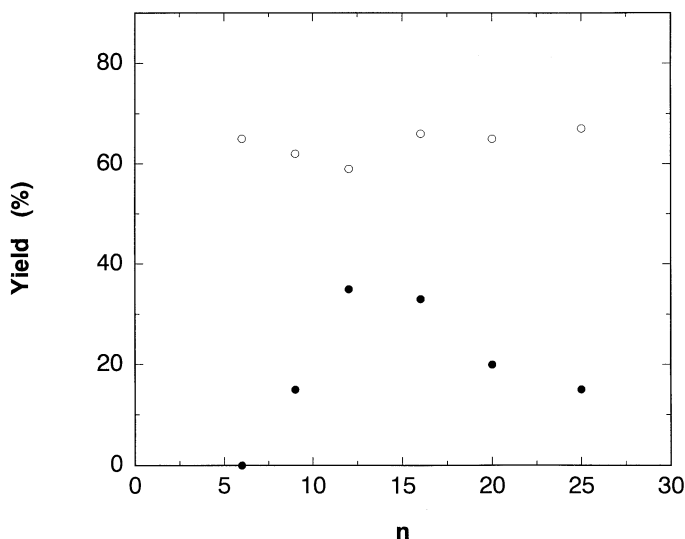


Figure 18.

heating and in most organic solvents except for DMF. In DMF, the solubility is still very low, but, upon heating, it increases to the degree that makes NMR spectra of the complex in DMF  $d_7$  to be measured. The complex dissociated to its components in hot dimethylsulfoxide (DMSO).

In obtaining Fig. 18, it has been assumed that the complexation between  $\alpha$ -CD and OE follows the 3:1 stoichiometry independently of the mixing ratio of the two components. In fact,  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectra of the isolated complexes confirmed this assumption, and furthermore, the complexation of  $\alpha$ -CD with such derivatives of OE(6) (dodecane) as  $\alpha,\omega$ -diaminohexaethylene,  $\alpha,\omega$ -dihydroxyhexaethylene, and  $\alpha,\omega$ -dicarboxyhexaethylene was found to obey the 3:1 stoichiometry.

X-ray studies showed that all the complexes listed in Table 4 are crystalline and displayed the diffraction patterns as predicted from the molecular models, in which the  $\alpha$ -CD cavity is threaded by an OE chain but not by a squalane chain, and also from the experimental finding that  $\alpha$ -CD forms complexes with the former but not with the latter. The fact that neither  $\beta$ -CD nor  $\gamma$ -CD can complex with OE may be ascribed to the thickness of the OE chain that is too thin to interact effectively with the inner surfaces of these CD rings. The  $^{13}\text{C}$  CP/MAS NMR spectra of the  $\alpha$ -CD-OE complexes were similar to those of  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes, exhibiting each carbon atom of glucose as a single peak. Thus, the  $\alpha$ -CD molecules in the complex with OE assume a symmetrical conformation and each glucose unit finds itself in a similar environment.

The solid state  $^{13}\text{C}$  NMR signals of OE in its complexes with  $\alpha$ -CD appeared separately from the spectra of  $\alpha$ -CD-PEG complexes in a higher magnetic field, in which the signals of the two components were overlapped. This

feature allow us to extract more information about the OE chain included in the CD cavity. Figure 19 compares the  $^{13}\text{C}$  NMR spectra for a physical mixture of  $\alpha$ -CD and OE(12) and their complex. Note that this solid-state NMR method gives stronger signals for the carbons in a given sample than  $^{13}\text{C}$  CP/MAS. The spectrum for the physical mixture indicates that the peak intensity for the methyl ends of OE(12) is considerably stronger than that for its ethylene backbone. This can be taken as reflecting that, in the uncomplexed OE(12), the ethylene backbone is confined in a crystal lattice so that it is less mobile, while its methyl end groups have higher mobility. In Fig. 19, we see that each glucose carbon of  $\alpha$ -CD appears as a single peak, as in the CP/NMR spectrum, and the peak intensity for the ethylene backbone is much stronger than that for its methyl ends. This implies that the ethylene backbone of OE(12) gains higher mobility when complexed with  $\alpha$ -CD. The intensity ratios of the peaks for the OE backbone and  $\alpha$ -CD are larger in the PST spectrum than in the CP one. This

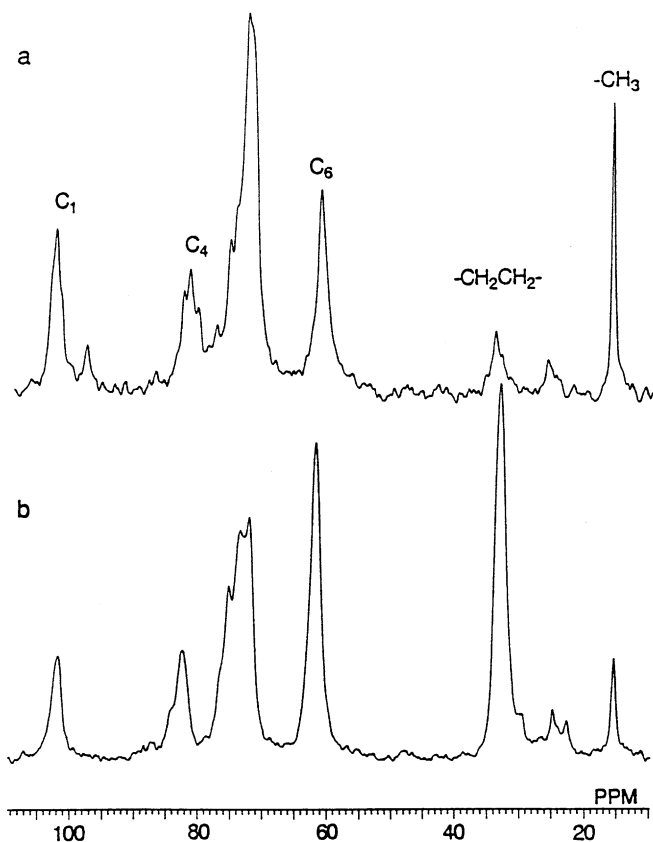


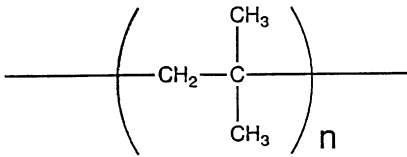
Figure 19.

suggests that, in the complex, the OE backbone is more mobile than  $\alpha$ -CD. All these conclusions are in line with the picture that when complexed with  $\alpha$ -CD, the OE chain is trapped in a tunnel formed by  $\alpha$ -CD rings which arrange themselves in a crystal frame.

Yonemura et al. [72], Saito et al. [73], and Watanabe et al. [74] reported complex formation of  $\alpha$ -CD with some charged derivatives of oligomethylene, but observed only the formation of one-to-one complexes in aqueous solutions, not of any crystalline one.

### 3.2 Complex Formation of Polyisobutylene with CDs [75]

When polyisobutylene (PIB) was added to an aqueous solution of either  $\gamma$ -CD or  $\beta$ -CD and then sonicated at room temperature, the mixture became turbid and precipitated a crystalline complex. Figure 20 shows how the complexation



**Polyisobutylene(PIB)**

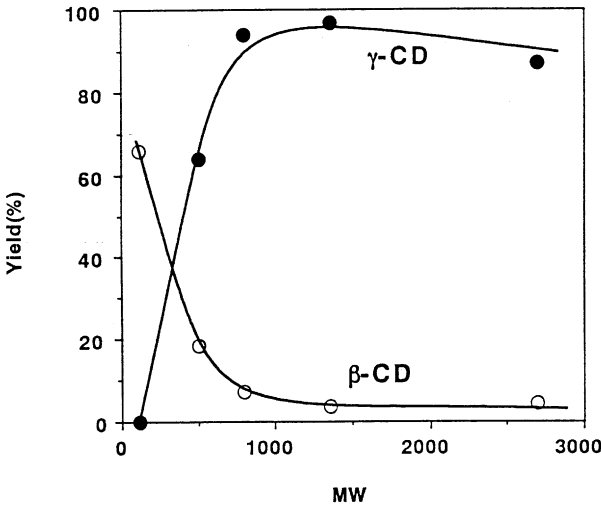


Figure 20.

of PIB with these CDs depends on the PIB molecular weight. Interestingly, the dependence is entirely different for the two CDs. The complexation with  $\gamma$ -CD does not occur for the monomer or the dimer and becomes almost quantitative at molecular weights exceeding 1000. On the other hand, the complexation with  $\beta$ -CD shows no such chain length selectivity. The  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectra as well as the yield data showed that the complex formation of PIB with  $\gamma$ -CD obeys the 3:1 stoichiometry, i.e., three isobutylene units are included in one  $\gamma$ -CD, in conformity with the geometry that the length of the former is nearly equal to the depth of the latter's cavity

The crystalline complex of PIB with either  $\beta$  or  $\gamma$ -CD was insoluble even in boiling water, but it was solubilized when urea was added to the suspension and heated. This fact demonstrates the important role played by hydrogen bonding played in stabilizing the complex. The X-ray diffraction pattern for the complex of PIB with  $\gamma$ -CD was entirely different from that for uncomplexed  $\gamma$ -CD and suggested an extended column structure.

Molecular models indicate that the PIB chain is able to penetrate the  $\gamma$ -CD cavity, but not the  $\alpha$ -CD one, owing to the steric hindrance of the dimethyl groups on the main chain. This indication is again in agreement with the experimental observation that PIB forms a complex with  $\gamma$ -CD but not with  $\alpha$ -CD. Another feature of the models is that a single  $\gamma$ -CD cavity can accommodate three isobutylene units, supporting what was mentioned above.

## 4 Rotaxanes and Catenanes

In recent years, with increasing recognition of the roles played by specific noncovalent interactions in biological systems and chemical processes, the science of noncovalent assemblies—often called supramolecular science—has aroused considerable interest [76]. The remaining part of this article reviews some important studies made on rotaxane and catenane, two classic types of supramolecular structure.

Rotaxanes are the compounds consisting of noncovalent entities called “rotor” and “axle” [77]. Figure 21 illustrates them schematically. Initially, attempts were made to prepare them by statistical methods, so that the yields were necessarily very low [78–80]. Recently, methods have been proposed for their more efficient synthesis, with renewed interest in their unique structure and properties. Section 4.1 summarizes some of the typical results obtained.

Catenanes are another example of noncovalent assemblies, consisting of two or more ring molecules interlocked together (see Fig. 21). They offer chemists an equally intriguing object of research. In Sect. 4.2, some recent attempts to synthesize them are reviewed.

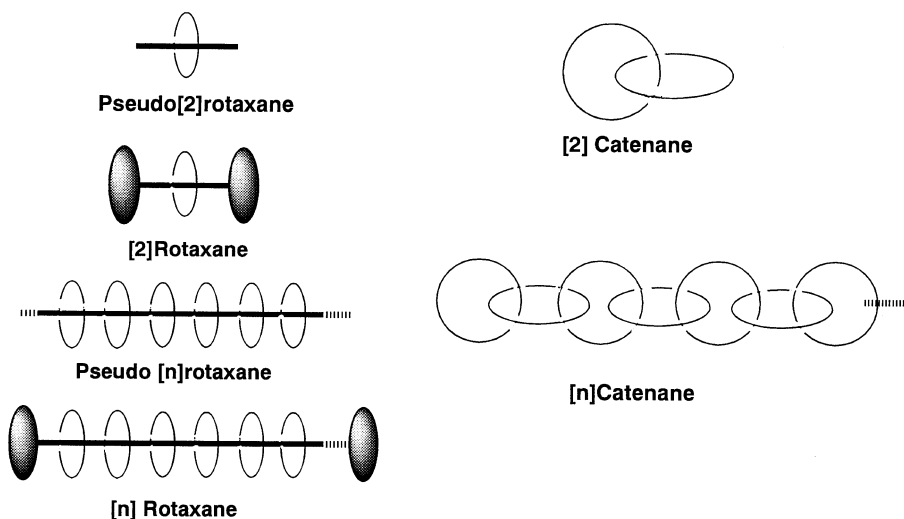


Figure 21.

## 4.1 Rotaxanes

### 4.1.1 Preparation of Rotaxanes

If in a rotaxane consisting of rings and a chain molecule the ends of the latter are not blocked by bulky substituents, the rings can slip off the chain. In this case, the rotaxane is called pseudo-rotaxane. The rotaxane containing a single ring is referred to as [2]rotaxane, and that containing  $n - 1$  rings ( $n - 1$ ) as [n]rotaxane. When  $n$  is arbitrarily large, the rotaxane is named polyrotaxane. The rings in rotaxanes are conventionally called “beads”. We often use this naming in the following description.

In principle, a rotaxane can be obtained by end-capping an axle containing one or more rings with large substituents in ordered environments of non-covalent templating forces, in such a way that the order originally created by weak interactions is retained [81]. Thus, Allwood et al. [82] and Ashton et al. [83] prepared a pseudo-rotaxane shown in Fig. 22 by utilizing the fact that bis-*p*-phenylene-34-crown-10 forms a one-to-one complex with paraquat and 4,4'-bipyridinium dication derivatives in which the bipyridine nitrogen atoms are substituted by 2-hydroxyethyl and 2-(2-hydroxyethoxy) ethyl groups. Recently, Ashton et al. [84, 85] succeeded in obtaining a [2]rotaxane, shown in Fig. 23, by slippage reactions which allow a crown bead to change into a dumb-bell that consists of an axle molecule with large stoppers at its ends. The group of Stoddart and coworkers [86–88] found inclusion complex formation of cyclobis(paraquat-*p*-phenylene) with dimethoxybenzene and dimethoxynaphthalene. Figure 24 shows the pseudo-rotaxane they obtained, in which

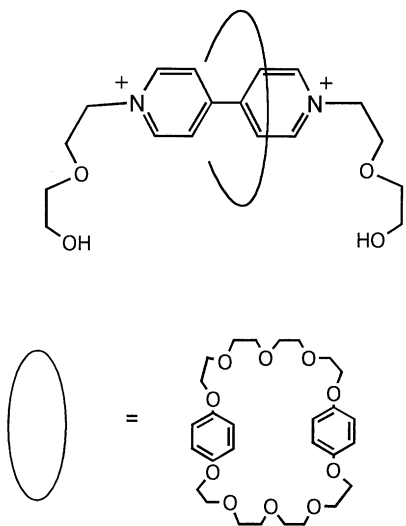


Figure 22.

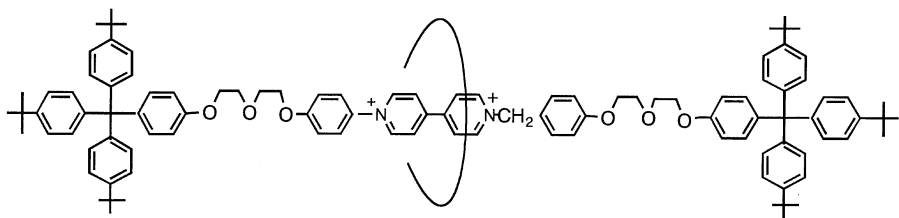


Figure 23.

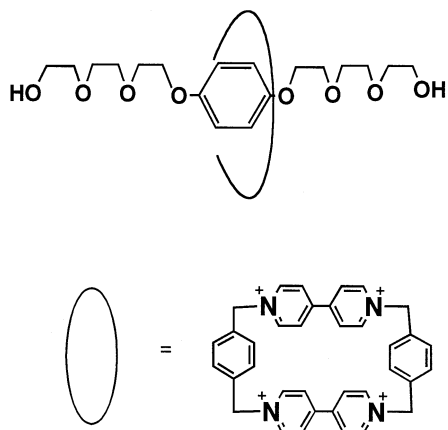


Figure 24.

cyclobis(paraquat-*p*-phenylene) is threaded by a hydroquinone derivative flanked by polyether chains [89]. The same group [81] substituted the chain ends with bulky groups such as triisopropyl silyl to obtain [2]rotaxanes. Ashton et al. [90, 91] prepared a pseudo-rotaxane containing two cyclobis(paraquat-*p*-phenylene)

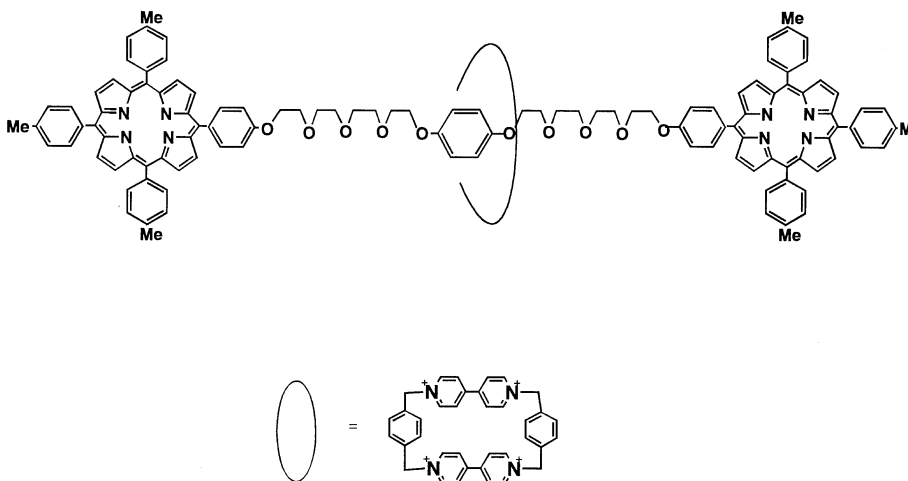


Figure 25.

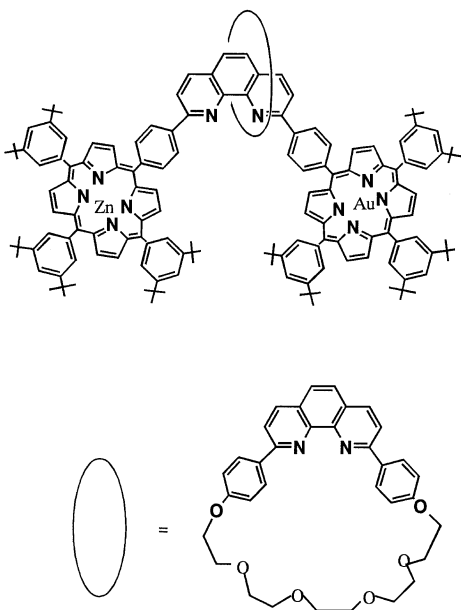


Figure 26.



beads threaded by a long polyether chain and converted it to a [2]rotaxane by using porphyrins as stoppers (Fig. 25). Finally, Fig. 26 shows the rotaxane obtained by Sauvage et al. [92], who used a copper(I)-based template technique. It contains two rigidly held porphyrins as stoppers.

#### 4.1.2 Molecular Shuttles

Figure 27 illustrates a rotaxane of Stoddart et al. [93], in which the axle contains two “stations” interacting with the cyclobis(paraquat-*p*-phenylene) bead. Its  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectrum at room temperature indicated that the bead moves back and forth like a shuttle between the stations about 1800 times a second. Stoddart et al. [94, 95] prepared a [2]rotaxane containing two bipyridinium units and a crown, as shown in Fig. 28. The shuttling speed of the bead estimated by

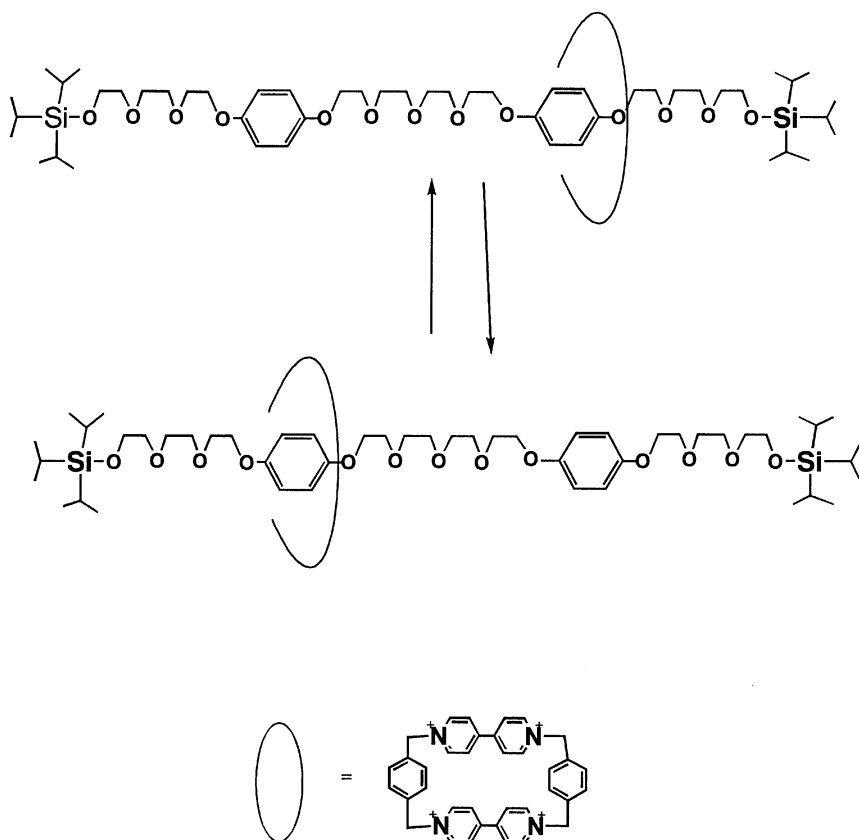


Figure 27.

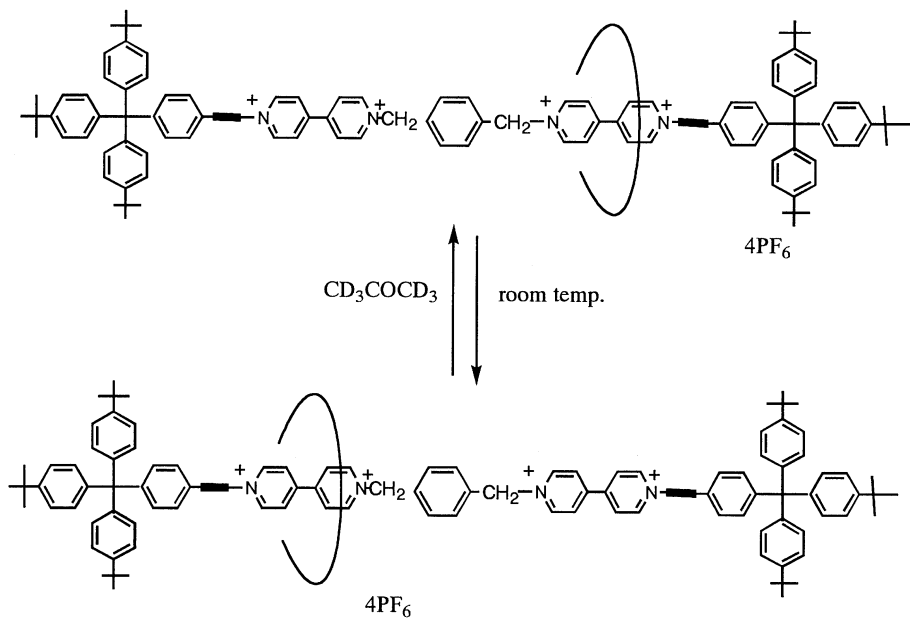


Figure 28.

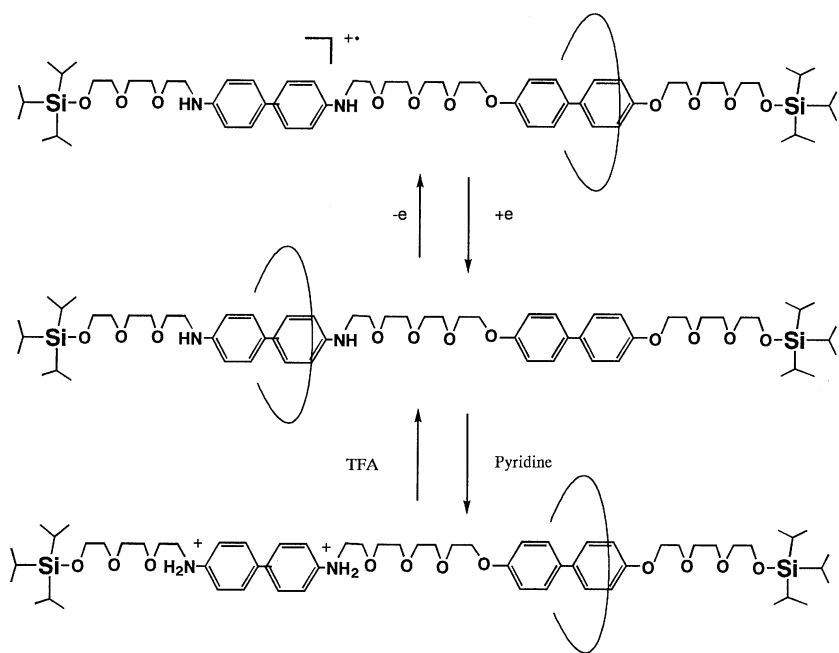


Figure 29.

$^1\text{H}$  NMR was as fast as 300 000 times a second. It is interesting if the shuttling speed can be controlled by light or an electrochemical method [96]. Bissell et al. [97] obtained the molecular shuttle shown in Fig. 29, in which benzidine and bisphenol units act as the stations. At 229 K the tetracationic bead was found to stay on the benzidine side at a probability of 86%, but when the compound was treated with an acid or oxidized electrochemically it turned out that the bead can move to the bisphenol side at a higher probability.

#### 4.1.3 [2]Rotaxanes Containing Cyclodextrins

[2]Rotaxanes containing cyclodextrins and their derivatives as beads have been reported [98]. Some examples are as follows. Figure 30 shows the one prepared by Ogino [99] and by Ogino and Ohata [100], who used a cobalt complex for the stoppers. The [2]rotaxanes prepared by the group of Lawrence and coworkers contained biphenyl or porphyrin as the axle and dimethyl  $\beta$ -CD as the bead (Fig. 31) [101–103]. Figure 32 shows a pair of asymmetric [2]rotaxanes reported by Isnin and Kaifer [104], who used ferrocene and naphthalene sulfonate as stoppers. Wiley and Macartney [105] obtained symmetric [2]rotaxanes with pentacyanoiron complexes as stoppers and  $\alpha$ -CD as a bead. Figure 33 illustrates one of them; more are shown in Figs. 34 and 35. The hydrophobic [2]rotaxane in Fig. 34, due to Wenz et al. [106], contains

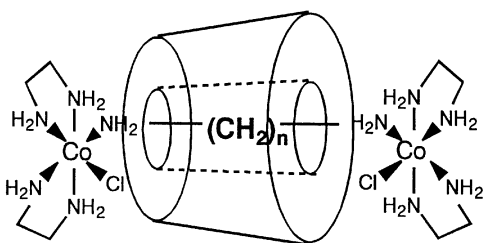


Figure 30.

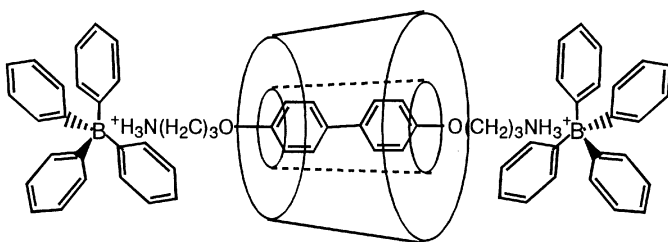


Figure 31.

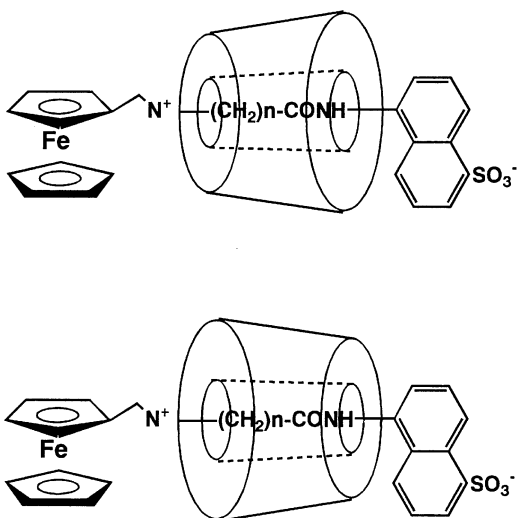


Figure 32.

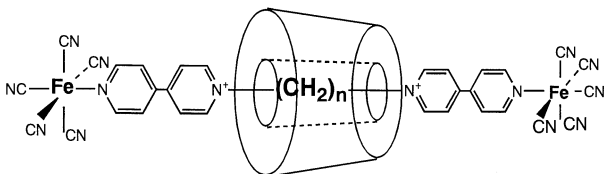


Figure 33.

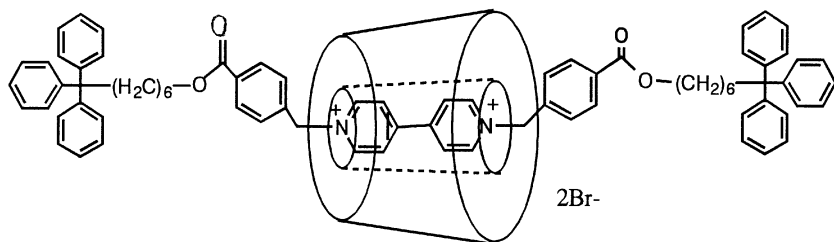


Figure 34.

bipyridinium in the axle, and the [2]rotaxane in Fig. 35, prepared by Nakashima et al. [107], consists of  $\beta$ -CD threaded by 4,4'-diaminostilbene. Finally, Fig. 36 shows a non-ionic [2]rotaxane, first obtained by Harada et al. [108], with a CD derivative as a bead and trinitrobenzene derivatives as stoppers.

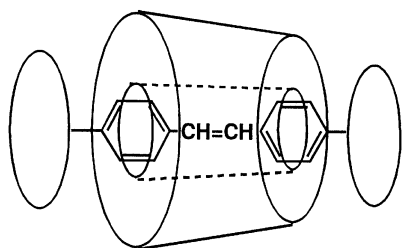


Figure 35.

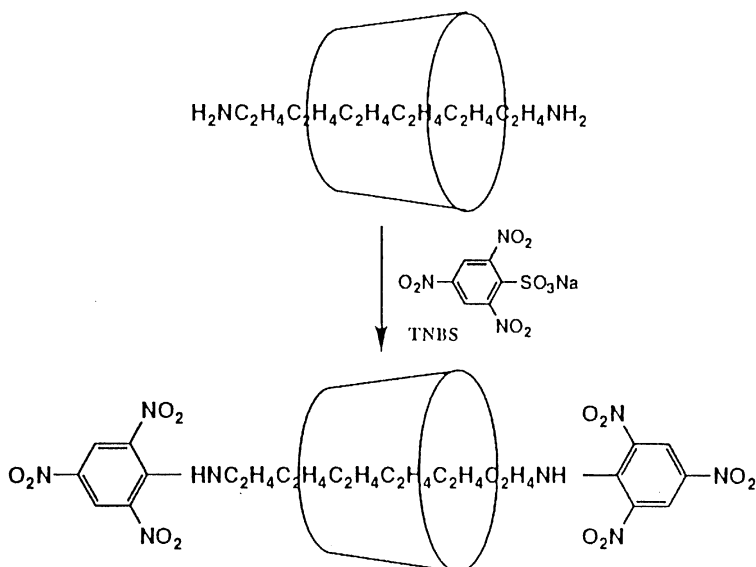


Figure 36.

#### 4.1.4 Polyrotaxanes Consisting of Crown Ethers and Polymers

Gibson et al. [109] and Sjen et al. [110] reported pseudo-polyrotaxanes and polyrotaxanes consisting of crown ethers with various polymers. The resulting polyrotaxanes were nonstoichiometric. Their properties – including solubility and glass transition temperatures – were different from those of the starting polymers.

## 4.2 Catenanes

### 4.2.1 Preparation of Catenanes

As mentioned above, catenanes consist of two or more chemically nonbonded ring molecules interlocked with one another. A catenane consisting of  $n$  rings is referred to as  $[n]$ catenane.

Initial attempts to prepare catenanes aimed to thread a linear molecule (axle) through a ring molecule (ring) and “clip” the former to a ring. However, since this method is basically statistical, the yields of product were very small (actually less than 0.001%) [111]. It should be noted that the condensed state is preferred for threading, while dilute solutions are preferred for clipping in order to avoid oligomer/polymer formation. Recently, it was found that the difficulty can be overcome by taking advantage of specific weak intermolecular interactions between the precursors (i.e. the ring and the axle), and many catenanes have been successfully produced at high yields. Typical examples are as follows.

Stoddart and coworkers [112–115] cyclized bis(bipyridyl)s in the presence of crown ethers to obtain a [2]catenane at a yield of 70%. It is illustrated in Fig. 37. The high yield can be attributed to the  $\pi$ -donor-acceptor interaction between the ring and the axle. It was shown that one of the two intercrossed rings moves around the other. The group of Stoddart [116–118] reported [3–5] catenanes (see Fig. 38 for [3]catenane). The [5]catenane of Stoddart et al. [118] was named “olympiadane”, because it resembles the symbol logo of International Olympic Games, as seen in Fig. 39.

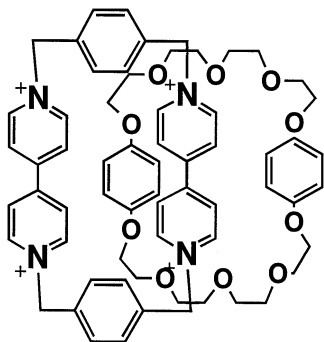


Figure 37.

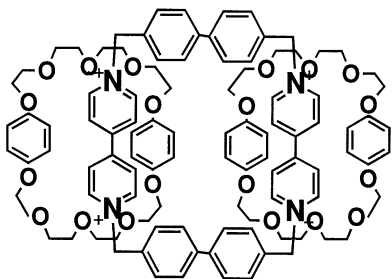


Figure 38.

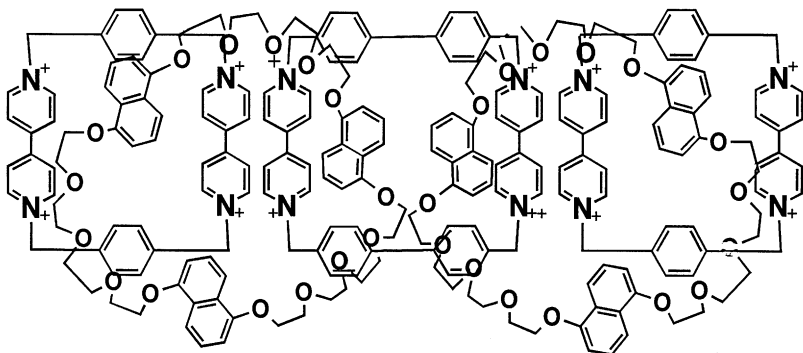


Figure 39.

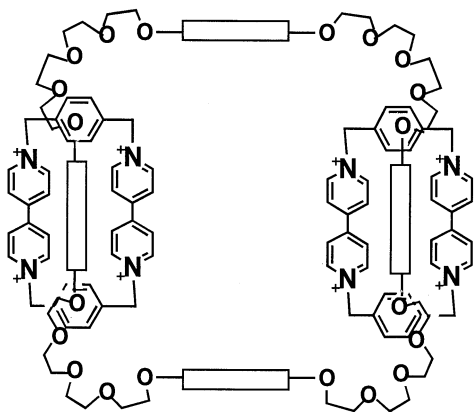


Figure 40.

#### 4.2.2 Molecular train

For a [2]catenane containing a smaller bipyridinium ring in a bigger ring made of four hydroquinones in acetonitrile at 80 °C it was shown [119] that the former moves around the latter  $14 \times 10^3$  times a second and self-revolves  $9 \times 10^6$  times a second. In the [3]catenane shown in Fig. 40, where one more bipyridinium ring is incorporated, the two smaller rings were found to move around without collision  $10 \times 10^3$  times a second as though they were trains as a molecular scale [119].

#### 4.2.3 Catenanes Containing Metal Complexes [120]

The group of Sauvage et al. [121] produced various [2]catenanes by using transition metal complexes as templates. Figure 41 illustrates one of their

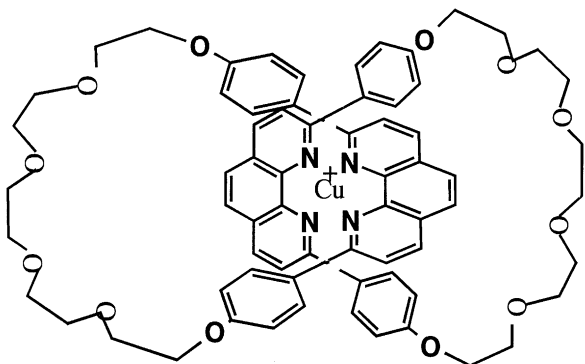


Figure 41.

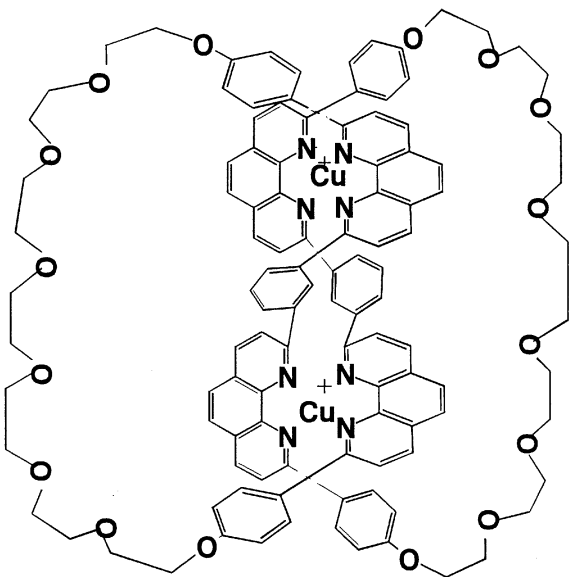


Figure 42.

products. The same group [122] obtained even a trefoil in which a ring is entangled itself (Fig. 42). The use of metal complexes was also made by Bitsch et al. [123] to obtain multi-ring catenanes, and Fujita et al. [124] produced a [2]catenane containing a cyclic Pd complex by a clipping method.

#### 4.2.4 Catenanes Containing Cyclodextrin

Long ago Luttringshous et al. [125] tried to obtain a [2]catenane by clipping a dithiol thread penetrating a CD ring (see Fig. 43) by means of oxidation, but



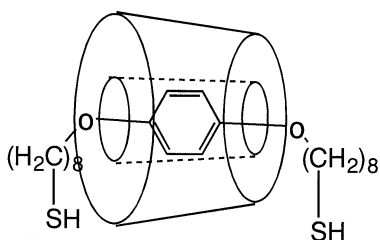


Figure 43.

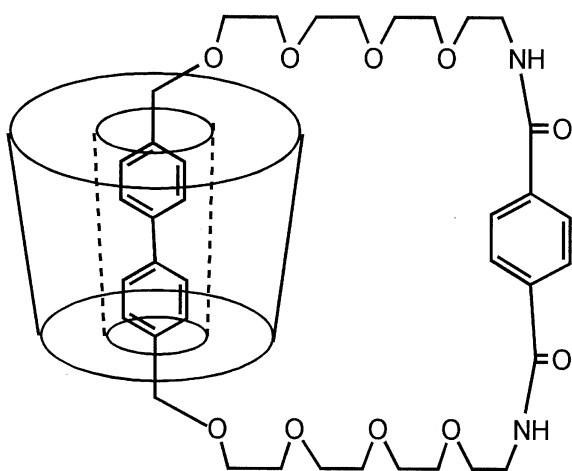


Figure 44.

they were unsuccessful. Recently, Stoddart et al. [126] successfully clipped a biphenyl derivative passing through a  $\beta$ -CD cavity to obtain the [2]catenane shown in Fig. 44. Harada et al. [127] obtained [2]catenanes by cyclizing a methylene chain penetrating  $\beta$ -CD with oligoethylene glycol derivatives. Figure 44 illustrates their product.

#### 4.2.5 Other Catenanes

Vogtle et al. [128] obtained [2]catenanes containing cyclic lactams at high yields, and also one containing an azobenzene moiety, with the finding that the movement of the ring can be controlled by light [129]. Catenanes consisting of bipyridium cyclophanes and porphyrins have been reported by Gunter and Johnston [130].



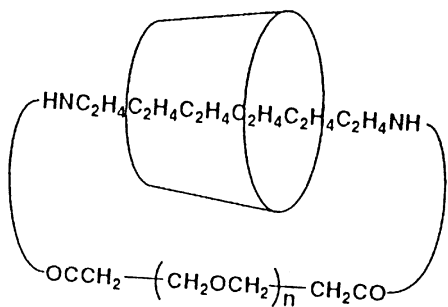


Figure 45.

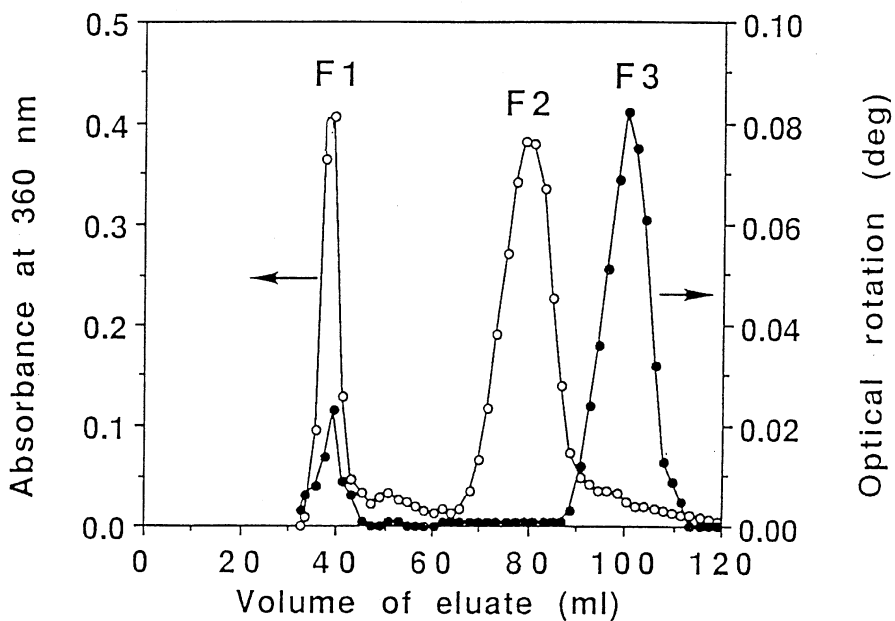
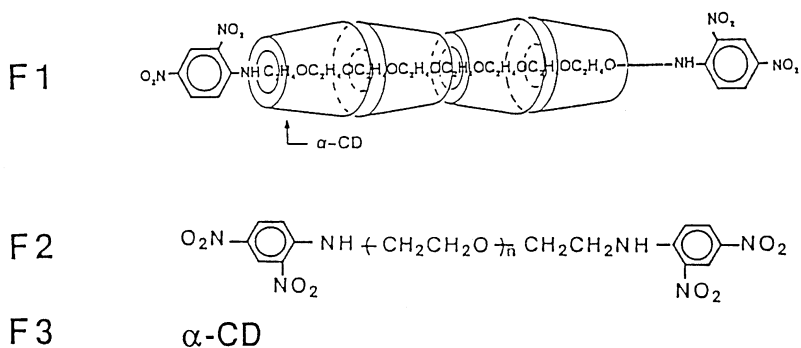


Figure 46.

The polyrotaxane fraction was insoluble in water and DMF, but soluble in DMSO and 0.1 N NaOH. Its <sup>1</sup>H NMR spectrum- shown in Fig. 47, together with those for the second and third fraction- indicates that the polyrotaxane consists of CD, PEG-BA, and dinitrophenyl groups and that all peaks are broadened by complexation, which implies that α-CD rings become less mobile when including PEG. 2D NOESY NMR spectra showed that the H-3 and H-5

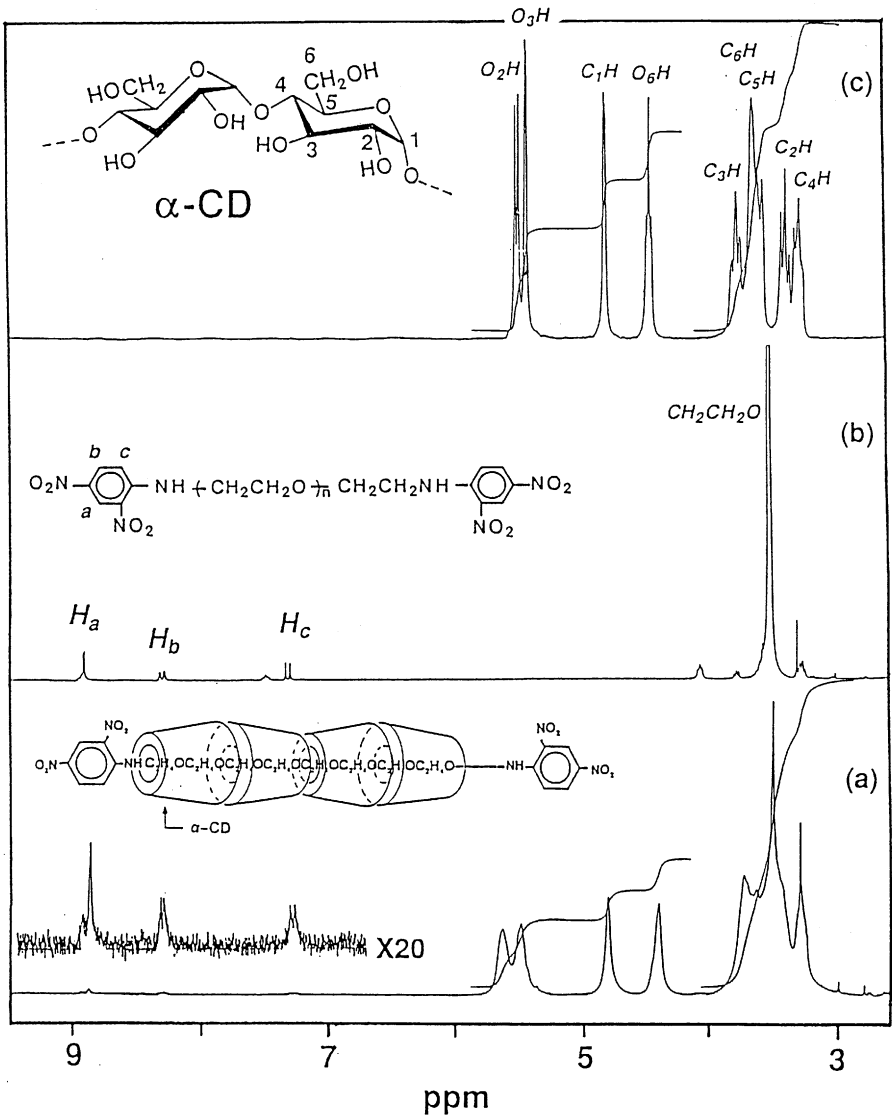


Figure 47.

**Table 5.** Polyrotaxanes prepared from PEG-BA with various molecular weights

| Polyrotaxane          | Molecular weight <sup>b</sup> | Number of ethylene glycol units (included non-included) | Number of threaded $\alpha$ -CD <sup>b</sup> | Molar ratio of ethylene glycol units to $\alpha$ -CD |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------|---|--|--|
| MN-1450               | 16500                         | 33 (33 0)   | 15   | 2.2  |
| MN-2000               | 20000                         | 45 (36 9)   | 18   | 2.5  |
| MN*-2001 <sup>a</sup> | 19000                         | 45 (34 11)  | 17   | 2.6  |
| MN-3350               | 23500                         | 77 (40 37)  | 20   | 3.9  |
| MN-8500               | 44000                         | 193 (72 121)  | 36   | 5.4  |
| MN-20000              | 89000                         | 454 (140 314)   | 70   | 6.5  |

<sup>a</sup> Prepared from Jeffamine ED-2001.

<sup>b</sup> Calcd. from UV-vis spectra, optical rotation, and <sup>1</sup>H NMR spectra.

protons of  $\alpha$ -CD, which point to the CD cavity, can be correlated with the CH<sub>2</sub> of PEG, but the H-1, H-2, and H-4 protons of  $\alpha$ -CD, which are located outside the CD cavity, do not. All these observations convinced Harada et al. that a polyrotaxane consisting of many  $\alpha$ -CD rings threaded by a PEG chain was successfully obtained. The question is how many rings were trapped by a single chain.

Table 5 shows some characteristics of the polyrotaxanes prepared using PEG-BA of different molecular weights. As expected, the number of trapped CD rings increases as the PEG chain gets longer. The molar ratio of ethylene glycol units to  $\alpha$ -CD is scattered around 2.4 for the three lowest molecular weights. This value is close to the stoichiometric ratio 2 – as was established earlier for the complex formation between PEG and  $\alpha$ -CD –, so that, in these polyrotaxane samples, the rings cover essentially the entire length of the PEG chain. However, the molar ratios for the higher molecular weight samples are significantly larger than 2, indicating that the rings cover only part of the polymer chain, actually less than one half. Finally, the scanning tunnel micrographic image of a polyrotaxane, as presented in Fig. 49, makes it visible that several CDs are arranged along a polymer chain.

## 5.2 Polyrotaxane Containing Monodisperse Oligo (ethylene glycol) [133]

The PEG-BA samples used in the experiments mentioned above were polydisperse, so that the products were highly polydisperse and heterogeneous. To elucidate whether this fact was responsible for the change in the number of trapped CD rings with the PEG chain length, Harada et al. carried out an experiment using a monodisperse 28 mer PEG (MW = 1248), chosen because previous experience had shown that PEGs ranging between 1000 and 1500 in molecular weight most effectively complexed with  $\alpha$ -CD.

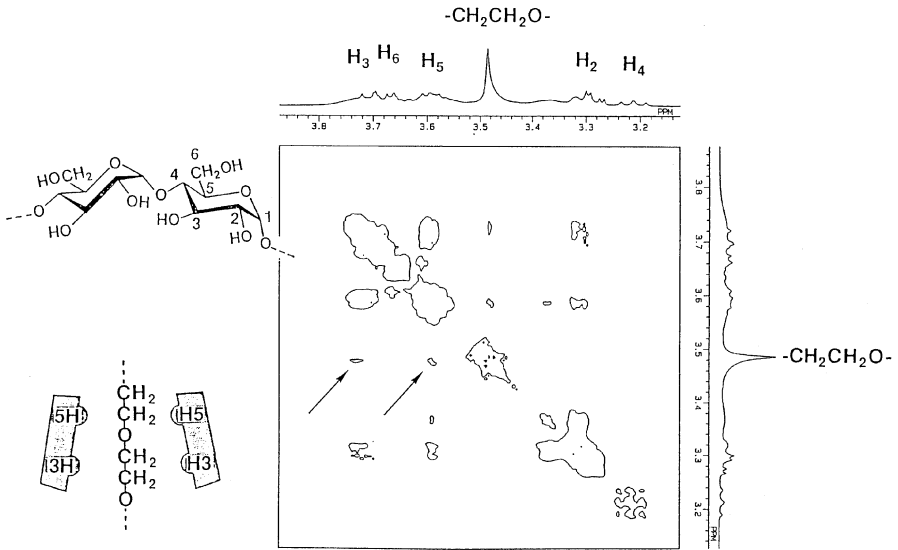


Figure 48.

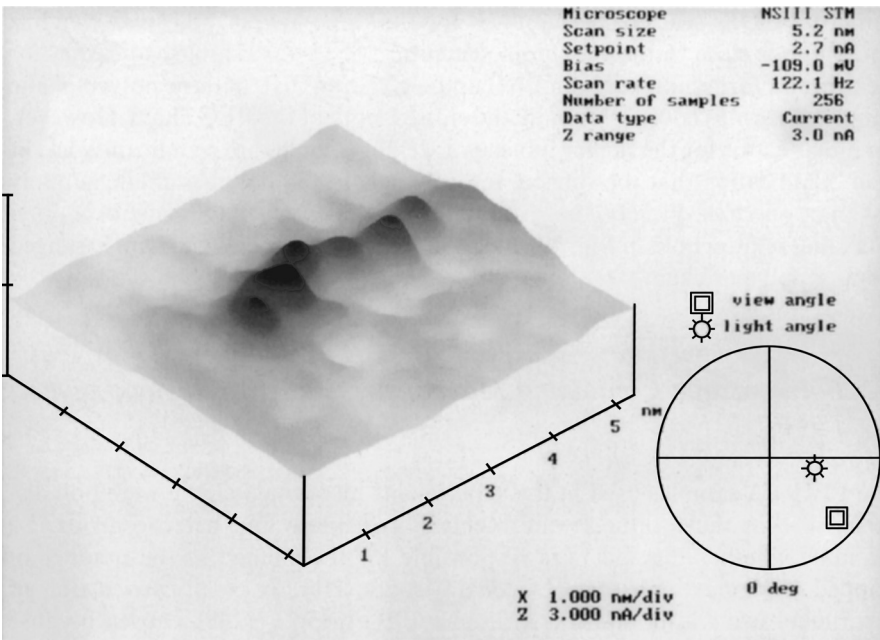


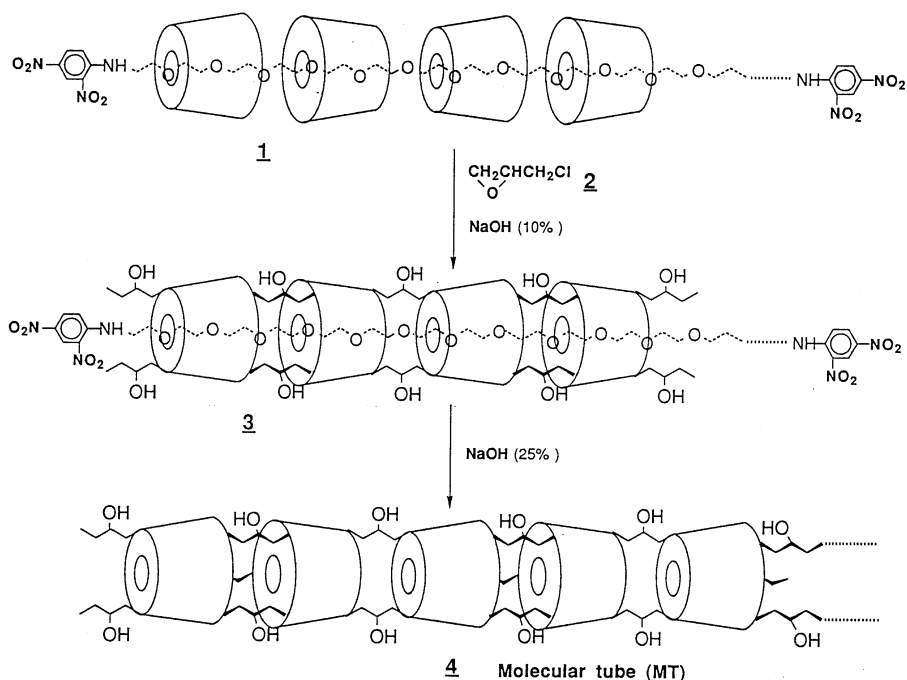
Figure 49.

The  $^{13}\text{C}$  NMR spectrum of the polyrotaxane so obtained showed the peak for either C-4 or C-6 of CDs to appear as a doublet consisting of a broad peak in high magnetic field and a narrow peak in a lower field. Harada et al. assigned these broad and narrow peaks to the carbons of the CDs trapped by the polymer chain and those located at the chain ends, respectively, since the latter CDs should be more mobile than the former because they are free from hydrogen bonding, though they may receive some effect from the dinitrophenyl end groups.

These end groups were removed by cleaving the C–N bond with a strong base (25% NaOH) so that the CD rings may slip off the polymer chains, and the number of CDs per polyrotaxane was estimated by  $^1\text{H}$  NMR, optical rotation, and UV absorption to be 12. This figure indicates that nearly the entire length of the 28 mer PEG chain was covered with CDs, because, as repeatedly noted above, the stoichiometric ratio for the complexation between PEG and  $\alpha$ -CD is 2.

## 6 Molecular Tube [134–136]

Harada and coworkers proceeded further to obtain a tubular polymer from a PEG- $\alpha$ -CD polyrotaxane by using Scheme 2. The polyrotaxane was prepared



Scheme 2.

this time using a monodisperse PEG of 1450 molecular weight. From the above finding we may expect that when complexed with  $\alpha$ -CD its length is almost entirely covered with CD rings.

First, the polyrotaxane was dissolved in 10% aqueous NaOH, and then epichlorohydrin was added to the suspension in order to bridge the CDs. After stirring for 36 hours at room temperature the reaction mixture was neutralized with HCl, and a yellow solid was precipitated from ethanol. The solid was dissolved in 25% aqueous NaOH with heating to remove the bulky dinitrophenyl(DNP) chain ends, and after cooling, the mixture was neutralized with HCl. Figure 50 shows the elution diagrams, measured by optical rotation (solid lines) and UV absorbance at 360 nm (dashed lines), for the following three mixtures: (a) a mixture of the unbridged polyrotaxane (molecular necklace) and 25% aqueous NaOH; (b) the neutral solution of the bridged polyrotaxane before treatment with 25% aqueous NaOH; (c) the reaction mixture of the bridged polyrotaxane with 25% aqueous NaOH.

In Fig. 50a, two peaks appear at the elution volumes expected for  $\alpha$ -CD and DNP molecules, indicating that, with the strong base (25% NaOH), the DNP end groups were removed and the CD rings slipped off the polymer chain into the bulk solvent. Note that the resulting bare polymer chain is not observable by the methods used. The single peak in Fig. 50b can be identified with certainty as corresponding to the bridged CDs locking the polymer chain within them. The left peak in Fig. 50c is located at the same position as the peak in Fig. 50b, so that it may be assigned to an entity which has the same hydrodynamic volume as the bridged polyrotaxane. However, this entity should be devoid of a polymer chain, because the right peak located at the position of DNP indicates that the strong base has allowed the chain to slip out of the bridged polyrotaxane. Consequently, it may be visualized as a molecular tube or tubular polymer made of CD rings covalently bonded linearly. Its molecular weight (20 000) estimated by GPC on Sephadex G-100 with dextran as the standard is close to the value (about 17 000) calculated for a bridged CD which covers the entire length of the starting polymer chain.

The molecular tube was soluble in water, DMF, and DMSO, though the unbridged polyrotaxane was insoluble in the first two. Its  $^1\text{H}$  NMR spectra in  $\text{D}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{DMSO-d}_6$  and its  $^{13}\text{C}$  NMR showed the presence of both bridged and unbridged CDs. The  $^1\text{H}$  NMR peak was broader for the bridged CD than for the unbridged one, and this was an additional indication that the tube is polymeric.

When an aqueous solution of the tube was added to an aqueous  $\text{KI-I}_2$  solution, its color at once changed from pale yellow to deep yellow, whereas this did not occur with an aqueous solution of  $\alpha$ -CD. When  $\alpha$ -CD was added, the position of the absorbance maximum for the  $\text{KI-I}_2$  solution of the tube underwent little change but the maximum height increased to some degree. On the other hand, when the molecular tube was added, the absorbance maximum for the  $\text{KI-I}_2$  solution of  $\alpha$ -CD shifted to longer wavelengths and the spectrum revealed an extended tail over 500 nm. No change took place when  $\alpha$ -CD, randomly bridged with epichlorohydrin was added in place of the molecular



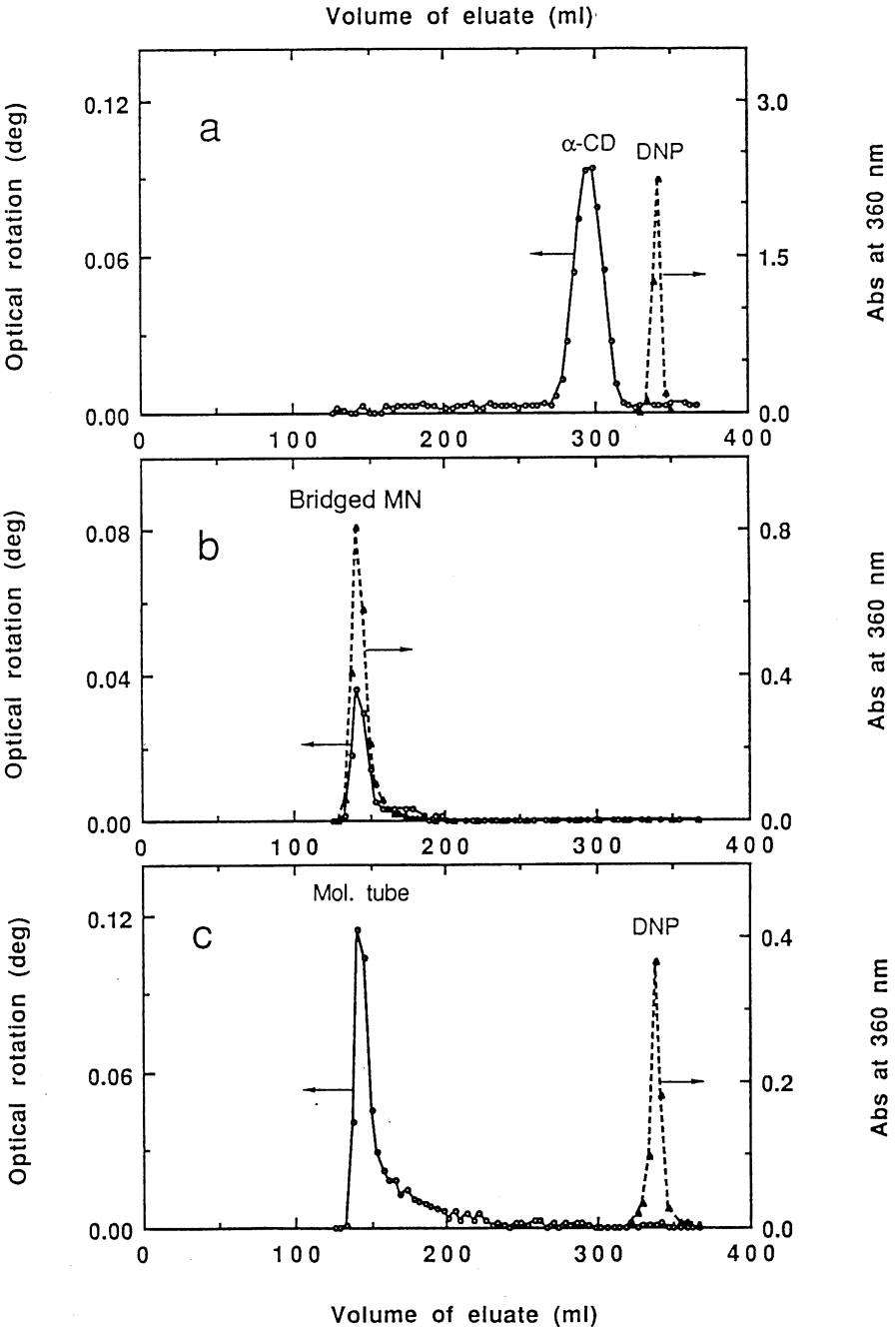


Figure 50.

tube. It follows from these observations that the  $I^{3-}$  ions are included linearly in the tube. The shift of the absorbance maximum was not as large as in the case of amylose and iodide, but similar to the case of amylopectin and polyiodide. Moreover, it was found that the spectrum underwent a maximum change when the molar ratio of CD to  $I^{3-}$  was 1 : 1.

## 7 Conclusions

We have shown that cyclodextrins form stoichiometric inclusion complexes not only with low molecular weight compounds but also with both hydrophilic and hydrophobic polymers at high yields. Their selectivity to polymers is much more sensitive than that to low molecular weight compounds. This is attributable to the many recognition sites present in guest polymer molecules. It is worth recalling here that living systems are composed of many kinds of macromolecules. The polyrotaxanes prepared with  $\alpha$ -cyclodextrin and poly(ethylene glycol) by Harada et al. are the first example of macromolecules containing many rings threaded by a polymer chain. They converted it to a molecular tube by bridging cyclodextrin rings and then removing the stoppers at the chain ends. Such tubes may find potential uses for ion channels, catalysts, capsules, and separation devices. Reactions in ordered assemblies give highly ordered structures, thus providing ways of approaching supramolecular architectures and functions [137–142].

*Acknowledgements.* The author expresses his gratitude to Professor H. Fujita who offered him the opportunity of writing this article and corrected the manuscript for language and logical presentation, and also to Professor M. Kamachi who continues to give him guidance and encouragement.

## 8 References

1. Harada A (1994) Stereochemistry of Organometallic and Inorganic Compounds, Vol 5, Chains, Clusters, Inclusion Compounds, Paramagnetic Labels, and Organic Rings. Zanello P (ed), Elsevier, Amsterdam, p 409
2. Pedersen CJ (1967) J Am Chem Soc 89: 2495
3. Lehn J-M (1988) Angew Chem Int Ed Engl 27: 89
4. Cram DJ (1992) Nature 356: 29
5. Shinkai S (1993) Tetrahedron 49: 8933
6. Harada A (1994) Yukagaku 43: 839
7. Bender ML, Komiyama M (1978) Cyclodextrin chemistry. Springer-Verlag, Berlin
8. Szejtli J (1982) Cyclodextrins and Their Inclusion Complexes, Akademiai Kiado, Budapest
9. Saenger W (1976) Jerusalem Symp Quantum Chem Biochem (ed) Pullman EB, Reidel Co., Dordrecht
10. Harada A, Takahashi S (1984) J Chem Soc, Chem Commun 645
11. Harada A, Takahashi S (1984) J Inclusion Phenom 2: 791

12. Harada A, Hu Y, Yamamoto S, Takahashi S (1988) *J Chem Soc, Dalton Trans* 729
13. Odagaki Y, Hirotsu K, Higuchi T, Harada A, Takahashi S (1990) *J Chem Soc, Perkin Trans* 1230
14. Shimada M, Harada A, Takahashi S (1991) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 263
15. Harada A, Saeki K, Takahashi S (1987) *J Inclusion Phenom* 5: 601
16. Harada A, Saeki K, Takahashi S (1988) *Carbohydr. Res* 192: 1
17. Harada A, Takahashi S (1984) *Chem Lett* 2089
18. Harada A, Saeki K, Takahashi S (1985) *Chem Lett* 1157
19. Harada A, Takahashi S (1989) *Organometallics* 8: 730
20. Harada A, Takeuchi M, Takahashi S (1986) *Chem Lett* 1893
21. Harada A, Takeuchi M, Takahashi S (1986) *Bull Chem Soc Jpn* 61: 4367
22. Harada A, Takahashi S (1986) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1229
23. Harada A, Yamamoto S, Takahashi S (1989) *Organometallics* 8: 2560
24. Harada A, Takahashi S (1989) *J Macromol Sci, Chem* A26: 373
25. Harada A, Hu Y, Takahashi S (1986) *Chem Lett* 2083
26. Hu Y, Uno M, Harada A, Takahashi S (1990) *Chem Lett* 797
27. Hu Y, Uno M, Harada A, Takahashi S (1991) *Bull Chem Soc Jpn* 64: 1884
28. Hu Y, Harada A, Takahashi S (1990) *J Mol Cat* 60: L13
29. Hu Y, Harada A, Takahashi S (1990) *Synt Commun* 8: 1607
30. Harada A, Takahashi S (1988) *J Chem Soc, Chem Commun* 1352
31. Harada A, Shimada M, Takahashi S (1989) *Chem Lett* 275
32. Klingert B, Rihs (1990) *Organometallics* 9: 1135
33. Alston DR, Slawin AMZ, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1985) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 24: 786
34. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1976) *Macromolecules* 9: 701
35. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1976) *Macromolecules* 9: 705
36. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1977) *Macromolecules* 10: 676
37. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1979) *J Polym Sci. Polym Chem Ed* 16: 189
38. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1980) *Polym J* 12: 29
39. Harada A, Furue M, Nozakura S (1980) *Polym J* 13: 777
40. Ogata N, Sanui K, Wada J (1979) *J Polym Sci Polym Lett* 14: 459
41. Maciejewski MM (1979) *J Macromol Sci, Chem* A13, 77: 1175
42. Kitano H, Okubo T (1977) *J Chem Soc, Perkin II* 432
43. Iijima T, Uemura T, Tsuzuku S, Komiyama J (1978) *J Polym Sci, Polym Phys Ed* 16: 793
44. Harada A (1993) *Polym. News* 18: 358
45. Harada A, Kamachi M (1990) *Macromolecules* 23: 2821
46. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Proc Jpn Acad* 69: Ser. B 39
47. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 5698
48. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1992) *Nature* 356: 325
49. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Carbohydr Polym* 25: 266
50. Harada A, Nakamitsu T, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *J Org Chem* 58: 7524
51. Harada A (1996) *Coord Chem Rev in press*
52. Harada A (1995) *Pharmacia* 31: 1263
53. Harada A, Kamachi M (1994) *J Chem Soc Jpn, Chem & Ind Chem* 1994, 587
54. Harada A (1994) *Seisan to Gijutu* 46: 62
55. Harada A (1994) *Yukagaku* 43: 839
56. Harada A (1995) *Biohistory* 3: 25
57. Harada A, Kamachi M (1992) *Hyomen/Surface* 30: 110
58. Harada A (1994) *Hyomen/Surface* 32: 125
59. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1994) *Macromolecules* 27: 4538
60. Bomer B, Heitz W, Kern W (1970) *J Chromatogr* 53: 51
61. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1994) *Nature* 370: 126
62. Li J, Harada A, Kamachi M (1994) *Polym J* 26: 1019
63. Harada A, Kamachi M (1990) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1322
64. Harada A, Okada M, Li J, Kamachi M (1995) *Macromolecules* 28: 8406
65. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Chem Lett* 237
66. Harada A, Okada M, Kamachi M (1996) *Acta Polymerica*, in press
67. Harada A, Okada M, Kamachi M (1995) *Proc Bilat Symp Polym Mater Sci* (1995) 180
68. Harada A, Suzuki S, Nakamitsu T, Okada M, Kamachi M (1995) *Kobunshi Ronbunshu*, 52: 594

69. Steiner T, Koellner G, Saenger W (1992) *Carbohydr Res* (1992) 228: 321
70. Harada A, Kamachi M (1994) *J Synth Org Chem Jpn* 52: 831
71. Li J, Harada A, Kamachi M (1994) *Bull Chem Soc Jpn* 67: 2808
72. Yonemura H, Saito H, Matsushima S, Nakamura H, Matsuo T (1989) *Tetrahedron Lett* 30: 3143
73. Saito H, Yonemura H, Nakamura H, Matsuo T (1990) *Chem Lett* 535
74. Watanabe M, Nakamura H, Matsuo T (1992) *Bull Chem Soc Jpn* 65: 164
75. Harada A, Suzuki S, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Macromolecules* 26: 5267
76. Lehn J-M (1992) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 29: 1304
77. Schill G (1971) *Catenanes Rotaxanes and Knots*, Academic Press, New York
78. Agam G, Graiver D, Zilkha A (1976) *J Am Chem Soc* 98: 5206
79. Harrison IT, Harrison S (1967) *J Am Chem Soc* 89: 5723
80. Harrison IT (1972) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 231
81. Anelli PL, Ashton PR, Ballardini R, Balazani V, Delgado M, Gandolfi MT, Goodnow TT, Kaifer AE, Philp D, Pietraszkiewicz M, Prodi L, Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Vicent C, Williams DJ (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 193
82. Allwood BL, Spencer N, Zavareh HS, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1987) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1064
83. Ashton PR, Philp D, Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1991) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1680
84. Ashton PR, Belohradsky M, Philp D, Stoddart JF (1993) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1269
85. Ashton PR, Belohradsky M, Philp D, Stoddart JF (1993) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1274
86. Odel B, Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1988) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 27: 1547
87. Ashton PR, Odel B, Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1988) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 27: 1550
88. Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Vicent C, Williams DJ (1991) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 630
89. Anelli PL, Ashton PR, Spencer N, Slawin AMZ, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1991) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 30: 1036
90. Ashton PR, Philp D, Spencer N, Stoddart JF (1991) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1677
91. Ashton PR, Johnston MR, Stoddart JF, Tolley MS, Wheeler JW (1992) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1128
92. Chambron J-C, Heitz V, Sauvage J-P (1992) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1131
93. Anelli L, Spencer N, Stoddart JF (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 5131
94. Ashton PR, Philp D, Spencer N, Stoddart JF (1992) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1124
95. Ballardini R, Balzani, Gandolfi VMT, Prodi L, Venturi M, Philp D, Ricketts HG, Stoddart JF (1993) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 32: 1301
96. Benniston AC, Harriman A (1993) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 32: 1459
97. Bissell RA, Cordova E, Kaifer AE, Stoddart JF (1994) *Nature* 369: 133
98. Stoddart JF (1992) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 31: 846
99. Ogino H (1981) *J Am Chem Soc* 103: 1303
100. Ogino H, Ohata K (1984) *Inorg Chem* 23: 3312
101. Manka JS, Lawrence DS (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 2440
102. Rao TV, Lawrence DS (1990) *J Am Chem Soc* 112: 3614
103. Dick DL, Rao TV, Sukumaran D, Lawrence DS (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 2664
104. Isnin R, Kaifer AE (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 8188
105. Wylie RS, Macartney DH (1992) *J Am Chem Soc* 114: 3136
106. Wenz G, Bey E, Schmidt L (1992) *Angew Chem Int Ed* 31: 783
107. Kunitake M, Kotoo K, Manabe O, Muramatsu T, Nakashima N (1993) *Chem Lett* 1033
108. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M, *Polymer Preprint*, in press
109. Gibson HW, Marand H (1993) *Adv Mater* 5: 11
110. Sjen YX, Xie D, Gibson HW (1994) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 537
111. Frisch HL, Wasserman E (1961) *J Am Chem Soc* 83: 3789
112. Ashton PR, Goodnow TT, Kaifer AE, Reddington MV, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Vicent C, Williams DJ (1989) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 28: 1396
113. Amabilino DB, Ashton PR, Tolley MS, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1993) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 32: 1297

114. Ashton PR, Philp D, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1994) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 181
115. Ashton PR, Brown CL, Chrystal EJT, Goodnow TT, Kaifer AE, Parry KP, Philp D, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1991) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 634
116. Ashton PR, Brown CL, Chrystal EJT, Goodnow TT, Kaifer AE, Parry KP, Slawin AMZ, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Williams DJ (1991) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 30: 1039
117. Amabilino DB, Ashton PR, Reder AS, Spencer N, Stoddart JF (1994) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 33: 433
118. Amabilino DB, Ashton PR, Reder AS, Spencer N, Stoddart JF (1994) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 33: 1286
119. Pietraszkiewicz, Spencer N, and Stoddart JF (1991) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 30: 1042
120. Buchecker COD, Sauvage J-P (1987) *Chem Rev* 87: 795
121. Chambron JC, Heitz V, Sauvage J-P (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 115: 12378
122. Buchecker COD, Guilhem J, Pascard C, Sauvage J-P (1990) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 29: 1154
123. Bitsch F, Buchecker COD, Khemiss A-K, Sauvage J-P, Dorselaer AV (1991) *J Am Chem Soc* 113: 4023
124. Fujita M, Ibukuro F, Hagihara H, Ogura K (1994) *Nature* 367: 720
125. Luttringhous, Cramer F, Prinzbach H, Henglein FM (1958) *Liebigs An Chem* 613: 185
126. Armspach D, Ashton PR, Moore CP, Spencer N, Stoddart JF, Wear TJ, Williams DJ (1993) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 32: 854
127. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M, unpublished.
128. Vogtle F, Meier S, Hoss R (1992) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 31: 1619
129. Vogtle F, Muller WM, Muller U, Bauer M, Rissanen K (1993) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 32: 1295
130. Gunter MJ, Johnston MR (1992) *J Chem Soc Chem Commun* 1163
131. Harada A, Kamachi M (1994) *Ordering in Macromolecular Systems*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 69
132. Wenz G, Keller B (1992) *Angew Chem Int Ed Engl* 31: 197
133. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *J Am Chem Soc* 116: 3192
134. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1993) *Nature* 364: 516
135. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1995) *Macromolecular Engineering*, Ed, Mishra MK, Nuyken O, Kobayashi S, Yagci Y, and Sar B, p 127, Plenum Press, New York
136. Harada A, Li J, Kamachi M (1995) *J Macromol Sci, Macromol Rep A32*: 813
137. Harada A (1995) *KOBUNSHI/High Polymers Japan* 44: 390
138. Harada A, Kamachi M (1992) *KOBUNSHI/High Polymers Japan* 41: 814
139. Harada A, Kamachi M (1992) *Kagaku/Chemistry* 47: 634
140. Harada A (1992) *Kagaku/Chemistry* 47: 631
141. Harada A, Kamachi M (1995) *Chem & Chem Ind Jpn* 48: 899
142. Harada A, Kamachi M (1996) *Supramolecular Science*, in press

Editor: Prof. H. Fujita  
Received July 1996

## Author Index Volumes 101-133

*Author Index Vols. 1-100 see Vol. 100*

- Adolf, D. B.* see Ediger, M. D.: Vol. 116, pp. 73-110.
- Aharoni, S. M. and Edwards, S. F.:* Rigid Polymer Networks. Vol. 118, pp. 1-231.
- Améduri, B., Boutevin, B. and Gramain, P.:* Synthesis of Block Copolymers by Radical Polymerization and Telomerization. Vol. 127, pp. 87-142.
- Améduri, B. and Boutevin, B.:* Synthesis and Properties of Fluorinated Telechelic Monodispersed Compounds. Vol. 102, pp. 133-170.
- Amsalem, S.* see Domb, A. J.: Vol. 107, pp. 93-142.
- Andrady, A. L.:* Wavelength Sensitivity in Polymer Photodegradation. Vol. 128, pp. 47-94.
- Andreis, M. and Koenig, J. L.:* Application of Nitrogen-15 NMR to Polymers. Vol. 124, pp. 191-238.
- Angiolini, L.* see Carlini, C.: Vol. 123, pp. 127-214.
- Anseth, K. S., Newman, S. M. and Bowman, C. N.:* Polymeric Dental Composites: Properties and Reaction Behavior of Multimethacrylate Dental Restorations. Vol. 122, pp. 177-218.
- Armitage, B. A.* see O'Brien, D. F.: Vol. 126, pp. 53-58.
- Arndt, M.* see Kaminski, W.: Vol. 127, pp. 143-187.
- Arnold Jr., F. E. and Arnold, F. E.:* Rigid-Rod Polymers and Molecular Composites. Vol. 117, pp. 257-296.
- Arshady, R.:* Polymer Synthesis via Activated Esters: A New Dimension of Creativity in Macromolecular Chemistry. Vol. 111, pp. 1-42.
- Bahar, I., Erman, B. and Monnerie, L.:* Effect of Molecular Structure on Local Chain Dynamics: Analytical Approaches and Computational Methods. Vol. 116, pp. 145-206.
- Baltá-Calleja, F. J., González Arche, A., Ezquerra, T. A., Santa Cruz, C., Batallón, F., Frick, B. and López Cabarcos, E.:* Structure and Properties of Ferroelectric Copolymers of Poly(vinylidene) Fluoride. Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Barshstein, G. R. and Sabsai, O. Y.:* Compositions with Mineralorganic Fillers. Vol. 101, pp. 1-28.
- Batallón, F.* see Baltá-Calleja, F. J.: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Barton, J.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Bell, C. L. and Peppas, N. A.:* Biomedical Membranes from Hydrogels and Interpolymer Complexes. Vol. 122, pp. 125-176.
- Bennett, D. E.* see O'Brien, D. F.: Vol. 126, pp. 53-84.
- Berry, G. C.:* Static and Dynamic Light Scattering on Moderately Concentrated Solutions: Isotropic Solutions of Flexible and Rodlike Chains and Nematic Solutions of Rodlike Chains. Vol. 114, pp. 233-290.
- Bershtein, V. A. and Ryzhov, V. A.:* Far Infrared Spectroscopy of Polymers. Vol. 114, pp. 43-122.
- Bigg, D. M.:* Thermal Conductivity of Heterophase Polymer Compositions. Vol. 119, pp. 1-30.

- Binder, K.*: Phase Transitions in Polymer Blends and Block Copolymer Melts: Some Recent Developments. Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Bird, R. B.* see Curtiss, C. F.: Vol. 125, pp. 1-102.
- Biswas, M.* and *Mukherjee, A.*: Synthesis and Evaluation of Metal-Containing Polymers. Vol. 115, pp. 89-124.
- Boutevin, B.* and *Robin, J. J.*: Synthesis and Properties of Fluorinated Diols. Vol. 102, pp. 105-132.
- Boutevin, B.* see Amédouri, B.: Vol. 102, pp. 133-170.
- Boutevin, B.* see Amédouri, B.: Vol. 127, pp. 87-142.
- Bowman, C. N.* see Anseth, K. S.: Vol. 122, pp. 177-218.
- Boyd, R. H.*: Prediction of Polymer Crystal Structures and Properties. Vol. 116, pp. 1-26.
- Bronnikov, S. V., Vettegren, V. I.* and *Frenkel, S. Y.*: Kinetics of Deformation and Relaxation in Highly Oriented Polymers. Vol. 125, pp. 103-146.
- Bruza, K. J.* see Kirchhoff, R. A.: Vol. 117, pp. 1-66.
- Burban, J. H.* see Cussler, E. L.: Vol. 110, pp. 67-80.
- Cameron, N. R.* and *Sherrington, D. C.*: High Internal Phase Emulsions (HIPEs)-Structure, Properties and Use in Polymer Preparation. Vol. 126, pp. 163-214.
- Candau, F.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Canelas, D. A.* and *DeSimone, J. M.*: Polymerizations in Liquid and Supercritical Carbon Dioxide. Vol. 133, pp. 103-140.
- Capek, I.*: Kinetics of the Free-Radical Emulsion Polymerization of Vinyl Chloride. Vol. 120, pp. 135-206.
- Carlini, C.* and *Angiolini, L.*: Polymers as Free Radical Photoinitiators. Vol. 123, pp. 127-214.
- Casas-Vazquez, J.* see Jou, D.: Vol. 120, pp. 207-266.
- Chen, P.* see Jaffe, M.: Vol. 117, pp. 297-328.
- Choe, E.-W.* see Jaffe, M.: Vol. 117, pp. 297-328.
- Chow, T. S.*: Glassy State Relaxation and Deformation in Polymers. Vol. 103, pp. 149-190.
- Chung, T.-S.* see Jaffe, M.: Vol. 117, pp. 297-328.
- Connell, J. W.* see Hergenrother, P. M.: Vol. 117, pp. 67-110.
- Criado-Sancho, M.* see Jou, D.: Vol. 120, pp. 207-266.
- Curro, J.G.* see Schweizer, K.S.: Vol. 116, pp. 319-378.
- Curtiss, C. F.* and *Bird, R. B.*: Statistical Mechanics of Transport Phenomena: Polymeric Liquid Mixtures. Vol. 125, pp. 1-102.
- Cussler, E. L., Wang, K. L.* and *Burban, J. H.*: Hydrogels as Separation Agents. Vol. 110, pp. 67-80.
- DeSimone, J. M.* see Canelas D. A.: Vol. 133, pp. 103-140.
- Dimonie, M. V.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Dodd, L. R.* and *Theodorou, D. N.*: Atomistic Monte Carlo Simulation and Continuum Mean Field Theory of the Structure and Equation of State Properties of Alkane and Polymer Melts. Vol. 116, pp. 249-282.
- Doelker, E.*: Cellulose Derivatives. Vol. 107, pp. 199-266.
- Domb, A. J., Amselem, S., Shah, J.* and *Maniar, M.*: Polyanhydrides: Synthesis and Characterization. Vol. 107, pp. 93-142.
- Dubrovskii, S. A.* see Kazanskii, K. S.: Vol. 104, pp. 97-134.
- Dunkin, I. R.* see Steinke, J.: Vol. 123, pp. 81-126.

- Economy, J.* and *Goranov, K.*: Thermotropic Liquid Crystalline Polymers for High Performance Applications. Vol. 117, pp. 221-256.
- Ediger M. D.* and *Adolf, D. B.*: Brownian Dynamics Simulations of Local Polymer Dynamics. Vol. 116, pp. 73-110.
- Edwards, S. F.* see *Aharoni, S. M.*: Vol. 118, pp. 1-231.
- Endo, T.* see *Yagci, Y.*: Vol. 127, pp. 59-86.
- Erman, B.* see *Bahar, I.*: Vol. 116, pp. 145-206.
- Ezquerro, T. A.* see *Baltá-Calleja, F. J.*: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Fendler, J.H.*: Membrane-Mimetic Approach to Advanced Materials. Vol. 113, pp. 1-209.
- Fetters, L. J.* see *Xu, Z.*: Vol. 120, pp. 1-50.
- Förster, S.* and *Schmidt, M.*: Polyelectrolytes in Solution. Vol. 120, pp. 51-134.
- Frenkel, S. Y.* see *Bronnikov, S. V.*: Vol. 125, pp. 103-146.
- Frick, B.* see *Baltá-Calleja, F. J.*: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Fridman, M. L.*: see *Terent'eva, J. P.*: Vol. 101, pp. 29-64.
- Ganesh, K.* see *Kishore, K.*: Vol. 121, pp. 81-122.
- Geckeler, K. E.* see *Rivas, B.*: Vol. 102, pp. 171-188.
- Geckeler, K. E.*: Soluble Polymer Supports for Liquid-Phase Synthesis. Vol. 121, pp. 31-80.
- Gehrke, S. H.*: Synthesis, Equilibrium Swelling, Kinetics Permeability and Applications of Environmentally Responsive Gels. Vol. 110, pp. 81-144.
- Godovsky, D. Y.*: Electron Behavior and Magnetic Properties Polymer-Nanocomposites. Vol. 119, pp. 79-122.
- González Arche, A.* see *Baltá-Calleja, F. J.*: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Goranov, K.* see *Economy, J.*: Vol. 117, pp. 221-256.
- Gramain, P.* see *Améduri, B.*: Vol. 127, pp. 87-142.
- Grosberg, A.* and *Nechaev, S.*: Polymer Topology. Vol. 106, pp. 1-30.
- Grubbs, R., Risse, W.* and *Novac, B.*: The Development of Well-defined Catalysts for Ring-Opening Olefin Metathesis. Vol. 102, pp. 47-72.
- van Gunsteren, W. F.* see *Gusev, A. A.*: Vol. 116, pp. 207-248.
- Gusev, A. A., Müller-Plathe, F., van Gunsteren, W. F.* and *Suter, U. W.*: Dynamics of Small Molecules in Bulk Polymers. Vol. 116, pp. 207-248.
- Guillot, J.* see *Hunkeler, D.*: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Guyot, A.* and *Tauer, K.*: Reactive Surfactants in Emulsion Polymerization. Vol. 111, pp. 43-66.
- Hadjichristidis, N.* see *Xu, Z.*: Vol. 120, pp. 1-50.
- Hall, H. K.* see *Penelle, J.*: Vol. 102, pp. 73-104.
- Hammouda, B.*: SANS from Homogeneous Polymer Mixtures: A Unified Overview. Vol. 106, pp. 87-134.
- Harada, A.*: Design and Construction of Supramolecular Architectures Consisting of Cyclodextrins and Polymers. Vol. 133, pp. 141-192.
- Hedrick, J. L.* see *Hergenrother, P. M.*: Vol. 117, pp. 67-110.
- Heller, J.*: Poly (Ortho Esters). Vol. 107, pp. 41-92.
- Hemielec, A. A.* see *Hunkeler, D.*: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Hergenrother, P. M., Connell, J. W., Labadie, J. W.* and *Hedrick, J. L.*: Poly(arylene ether) Containing Heterocyclic Units. Vol. 117, pp. 67-110.
- Hiramatsu, N.* see *Matsushige, M.*: Vol. 125, pp. 147-186.
- Hirasa, O.* see *Suzuki, M.*: Vol. 110, pp. 241-262.



- Hirotsu, S.*: Coexistence of Phases and the Nature of First-Order Transition in Poly-N-isopropylacrylamide Gels. Vol. 110, pp. 1-26.
- Hunkeler, D., Candau, F., Pichot, C., Hmielec, A. E., Xie, T. Y., Barton, J., Vaskova, V., Guillot, J., Dimonie, M. V., Reichert, K. H.*: Heterophase Polymerization: A Physical and Kinetic Comparison and Categorization. Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Ichikawa, T.* see Yoshida, H.: Vol. 105, pp. 3-36.
- Ihara, E.* see Yasuda, H.: Vol. 133, pp. 53-102.
- Ilavsky, M.*: Effect on Phase Transition on Swelling and Mechanical Behavior of Synthetic Hydrogels. Vol. 109, pp. 173-206.
- Inomata, H.* see Saito, S.: Vol. 106, pp. 207-232.
- Irie, M.*: Stimuli-Responsive Poly(N-isopropylacrylamide), Photo- and Chemical-Induced Phase Transitions. Vol. 110, pp. 49-66.
- Ise, N.* see Matsuoka, H.: Vol. 114, pp. 187-232.
- Ivanov, A. E.* see Zubov, V. P.: Vol. 104, pp. 135-176.
- Jaffe, M., Chen, P., Choe, E.-W., Chung, T.-S. and Makhija, S.*: High Performance Polymer Blends. Vol. 117, pp. 297-328.
- Jou, D., Casas-Vazquez, J. and Criado-Sancho, M.*: Thermodynamics of Polymer Solutions under Flow: Phase Separation and Polymer Degradation. Vol. 120, pp. 207-266.
- Kaetsu, I.*: Radiation Synthesis of Polymeric Materials for Biomedical and Biochemical Applications. Vol. 105, pp. 81-98.
- Kaminski, W. and Arndt, M.*: Metallocenes for Polymer Catalysis. Vol. 127, pp. 143-187.
- Kammer, H. W., Kressler, H. and Kummerloewe, C.*: Phase Behavior of Polymer Blends - Effects of Thermodynamics and Rheology. Vol. 106, pp. 31-86.
- Kandyrin, L. B. and Kuleznev, V. N.*: The Dependence of Viscosity on the Composition of Concentrated Dispersions and the Free Volume Concept of Disperse Systems. Vol. 103, pp. 103-148.
- Kaneko, M.* see Ramaraj, R.: Vol. 123, pp. 215-242.
- Kang, E. T., Neoh, K. G. and Tan, K. L.*: X-Ray Photoelectron Spectroscopic Studies of Electroactive Polymers. Vol. 106, pp. 135-190.
- Kazanskii, K. S. and Dubrovskii, S. A.*: Chemistry and Physics of „Agricultural“ Hydrogels. Vol. 104, pp. 97-134.
- Kennedy, J. P.* see Majoros, I.: Vol. 112, pp. 1-113.
- Khokhlov, A., Starodybtzev, S. and Vasilevskaya, V.*: Conformational Transitions of Polymer Gels: Theory and Experiment. Vol. 109, pp. 121-172.
- Kilian, H. G. and Pieper, T.*: Packing of Chain Segments. A Method for Describing X-Ray Patterns of Crystalline, Liquid Crystalline and Non-Crystalline Polymers. Vol. 108, pp. 49-90.
- Kishore, K. and Ganesh, K.*: Polymers Containing Disulfide, Tetrasulfide, Diselenide and Ditelluride Linkages in the Main Chain. Vol. 121, pp. 81-122.
- Klier, J.* see Scranton, A. B.: Vol. 122, pp. 1-54.
- Kobayashi, S., Shoda, S. and Uyama, H.*: Enzymatic Polymerization and Oligomerization. Vol. 121, pp. 1-30.
- Koenig, J. L.* see Andreis, M.: Vol. 124, pp. 191-238.
- Kokufuta, E.*: Novel Applications for Stimulus-Sensitive Polymer Gels in the Preparation of Functional Immobilized Biocatalysts. Vol. 110, pp. 157-178.
- Konno, M.* see Saito, S.: Vol. 109, pp. 207-232.

- Kopecek, J.* see Putnam, D.: Vol. 122, pp. 55-124.  
*Koßmehl, G.* see Schopf, G.: Vol. 129, pp. 1-145.  
*Kressler, J.* see Kammer, H. W.: Vol. 106, pp. 31-86.  
*Kirchhoff, R. A.* and *Bruza, K. J.*: Polymers from Benzocyclobutenes. Vol. 117, pp. 1-66.  
*Kuchanov, S. I.*: Modern Aspects of Quantitative Theory of Free-Radical Copolymerization. Vol. 103, pp. 1-102.  
*Kuleznev, V. N.* see Kandyrin, L. B.: Vol. 103, pp. 103-148.  
*Kulichkhin, S. G.* see Malkin, A. Y.: Vol. 101, pp. 217-258.  
*Kummerloewe, C.* see Kammer, H. W.: Vol. 106, pp. 31-86.  
*Kuznetsova, N. P.* see Samsonov, G. V.: Vol. 104, pp. 1-50. *Labadie, J. W.* see Hergenrother, P. M.: Vol. 117, pp. 67-110.
- Lamparski, H. G.* see O'Brien, D. F.: Vol. 126, pp. 53-84.  
*Laschewsky, A.*: Molecular Concepts, Self-Organisation and Properties of Polysoaps. Vol. 124, pp. 1-86.  
*Laso, M.* see Leontidis, E.: Vol. 116, pp. 283-318.  
*Lazár, M.* and *Rychlý, R.*: Oxidation of Hydrocarbon Polymers. Vol. 102, pp. 189-222.  
*Lenz, R. W.*: Biodegradable Polymers. Vol. 107, pp. 1-40.  
*Leontidis, E., de Pablo, J. J., Laso, M.* and *Suter, U. W.*: A Critical Evaluation of Novel Algorithms for the Off-Lattice Monte Carlo Simulation of Condensed Polymer Phases. Vol. 116, pp. 283-318.  
*Lesec, J.* see Viovy, J.-L.: Vol. 114, pp. 1-42.  
*Liang, G. L.* see Sumpter, B. G.: Vol. 116, pp. 27-72.  
*Lin, J.* and *Sherrington, D. C.*: Recent Developments in the Synthesis, Thermostability and Liquid Crystal Properties of Aromatic Polyamides. Vol. 111, pp. 177-220.  
*López Cabarcos, E.* see Baltá-Calleja, F. J.: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Majoros, I., Nagy, A.* and *Kennedy, J. P.*: Conventional and Living Carbocationic Polymerizations United. I. A Comprehensive Model and New Diagnostic Method to Probe the Mechanism of Homopolymerizations. Vol. 112, pp. 1-113.  
*Makhija, S.* see Jaffe, M.: Vol. 117, pp. 297-328.  
*Malkin, A. Y.* and *Kulichkhin, S. G.*: Rheokinetics of Curing. Vol. 101, pp. 217-258.  
*Maniar, M.* see Domb, A. J.: Vol. 107, pp. 93-142.  
*Mashima, K., Nakayama, Y.* and *Nakamura, A.*: Recent Trends in Polymerization of  $\alpha$ -Olefins Catalyzed by Organometallic Complexes of Early Transition Metals. Vol. 133, pp. 1-52.  
*Matsumoto, A.*: Free-Radical Crosslinking Polymerization and Copolymerization of Multivinyl Compounds. Vol. 123, pp. 41-80.  
*Matsuoka, H.* and *Ise, N.*: Small-Angle and Ultra-Small Angle Scattering Study of the Ordered Structure in Polyelectrolyte Solutions and Colloidal Dispersions. Vol. 114, pp. 187-232.  
*Matsushige, K., Hiramatsu, N.* and *Okabe, H.*: Ultrasonic Spectroscopy for Polymeric Materials. Vol. 125, pp. 147-186.  
*Mattice, W. L.* see Rehahn, M.: Vol. 131/132, pp. 1-475  
*Mays, W.* see Xu, Z.: Vol. 120, pp. 1-50.  
*Mikos, A. G.* see Thomson, R. C.: Vol. 122, pp. 245-274.  
*Miyasaka, K.*: PVA-Iodine Complexes: Formation, Structure and Properties. Vol. 108, pp. 91-130.  
*Monnerie, L.* see Bahar, I.: Vol. 116, pp. 145-206.  
*Morishima, Y.*: Photoinduced Electron Transfer in Amphiphilic Polyelectrolyte Systems. Vol. 104, pp. 51-96.

- Müllen, K. see Scherf, U.: Vol. 123, pp. 1-40.  
Müller-Plathe, F. see Gusev, A. A.: Vol. 116, pp. 207-248.  
Mukerherjee, A. see Biswas, M.: Vol. 115, pp. 89-124.  
Mylnikov, V.: Photoconducting Polymers. Vol. 115, pp. 1-88.
- Nagy, A. see Majoros, I.: Vol. 112, pp. 1-11.  
Nakamura, A. see Mashima, K.: Vol. 133, pp. 1-52.  
Nakayama, Y. see Mashima, K.: Vol. 133, pp. 1-52.  
Narasinhani, B., Peppas, N. A.: The Physics of Polymer Dissolution: Modeling Approaches and Experimental Behavior. Vol. 128, pp. 157-208.  
Nechaev, S. see Grosberg, A.: Vol. 106, pp. 1-30.  
Neoh, K. G. see Kang, E. T.: Vol. 106, pp. 135-190.  
Newman, S. M. see Anseth, K. S.: Vol. 122, pp. 177-218.  
Nijenhuis, K. te: Thermoreversible Networks. Vol. 130, pp. 1-252.  
Noid, D. W. see Sumpter, B. G.: Vol. 116, pp. 27-72.  
Novac, B. see Grubbs, R.: Vol. 102, pp. 47-72.  
Novikov, V. V. see Privalko, V. P.: Vol. 119, pp. 31-78.
- O'Brien, D. F., Armitage, B. A., Bennett, D. E. and Lamparski, H. G.: Polymerization and Domain Formation in Lipid Assemblies. Vol. 126, pp. 53-84.  
Ogasawara, M.: Application of Pulse Radiolysis to the Study of Polymers and Polymerizations. Vol. 105, pp. 37-80.  
Okabe, H. see Matsushige, K.: Vol. 125, pp. 147-186.  
Okada, M.: Ring-Opening Polymerization of Bicyclic and Spiro Compounds. Reactivities and Polymerization Mechanisms. Vol. 102, pp. 1-46.  
Okano, T.: Molecular Design of Temperature-Responsive Polymers as Intelligent Materials. Vol. 110, pp. 179-198.  
Onuki, A.: Theory of Phase Transition in Polymer Gels. Vol. 109, pp. 63-120.  
Osad'ko, I.S.: Selective Spectroscopy of Chromophore Doped Polymers and Glasses. Vol. 114, pp. 123-186.
- de Pablo, J. J. see Leontidis, E.: Vol. 116, pp. 283-318.  
Padias, A. B. see Penelle, J.: Vol. 102, pp. 73-104.  
Pascault, J.-P. see Williams, R. J. J.: Vol. 128, pp. 95-156.  
Pasch, H.: Analysis of Complex Polymers by Interaction Chromatography. Vol. 128, pp. 1-46.  
Penelle, J., Hall, H. K., Padias, A. B. and Tanaka, H.: Captodative Olefins in Polymer Chemistry. Vol. 102, pp. 73-104.  
Peppas, N. A. see Bell, C. L.: Vol. 122, pp. 125-176.  
Peppas, N. A. see Narasimhan, B.: Vol. 128, pp. 157-208.  
Pichot, C. see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.  
Pieper, T. see Kilian, H. G.: Vol. 108, pp. 49-90.  
Pospíšil, J.: Functionalized Oligomers and Polymers as Stabilizers for Conventional Polymers. Vol. 101, pp. 65-168.  
Pospíšil, J.: Aromatic and Heterocyclic Amines in Polymer Stabilization. Vol. 124, pp. 87-190.  
Priddy, D. B.: Recent Advances in Styrene Polymerization. Vol. 111, pp. 67-114.  
Priddy, D. B.: Thermal Discoloration Chemistry of Styrene-co-Acrylonitrile. Vol. 121, pp. 123-154.

- Privalko, V. P. and Novikov, V. V.*: Model Treatments of the Heat Conductivity of Heterogeneous Polymers. Vol. 119, pp 31-78.
- Putnam, D. and Kopecek, J.*: Polymer Conjugates with Anticancer Acitivity. Vol. 122, pp. 55-124.
- Ramaraj, R. and Kaneko, M.*: Metal Complex in Polymer Membrane as a Model for Photosynthetic Oxygen Evolving Center. Vol. 123, pp. 215-242.
- Rangarajan, B.* see Scranton, A. B.: Vol. 122, pp. 1-54.
- Reichert, K. H.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Rehahn, M., Mattice, W. L., Suter, U. W.*: Rotational Isomeric State Models in Macromolecular Systems. Vol. 131/132, pp. 1-475
- Risse, W.* see Grubbs, R.: Vol. 102, pp. 47-72.
- Rivas, B. L. and Geckeler, K. E.*: Synthesis and Metal Complexation of Poly(ethyleneimine) and Derivatives. Vol. 102, pp. 171-188.
- Robin, J. J.* see Boutevin, B.: Vol. 102, pp. 105-132.
- Roe, R.-J.*: MD Simulation Study of Glass Transition and Short Time Dynamics in Polymer Liquids. Vol. 116, pp. 111-114.
- Rozenberg, B. A.* see Williams, R. J. J.: Vol. 128, pp. 95-156.
- Ruckenstein, E.*: Concentrated Emulsion Polymerization. Vol. 127, pp. 1-58.
- Rusanov, A. L.*: Novel Bis (Naphtalic Anhydrides) and Their Polyheteroarylenes with Improved Processability. Vol. 111, pp. 115-176.
- Rychlý, J.* see Lazár, M.: Vol. 102, pp. 189-222.
- Ryzhov, V. A.* see Bershtein, V. A.: Vol. 114, pp. 43-122.
- Sabsai, O. Y.* see Barshtein, G. R.: Vol. 101, pp. 1-28.
- Saburov, V. V.* see Zubov, V. P.: Vol. 104, pp. 135-176.
- Saito, S., Konno, M. and Inomata, H.*: Volume Phase Transition of N-Alkylacrylamide Gels. Vol. 109, pp. 207-232.
- Samsonov, G. V. and Kuznetsova, N. P.*: Crosslinked Polyelectrolytes in Biology. Vol. 104, pp. 1-50.
- Santa Cruz, C.* see Baltá-Calleja, F. J.: Vol. 108, pp. 1-48.
- Sato, T. and Teramoto, A.*: Concentrated Solutions of Liquid-Christalline Polymers. Vol. 126, pp. 85-162.
- Scherf, U. and Müllen, K.*: The Synthesis of Ladder Polymers. Vol. 123, pp. 1-40.
- Schmidt, M.* see Förster, S.: Vol. 120, pp. 51-134.
- Schopf, G. and Kößmehl, G.*: Polythiophenes - Electrically Conductive Polymers. Vol. 129, pp. 1-145.
- Schweizer, K. S.*: Prism Theory of the Structure, Thermodynamics, and Phase Transitions of Polymer Liquids and Alloys. Vol. 116, pp. 319-378.
- Scranton, A. B., Rangarajan, B. and Klier, J.*: Biomedical Applications of Polyelectrolytes. Vol. 122, pp. 1-54.
- Sefton, M. V. and Stevenson, W. T. K.*: Microencapsulation of Live Animal Cells Using Polycrylates. Vol. 107, pp. 143-198.
- Shamanin, V. V.*: Bases of the Axiomatic Theory of Addition Polymerization. Vol. 112, pp. 135-180.
- Sherrington, D. C.* see Cameron, N. R., Vol. 126, pp. 163-214.
- Sherrington, D. C.* see Lin, J.: Vol. 111, pp. 177-220.
- Sherrington, D. C.* see Steinke, J.: Vol. 123, pp. 81-126.
- Shibayama, M.* see Tanaka, T.: Vol. 109, pp. 1-62.

- Shoda, S.* see Kobayashi, S.: Vol. 121, pp. 1-30.
- Siegel, R. A.*: Hydrophobic Weak Polyelectrolyte Gels: Studies of Swelling Equilibria and Kinetics. Vol. 109, pp. 233-268.
- Singh, R. P.* see Sivaram, S.: Vol. 101, pp. 169-216.
- Sivaram, S.* and *Singh, R. P.*: Degradation and Stabilization of Ethylene-Propylene Copolymers and Their Blends: A Critical Review. Vol. 101, pp. 169-216.
- Starodybtzev, S.* see Khokhlov, A.: Vol. 109, pp. 121-172.
- Steinke, J., Sherrington, D. C.* and *Dunkin, I. R.*: Imprinting of Synthetic Polymers Using Molecular Templates. Vol. 123, pp. 81-126.
- Stenzenberger, H. D.*: Addition Polyimides. Vol. 117, pp. 165-220.
- Stevenson, W. T. K.* see Sefton, M. V.: Vol. 107, pp. 143-198.
- Sumpter, B. G., Noid, D. W., Liang, G. L.* and *Wunderlich, B.*: Atomistic Dynamics of Macromolecular Crystals. Vol. 116, pp. 27-72.
- Suter, U. W.* see Gusev, A. A.: Vol. 116, pp. 207-248.
- Suter, U. W.* see Leontidis, E.: Vol. 116, pp. 283-318.
- Suter, U. W.* see Rehahn, M.: Vol. 131/132, pp. 1-475
- Suzuki, A.*: Phase Transition in Gels of Sub-Millimeter Size Induced by Interaction with Stimuli. Vol. 110, pp. 199-240.
- Suzuki, A.* and *Hirasa, O.*: An Approach to Artificial Muscle by Polymer Gels due to Micro-Phase Separation. Vol. 110, pp. 241-262.
- Tagawa, S.*: Radiation Effects on Ion Beams on Polymers. Vol. 105, pp. 99-116.
- Tan, K. L.* see Kang, E. T.: Vol. 106, pp. 135-190.
- Tanaka, T.* see Penelle, J.: Vol. 102, pp. 73-104.
- Tanaka, H.* and *Shibayama, M.*: Phase Transition and Related Phenomena of Polymer Gels. Vol. 109, pp. 1-62.
- Tauer, K.* see Guyot, A.: Vol. 111, pp. 43-66.
- Teramoto, A.* see Sato, T.: Vol. 126, pp. 85-162.
- Terent'eva, J. P.* and *Fridman, M. L.*: Compositions Based on Aminoresins. Vol. 101, pp. 29-64.
- Theodorou, D. N.* see Dodd, L. R.: Vol. 116, pp. 249-282.
- Thomson, R. C., Wake, M. C., Yaszemski, M. J.* and *Mikos, A. G.*: Biodegradable Polymer Scaffolds to Regenerate Organs. Vol. 122, pp. 245-274.
- Tokita, M.*: Friction Between Polymer Networks of Gels and Solvent. Vol. 110, pp. 27-48.
- Tsuruta, T.*: Contemporary Topics in Polymeric Materials for Biomedical Applications. Vol. 126, pp. 1-52.
- Uyama, H.* see Kobayashi, S.: Vol. 121, pp. 1-30.
- Vasilevskaya, V.* see Khokhlov, A.: Vol. 109, pp. 121-172.
- Vaskova, V.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Verdugo, P.*: Polymer Gel Phase Transition in Condensation-Decondensation of Secretory Products. Vol. 110, pp. 145-156.
- Vettegren, V. I.* see Bronnikov, S. V.: Vol. 125, pp. 103-146.
- Viovy, J.-L.* and *Lesec, J.*: Separation of Macromolecules in Gels: Permeation Chromatography and Electrophoresis. Vol. 114, pp. 1-42.
- Volksen, W.*: Condensation Polyimides: Synthesis, Solution Behavior, and Imidization Characteristics. Vol. 117, pp. 111-164.

- Wake, M. C.* see Thomson, R. C.: Vol. 122, pp. 245-274.
- Wang, K. L.* see Cussler, E. L.: Vol. 110, pp. 67-80.
- Williams, R. J. J., Rozenberg, B. A., Pascault, J.-P.*: Reaction Induced Phase Separation in Modified Thermosetting Polymers. Vol. 128, pp. 95-156.
- Wunderlich, B.* see Sumpter, B. G.: Vol. 116, pp. 27-72.
- Xie, T. Y.* see Hunkeler, D.: Vol. 112, pp. 115-134.
- Xu, Z., Hadjichristidis, N., Fetters, L. J. and Mays, J. W.*: Structure/Chain-Flexibility Relationships of Polymers. Vol. 120, pp. 1-50.
- Yagci, Y. and Endo, T.*: *N*-Benzyl and *N*-Alkoxy Pyridium Salts as Thermal and Photochemical Initiators for Cationic Polymerization. Vol. 127, pp. 59-86.
- Yannas, I. V.*: Tissue Regeneration Templates Based on Collagen-Glycosaminoglycan Copolymers. Vol. 122, pp. 219-244.
- Yamaoka, H.*: Polymer Materials for Fusion Reactors. Vol. 105, pp. 117-144.
- Yasuda, H. and Ihara, E.*: Rare Earth Metal-Initiated Living Polymerizations of Polar and Nonpolar Monomers. Vol. 133, pp. 53-102.
- Yaszemski, M. J.* see Thomson, R. C.: Vol. 122, pp. 245-274.
- Yoshida, H. and Ichikawa, T.*: Electron Spin Studies of Free Radicals in Irradiated Polymers. Vol. 105, pp. 3-36.
- Zubov, V. P., Ivanov, A. E. and Saburov, V. V.*: Polymer-Coated Adsorbents for the Separation of Biopolymers and Particles. Vol. 104, pp. 135-176.

# Subject Index

- ABA-type triblock 70  
Acrylamide 127  
Acrylate monomers, fluorinated 111  
Acrylic acid 117  
Acrylic esters 68  
Acrylonitrile 72  
Actide 53  
Actinides 16  
Agostic hydrogen interaction 3  
Alkene complexes, early transition metals, crystal/spectral data 4  
- -,  $d0$  transition metals 6  
- -, metal centers 6  
Alkenes 18  
Alkenyltitanium complex, cationic 10  
Alkoxides 31  
Alkyl acrylates, living polymerization 68  
Alkyl chain end transfer 22  
Alkyl complexes, Group 4 metals, 1-alkenes 18  
Alkylisocyanates 53, 72  
Alkylolithium 61  
Alkylpalladium, cationic 43  
Alkynes 18  
Allyl glycidylether 79  
Amidocyclopentadienyl complex 18  
Anchor-soluble balance 119  
Aryloxide ligands 10
- Backbone, microstructure 133, 134  
Benzyl complexes, chromium 41  
Bis(diene) complexes, niobium/tantalum 38  
Block copolymer as stabilizers 119, 122, 123, 126, 127, 135  
Butadiene 90, 91  
1-Butene, from ethylene 7  
- /propylene 30  
Butyl acrylate 53, 112  
- -, living polymerization 68
- Butyl isocyanate 73  
Butyl methacrylate 66  
2-Butyne 21
- $\epsilon$ -Caprolactone 74  
Carbon dioxide 107-111, 119, 124, 129  
Carbonates, cyclic 81  
Catalysts, organometallic 1ff  
Catenanes 177, 178  
Cationic polymerization 114, 115, 129-133  
CGCT 32  
Chlorofluorocarbons 106, 111, 112, 114  
Complex formation, CDs 145, 158, 160, 161, 166  
Compression set 71  
Cooperative action 147  
Cossee mechanism 19  
Critical conditions 106, 107  
Crown ethers 142, 152  
Cyclodextrin complexes 142ff  
- -, stoichiometries 147  
Cyclodextrins 142-144  
Cyclopentadienyl ligands 8, 10
- 1-Decene 116  
Di-olefins 3  
Didymium versatate 93  
Dienes, conjugate 90, 92  
- -, non-conjugated, organometallic complexes 33  
4,6-Dimethyl-1-heptene 14  
2-(Dimethylamino)ethyl acrylate 112  
2,4-Dimethylpentyl complex 20  
2,6-Dimethylphenol 134, 135  
2,2-Dimethyltrimethylenecarbonate 81  
Diphenylmethanediiocyanate 73  
Double-chain inclusion complex 155  
Dyes, dispersed 98

- Early transition metals 1ff, 3  
 Electronegativity, rare earth metals 57  
 Epichlorohydrin 79  
 -/CO<sub>2</sub> 80  
 Epoxides 132  
 Ethyl acrylate 53  
 - -, living polymerization 68  
 Ethyl vinyl ether 132  
 Ethylene 8, 10, 16, 82, 112, 115, 116  
 -, bis-diene complexes/MAO 39  
 -, cationic metallocene complexes of  
   Group 4 13  
 -, lanthanide(II)-initiated polymerization  
   88  
 -, niobium-diene/tantalum-diene 39  
 -, scandium complex 18  
 Ethylene/lactones 97  
 -/methylenecyclopropane 98  
 -/MMA 96  
 Ethylene to 1-butene, selective dimeriza-  
   tion 7
- Finemann-Ross equation 70  
 Fluorescent probe 156  
 Fluoropolymers 111-115  
 Formaldehyde 130, 131
- Gel formation 158  
 Grignard reagents 61
- Hafnocene/MAO** 8  
 Heterogeneous systems 109, 115-118,  
   123-133  
 1,5-Hexadiene 33, 85  
 Hexafluoropropylene 117  
 Hexamethylphosphoramide 73  
 Hexyl isocyanate 72  
 1-Hexyne 96  
 Homogeneous systems 111-115  
 β-Hydrogen elimination 22  
 Hydrogen interaction, agostic 3  
 2-Hydroxyethylacrylate 114
- Isobutyl complex** 20  
 Isobutyl isocyanate 73  
 Isobutylene 16, 130-131  
 Isocyanates 72
- Isopropyl methacrylate 66  
 Izod impact strength 71
- Kaminsky-Sinn catalyst** 8  
 Ketene silyl acetal 62  
 Kinetic studies 112, 116
- Lactide, polymerization** 80  
 Lactones, living polymerization 53, 74  
 Lanthanide elements 57  
 - initiators, polymer-supported 93  
 - metallocene hydrides, early 16  
 Lanthanides, organometallic complexes 6  
 Lanthanum alkoxide(III) 53  
 Lithium hydride complex 16  
 Ln(naphthenate) 92
- Macromonomers** 124  
 MAO 7, 8  
 Metal-carbene 19  
 Metal-carbon bonding, early transition  
   metals, ionicity 1ff  
 Metal-catalyzed polymerizations 133-135  
 Metallacycle mechanism 19  
 Metallacyclobutane 19  
 Metallocene catalyst, *ansa*-type 29  
 Metallocene complexes, cationic, bond  
   lengths 11  
 - -, Group 4 metals 12  
 - -, cationic, α-olefins 12  
 - -, neutral Group 3 16, 17  
 Metallocene/MAO system 7, 10  
 -/- -, non-conjugated dienes 33  
 Metallocenes, *ansa*-type (bridged) 23  
 -, C<sub>2</sub>-symmetric silylene bridged 26  
 -, unbridged, isospecific polymerization  
   28  
 Metallocyclopentane 7  
 Metallocyclopropane 6  
 Methyl acrylate 53  
 - -, living polymerization 68  
 β-Methyl elimination 22  
 Methyl methacrylate (MMA) 35, 53,  
   112, 123, 124, 126, 127  
 3-Methyl-1-butyne 96  
 3-Methyl-1-pentyne 96  
 Methylaluminoxane (MAO) 7, 8  
 Methylaluminum dichloride 10



- Methylaluminum tetraphenylporphyrine 66
- Methylenecyclopropane/ethylene 98
- $\beta$ -Methylpropiolactone 74
- Micelles 120, 122
- Microemulsions 120, 121
- MMA 35, 53, 112, 123, 124, 126, 127
- , lactones 76
- MMA/BuA/MMA 70
- Molecular trains 177
- Molecular tube 185
- Mono(cyclopentadienyl)mono(diene) 1ff
- 2,6-Naphthyl diisocyanate 73
- Necklace, molecular 180
- Norbornene 133, 134
- Octamethylcycloterasiloxane 133
- 1-Octene 116
- Octyl isocyanate 73
- $\alpha$ -Olefin polymerization, organometallic catalysts 1ff
- /metal complexation 6
- Olefins, functionalized 35
- , stereoselective polymerization 23
- , stereospecific polymerization 82
- Oligoethylene 163
- Oligometallasilsesquioxanes 40
- Organo-transition metal complexes 1ff, 3
- Organoactinide species 10
- Organochromium complexes 41
- Organolanthanide complexes 60
- Organometallic catalysts, olefin polymerization 1ff
- Organometallic complexes, Group 5 metals 37
- , Group 6 metals 40
- , Group 8-10 metals 42
- Oxetanes 114, 115, 130, 132
- Oxirane, stereospecific polymerization 53, 77
- Palladium 43
- 1-Pentyne 96
- Perfluoro(propyl vinyl ether) 117
- p*-Perfluoroethyleneoxymethylstyrene 111, 113
- Plasticization 106-110, 124, 129, 130
- Platinum complex, cationic 20
- PMMA 35
- Poly(acrylic acid) 116, 117
- Poly(acrylonitrile) 116
- Poly(alkene), syndiotactic 29
- Poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene) 129
- Poly(1,1-dihydroperfluorooctylacrylate) 111, 120-127, 135
- Poly(2,6-dimethylphenylene oxide) 110, 134, 135
- Poly(dimethylsiloxane) 124-127, 133
- Poly(ethyl methacrylate) 110
- Poly(ethylene glycol) 145
- Poly(ethylene oxide) 77, 120, 132
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate) 109, 135, 136
- Poly(methyl acrylate) 108
- Poly(methyl methacrylate) 108-110, 123-127
- Poly(4-methyl-1-pentene) 129
- Poly(methyl vinyl ether) 160
- Poly(methylene-1,3-cyclopentane) 85
- Poly(MMA) 59
- Poly(MMA/BuA/MMA) 56
- Poly(norbornene) 133-134
- Poly(oxytrimethylene) 160
- Poly(propylene glycol) 158
- Poly(propylene oxide) 77
- Poly(tetrafluoroethylene) 136
- Poly(tetrahydrofuran) 161
- Poly(trifluoropropyl methyl siloxane) 108
- Poly(vinyl acetate) 116
- Poly(vinyl benzoate) 110
- Poly(vinyl butyral) 110
- Poly(vinyl chloride) 109, 116
- Poly(vinylidene fluoride) 109
- Polyacetylene 94
- Polycarbonate 109, 129
- Polydispersity index 56
- Polyethylene 16, 115, 116, 129
- ,  $\text{PhH}_2\text{Si}$ -capped 82
- Polyisobutylene 130, 131, 166
- Polymer blends 129, 130
- Polypropylene 8
- , bridged/unbridged metallocene catalysts 25
- Polyrotaxanes 175, 180
- Polystyrene 109, 110, 116-118, 126-128
- Polyurethanes 110
- Probe, fluorescent 156

- Propagation, Ziegler-Natta polymerization 19  
 $\beta$ -Propiolactone 74  
 Propylene 8, 15, 16  
 -, cationic metallocene complexes of  
   Group 4 13  
 -, homogeneous metallocene catalysts 24  
 -, isotactic polymerization 27  
 -, Lu-Me bond 20  
 -, MAO, metallocene complexes 9  
 Propylene oxide 77, 79  
 - -/CO<sub>2</sub> 80
- Rare earth elements 53  
 - - -, ionic radii/electronegativity 57  
 Rare earth metal complexes 53  
 Recognition, molecular 142  
 Rotaxanes 175
- SAXS/SANS 120, 122  
 Sc(naphthenate) 95  
 Scandium complex 18  
 Scattering studies (SAXS/SANS) 120, 122  
 Shuttles, molecular 171  
 Step growth polymerization 135, 136  
 Steric stabilization 119  
 Styrene 31, 112, 117, 126, 127, 129, 130  
 - polymerization 89  
 Supercritical fluids 106, 110, 111, 130, 135  
 Surfactants/stabilizers 119-126
- Telomerization 113, 114  
 TEMPO 117  
 Tetrafluoroethylene 112, 113, 117  
 Tetrahydrofuran 77
- Tetrahydrothiophene 14  
 THF, caprolactone 79  
 THT 14  
 Titanium, catalyst systems 32  
 Titanium halides 31  
 Titanocene dichloride 10  
 Toluene 2,6-diisocyanate 73  
*o*-Toluidine diisocyanate 73  
 Tollyl isocyanate 73  
 Trains, molecular 177  
 Transition metal alkyl complexes 3  
 Trimethylenecarbonate 81
- $\delta$ -Valerolactone 74  
 Vanadium systems, polymerization 31  
 Vinyl ethers 114, 130, 131, 132  
*N*-Vinyl formamide 116  
 4-Vinyl pyridine 112  
*N*-Vinyl pyrrolidone 116  
 4-Vinylcyclohexene 32
- Water 120, 121, 127, 136  
 -, CO<sub>2</sub>-water hybrid system 136
- X-ray analysis 151
- Ytterbocene derivative 36
- Ziegler-Natta polymerization 3  
 - - -, propagation process 19  
 Zirconium-alkyl complexes 7  
 Zirconocene dimethyl complexes 15  
 Zirconocene species, alkenes/alkynes 18  
 - system,  $\alpha$ -olefin polymerization 8  
 Zr-Me bond 18

# Springer and the environment

At Springer we firmly believe that an international science publisher has a special obligation to the environment, and our corporate policies consistently reflect this conviction.

We also expect our business partners – paper mills, printers, packaging manufacturers, etc. – to commit themselves to using materials and production processes that do not harm the environment. The paper in this book is made from low- or no-chlorine pulp and is acid free, in conformance with international standards for paper permanency.



Springer